

# **Free Verse by Verse Bible Commentaries**

**These commentaries may be used without permission. They are not copyrighted and are free to be used except to be sold.**

(Mat 10:8 KJV) Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

Isolation of Verses may make your Case but Context will give you Truth! – km

**All Scriptures in all Commentaries are from the King James Bible!**

**Romans and Revelation(P. 138) Commentaries**

# Romans Commentary

## Ken Matto

### Introduction

Romans was written about 57 or 58 A.D. It was written by the Apostle Paul from Corinth or a close area to it. The basic theme of Romans is salvation by grace alone. It is the book which sparked the Reformation in 1517. Martin Luther read Romans 1:17 and rejected the idea of relics and items like that. A Christian only needed faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. And did not need any visible objects to increase faith. The letter is also a great proponent of redemptive revelation and redefines the name "Israel" in places like Romans 2:28-29. After the cross everything changed in the area of salvation. No longer was the keeping of the law required for salvation. The Epistle teaches that the righteousness of Christ is imputed to the believer upon salvation. The true believer is justified by faith without the deeds of the law. The doctrine of Justification is given in this Epistle. (8:33) The Epistle to the Romans is one of the books of Paul that puts a death knell to the idea of free will.

### Rom 1:1 (KJV)

Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, **called** to be an apostle, **separated** unto the gospel of God,

Called = Called out, chosen or appointed

Separated = having been separated

Right at the outset we see that the Apostle Paul was chosen to be an apostle as one who is sent. (Gal 1:15 KJV) But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, We see that he was separated for the purpose of sending forth the gospel. A true messenger of God must be separated from the world to bring the good news to the world. A Christian is to be separated in theory and philosophy from the world's point of view. To be an effective messenger one must not be encumbered by the things or the methods of the world.

### Rom 1:2 (KJV)

(Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures,)

The gospel or the good news which are both synonyms for grace is not strictly New Testament. The prophets of old prophesied the grace of God but it was not fully understood until the New Testament was written. Jeremiah prophesied grace in Jeremiah 31:31-34.

(Jer 31:31-34 KJV) Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: {32} Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: {33} But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. {34} And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

He penned under the term “new covenant” which was in contrast to the old covenant from Sinai. The covenant from Sinai was demonstrated outwardly while the new covenant was inward or on their hearts as we read in Jeremiah 31:33. This was also written in Deuteronomy 10:16 as the circumcision of the heart. The new covenant or grace was a promise of God which was fulfilled in the Lord Jesus Christ. The covenant of works at Sinai was the covenant that Israel made with God but Grace is the covenant that God made with His Elect.

### **Rom 1:3 (KJV)**

Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh;

The OT Promises and the NT promises were both concerning the Lord Jesus Christ and the focus should not be on national Israel although God did use them in the OT to show His future workings with the church. The Bible is about the Lord Jesus Christ, in both the Old and New Testament. Psalm 40:7 And Hebrews 10:7 attest to this. Christ came through the lineage of David which was an affirmation to those Jews who read the letter to the Romans since genealogy was so important to the Jews. It showed that Jesus descended from a good line. 2 Samuel 7:12-13 details the task that the Lord Jesus Christ will undertake by building a house for God which will last forever. (2 Sam 7:12-13 KJV) And when thy days be fulfilled, and thou shalt sleep with thy fathers, I will set up thy seed after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels, and I will establish his kingdom. {13} He shall build an house for my name, and I will stablish the throne of his kingdom for ever.

### **Rom 1:4 (KJV)**

And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:

The Lord Jesus was declared to be the Son of God because of His resurrection from the dead which proved all His claims. He showed that not even death could hold him since death had no right to hold him since His sacrifice for sin was completed and accepted by the Father. This verse details His deity. He was raised according to the Spirit of holiness since death only has power over the unholy, it has no power over the Holy which is the saved, but here we have the Spirit of Holiness as deity.

### **Rom 1:5 (KJV)**

By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name:

Here the Apostle Paul is declaring that he received his apostleship from the son of God himself. His apostleship was given to him only after he received grace (salvation) first. No one can ever be a true witness for the Lord Jesus Christ unless they first become saved. The grace Paul was given also gave him the ability to be obedient in faith. Grace under girds the faith of the believer.

For his name = “On behalf of His name” - Paul’s calling was not for himself but on behalf of Christ. (2 Cor. 5:20) He was to bring the name of Christ and with that name salvation (Acts 4:12) to God’s elect.

### **Rom 1:6 (KJV)**

Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ:

Not only does the calling apply to Paul but it applies to every true believer as well. We are also apostles in the sense that we are sent into the world to bring the true gospel. But before we can be Apostles for the kingdom we must first receive the grace of God as Paul did. No unbeliever can ever be a true witness for Christ. Mark 3:11-12 gives an illustration of this. (Mark 3:11-12 KJV) And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God. {12} And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known. Christ ordered the silence of these demons because He will not have Satan's demons being a testimony to who He was, likewise with the unbeliever, they cannot be true witnesses of who Christ is since there was no work of salvation done in them which means they are still under the wrath of God. Christ is still their judge and not their Savior. What kind of testimony can a person be for someone else who is going to cast them into eternal hell.

### **Rom 1:7 (KJV)**

To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Here Paul is addressing a specific group within the Church of Rome namely the believers. He is addressing both the Jewish believers and Gentile believers in this church. Grace was a greeting to the Gentiles and Peace (shalom) was the greeting to the Jews. Only the true believer is beloved of God. We are called to be saints not "sinners saved by grace." Think like a saint act like a saint. Think like a sinner act like a sinner. (Prov 23:7 KJV) For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he: Eat and drink, saith he to thee; but his heart is not with thee. We also need to drop the notion that everyone in the early church were staunch believers. They had their problem people as we do today. Look at the 7 churches of Revelation with their situations. We are talking about 95 AD when the church was only about 60 years old.

### **Rom 1:8 (KJV)**

First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of **throughout the whole world.**

Even the thanksgiving to God must come through the Lord Jesus Christ, not only prayers. This gives us insight as to the full mediatorship of Christ that it is not only for prayers but for every phase of the Christian's life. (John 15:5 KJV) I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

Throughout the whole world - This speaks of the known world but brings up a disputatious teaching which the universal salvationist jumps on. What does the term "whole world" mean?

1 John 2:2 - Sins of the whole world - The Bible here speaks of the Lord Jesus Christ paying for the sins of the elect throughout the entire world. (John 17:9 KJV) I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. Universal atonement (UA) is not a biblical based belief. (John 17:20 KJV) Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; Instead UA is an emotional belief based on nothing biblical.

1 John 5:19 - The whole world lies in wickedness - This is a biblical fact that the world

does not lie in salvation rather wickedness. If UA is true then why do those who believe it, still evangelize? If UA was true then every human born into the world is saved, only one problem, Psalm 58:3-5. (Psa 58:3-5 KJV) The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies. {4} Their poison is like the poison of a serpent: they are like the deaf adder that stoppeth her ear; {5} Which will not hearken to the voice of charmers, charming never so wisely. If these verses were not in Scripture then UA may have a chance but these verses kill the concept of UA.

## Romans 1:9-16

### **Rom 1:9 (KJV)**

For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers;

Paul testifies to the fact that he constantly and unceasingly prays for the believers in the Roman church. Notice how Paul states that he serves Christ in the spirit. This is because we are saved in the spirit and not in body. We cannot serve God in the flesh as so many religious unbelievers try to do. (Prov 21:27 KJV) The sacrifice of the wicked is abomination: how much more, when he bringeth it with a wicked mind? The only way we can serve God in the flesh is when the flesh is dominated by the spirit. (Romans 6:11-12; 8:1) This is why upon death the spirit is separated from the body.

### **Rom 1:10 (KJV)**

**Making request**, if by any means now at length I might have a **prosperous** journey by the will of God to come unto you.

Making Request = "Beseeching or begging"

Prosperous = "Gain or success" - "I shall be prospered" future tense

Paul's inward desire was to come to Rome and be with the Christians. He was desiring to be prospered by them and not in the sense of money but in the arena of spiritual treasure (2 Cor 4:7 KJV) But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us. When true believers gather there is always a spiritual prospering. We equate the Apostle Paul as being a spiritual giant, yet his life was ordered by the will of God. (Acts 16:6 KJV) Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia, - So goes the free will assumption of preaching the gospel to every single person so they can have the ability to accept or reject.)

### **Rom 1:11 (KJV)**

For I long to see you, that I may **impart** unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye **may be established**;

Impart = Share or bestow

May be established = Confirmed, strengthen or set firmly

Paul earnestly desired to see the Roman brethren so he may impart to them a spiritual gift. Now the Bible expressly teaches that the Holy Spirit doles out the spiritual gifts to believers (1 Cor. 12:11) but that is not what is in view here. The spiritual gift here is the impartation of the blessings of fellowship in that when true believers get together there is a mutual confirmation and strengthening in the faith. Here the apostle Paul who was strong

in the faith would help strengthen the weaker and newer brethren. This is the principle which carries over to today, that the stronger brethren are to strengthen the weak. (Rom 14:1 KJV) Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations.

### **Rom 1:12 (KJV)**

That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me.

Not only does the stronger Christian help the weaker ones but the stronger Christian also gains a blessing being with new hungry Christians. Their thirst for God is not quenched until they go into the organized church and then their fire is drowned by lazy Christians. Basically the meeting of the Roman Christians would be advantageous for Paul so he may detect any false teachings being spread around in the church. (1 John 1:7 KJV) But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

This would also insure that their spiritual growth would not be hindered.

### **Rom 1:13 (KJV)**

Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, (but was let hitherto,) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles.

Paul wants to assure the Roman church that he wanted to come to them sooner but God's will overrode his will. The fruit he is looking for is the fruit of the Christian walk in these believers such as evangelism, edifying the saints and other necessary works for the Kingdom of God. Paul was hoping to help this church organize and reach out as he helped the other churches he planted. This was so they could begin to bear fruit themselves. (Mat 9:37-38 KJV) Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; {38} Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

### **Rom 1:14 (KJV)**

I am **debtor** both to the Greeks, and to the **Barbarians**; both to the wise, **and to the unwise**.

Debtor - Held by a duty or obligation

Barbarian - Unintelligible sounds or Foreigner

Wise and Unwise - To both learned and unlearned

Paul lays down a fundamental principle concerning his assessment of his Christianity. Paul realizes that salvation is not a sit, sour, and soak condition rather we are commanded to send forth the gospel and Paul views this as his debt to the world. (1 Cor 9:16 KJV) For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel! This is evident by the Bible using the term Barbarian which means a foreigner or one who did not speak the Greek language. This is a missionary verse in the fullest sense. We also see the terms wise and unwise in this verse. These terms are best defined by their specific usage in the statement. In 1 Corinthians 3 & 4 we read the term "wise" being descriptive of both the unbeliever and believer. In the Romans passage, they are used to describe both those who are learned and unlearned. Paul did not just feel obligated to those who have education but to those who did not, since Christianity is not an education based faith, it is a spiritual faith whereby understanding is given by the Holy Spirit and not books.

### **Rom 1:15 (KJV)**

So, **as much as in me is**, I am **ready to preach the gospel** to you that are at Rome also.

As much as in me is - Literally "according to me"

Ready - Willing and eager

Preach the Gospel - Announce the good news

Paul was in a state of readiness to preach the gospel to the Roman Christians. Here was the essence of the spiritual gift that Paul wanted to impart to the Romans in verse 11. He is assuring the Roman believers that his heart was with them. The true heart of the Christian is the desire to proclaim the gospel to whomever God send them to. Paul was also informing them that he would preach only to the extent his physical body was able to. He could be taken by the authorities or killed by his enemies, yet he was willing to come to them and preach to them. If one has a physical body that is not equal in strength to another's, but they are doing all they can "according to" their strength, then they are fulfilling their part in the great commission.

### **Rom 1:16 (KJV)**

For I am not **ashamed** of the gospel of Christ; for it is the **power** of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew **first**, and also to the Greek.

"of Christ" - Is removed in the modern versions

Ashamed - Feel shame or be ashamed for

Power - Dunamis - Have power or capacity to do, the ability to do anything

First - First or before

Here Paul tells us that he was not ashamed to preach the gospel. Maybe some in the Roman church thought Paul wouldn't come because he may have been somewhat ashamed of the gospel since they may have thought he abandoned the law. We as believers must never be ashamed of the gospel since it is our salvation. We must be very careful not to equate a person's inability or shyness in the area of gospel presentation as being ashamed of the gospel. There is a vast difference.

The gospel is the power of God which has the full capability to save a person without the keeping of the ceremonial law. When we read "to the Jew first" it does not mean that they are to be witnessed to before a Gentile it means that the Jews were the first to receive the gospel since evangelism began in Jerusalem. There are some who use this verse to try and create a preeminence of the Jews in the church, especially those Jews who have become saved. They stand on the same ground as everyone else and they are not special cases.

Romans 1:17-24

### **Rom 1:17 (KJV)**

For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

This was the verse which sparked the Reformation when Martin Luther read it. We read

that the gospel contains the righteousness of God and it is only given to the elect. When we see faith to faith we realize that salvation is only of faith and requires and rejects all attempted works for salvation. But I believe the faith to faith goes a little deeper than just that.

The idea of living by faith is not a New Testament concept alone. In Habakkuk 2:4 we read, "Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith." Notice that this passage states the just (the elect within national Israel at that time) shall live by his faith or faithfulness. This was probably a mystery at that time since Israel was tied to the Mosaic Law. So here we see a pre-cursor of the doctrine of imputed faith. This is detailed plainly for us in the New Testament in the following verses:

(Gal 2:16 KJV) Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

(Phil 3:9 KJV) And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

We are justified by the faith of Christ which contains the righteousness of God as we saw in Rom. 1:17. Therefore, when we speak of living faith to faith, we are in essence drawing our faith from the faith of Christ which gives us our faith for daily living. (John 15:5 KJV) I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

### **Rom 1:18 (KJV)**

For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all **ungodliness** and **unrighteousness** of men, **who** hold the truth in unrighteousness;

Ungodliness - An active hostility toward God

Unrighteousness - Wickedness, wrongdoing or Injustice

Hold - Hold back, hinder or prevent

Here the Bible tells us that the wrath or judgment of God is now an open book and it has been revealed though not fulfilled yet. What type of wrath are we speaking of as many equate the wrath of God with the premillennial understanding of the Great Tribulation? If we follow the pre-Trib line of thinking, then those believers who are caught in the second half of the tribulation will experience the wrath of God yet we read in 1 Th 5:9 (KJV) "For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ," If the Christian experiences the wrath of God, then that Scripture is false, which of course it cannot be. What then is the wrath of God? It is probably best described symbolically in Zep 1:2 (KJV) "I will utterly consume all things from off the land, saith the LORD." The wrath of God is aimed at the unbeliever, those who are still in their sins, it is never aimed at the believer since the true believer has been redeemed.

We see that God makes no bones about the fact that those who have an active hatred of Him will face the wrath of God. Isn't it interesting that of all the active sins against God in this world, He exposes one major sin. Some of the active sins of the world against God are evolution, atheism, intellectualism, and others yet God chooses to expose the sin of sodomy very openly in the next few verses. This is probably because it is another sign that the end is very near. Sodomy is portrayed on TV, radio, Internet, and every other medium to exalt it's open and happy lifestyle which of course is one big fat lie. Sodomites are some of the loneliest people in the world and that is why they incessantly search for new sex



partners and multiple partners to try and fill the loneliness void. The same wrath will be dealt out to those who suppress God's truth which includes the unsaved clergy. ALL sin will be dealt with and not just a few select sins. In contemporary society bank robbery is wrong but fornication is fine. (Isa 5:20 KJV) Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!

### **Rom 1:19 (KJV)**

Because that which may be known of God is **manifest** in them; for God hath showed it unto them.

Manifest - Revealed or disclosed

This verse begins the declension of man's dark corruption of the true God. This verse tells us that the creative aspect of God is all around the creation and God has openly shown His creation to the entire human race. As a matter of fact, Scientists still cannot explain how the human eye works. The vastness and intricacy of the creation demands a designer not a "theory of chance" explanation.

### **Rom 1:20 (KJV)**

For the **invisible** things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and **Godhead**; so that they are without **excuse**:

Invisible - Unseen (Col. 1:15; 1 Tim. 1:17; Heb 11:27)

Godhead - Divinity or Divine nature

Without excuse - Inexcusable

The creative aspect of the invisible God is clearly seen through the creation He has made. This gives man enough understanding to clearly acknowledge the existence of a Creator. The creation is also evidence of God's eternal power and divine nature in the essence that God is outside of time. The creation of the universe clearly dictates that a divine being had to be in existence before the creation was created which is only explained by the inclusion of the eternal aspect of God. This is why mankind is totally accountable for their actions because there is enough proof given on both earth and in the universe to prove God exists and with that existence comes accountability and that is the reason man tries to elude the "idea of God." (Psalm 19:1-4)

### **Rom 1:21 (KJV)**

Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became **vain** in their **imaginations**, and their **foolish heart was darkened**.

Vain - Cause to become futile or foolish

Imaginations - Reasoning or Thoughts

"and their foolish heart was darkened" - Their hearts were darkened without understanding

There was a time when mankind did know God and acknowledge Him. This does not mean in the arena of salvation but in the context of His creation. I believe the time in view in this verse was right after Noah left the Ark, when civilization began to develop once again. With the growth of the human race came the infusion of false teachings into the human race which eventually ripped into the truths of God and as we see in the following verses how man declined in his understanding and knowledge of God. Their thoughts and

reasoning were once again beginning to oppose the true knowledge of God to the point their minds were darkened by sinful reasoning which eventually led to the abolition of Godward thinking. Today we call it intellectualism which prides itself on the belief that man is self-sufficient.

### **Rom 1:22 (KJV)**

**Professing** themselves to be wise, they became fools,

Professing - A verbal affirmation or profession without substance

As with all anti-God intellectuals their mouth is their weapon and their only evidence. There is still no missing link to prove the heresy of evolution or the existence of other gods such as we read about in the Old Testament. Man in his arrogance makes all sorts of claims to high intelligence and without proof to back up their belief system, it is nothing more than foolishness. Man asserts his intellect while his teachings "cry fool." The following verses teach why man is really a fool in his understanding.

### **Rom 1:23 (KJV)**

And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.

One of the crowning glories of the unbelief in religion is the attempt to bring God down to the level of the sinner. This has been done through the idea of earthly representations. It is mostly seen in the art and culture of ancient religions. Man is always cognizant of the fact that there is a God. The problem is that down through history man has perverted the truth of the God of the universe. This was a problem because the pride of man will not accept accountability to a higher authority. So what was man to do? Instead of showing dependence on God, they brought God down to their level and began to re-create Him in different earthly images. In this manner, if the ignorant masses can see a depiction of a god, and that creation is made to look awe-inspiring, then it is easier to control the masses of people with something they can see and that may instill fear in their hearts, especially of those false priests who attend the idols or the false temples.

If you will also notice that this verse shows a declension in the belief system of man. First, they bring God down to be a mere man. Secondly, they make him out a bird. Thirdly, they make him to be some type of animal. Fourthly, they make him out to be an insect. Some examples of these abominations are:

Man - Zeus of the Greeks

Birds - The Phoenix - In ancient Egypt, it is associated with the Sun God Ra

Beasts - Apis the Sacred Bull God of the Egyptians

Insects - Butterfly - The Mayans and the Incas

In the modern era, we have many homes and churches which are laced with pictures of Jesus. These pictures are in violation of Acts 17:29: (Acts 17:29 KJV) Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. These pictures bring Jesus down to man's level. It is hard to see Christ as Eternal God, when we continually bombard our senses with a picture of a man, and a picture which violates Scripture even more, especially when they show Him with long hair. (1 Cor 11:14 KJV) Doth not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? If Christ would have had long hair, He would have been in violation of Scripture which means he would have committed a sin. This, of course, did not

happen. Children should be taught that these are nothing more than an artist's rendering. God cannot be corrupted, only man's view of Him.

### **Rom 1:24 KJV**

Wherefore God also gave them up to **uncleanness** through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

Uncleanness - Ritual impurity or immorality

Because of the declension in the unbelief in man's heart, God gives them up. This is one of the saddest sayings in the Scriptures. When God begins to give someone up, there is no hope for them. These people will remain in darkness for their entire lives and never come to the truth. Since we see God is giving these people up, there is no indication that any of God's future Elect are in this group, since God never gives up on His Elect. Many in the ancient religions would cut themselves and draw blood. (1 Ki 18:28 KJV) And they cried aloud, and cut themselves after their manner with knives and lancets, till the blood gushed out upon them. This verse come from the discourse on Elijah versus the prophets of Baal. It is interesting that we have a parallel today in the sudden rise in body piercing. Tattoos are bad enough but body piercing dishonors the body by causing it to have sickness such as infections and blood diseases. As we have seen above, those who cut themselves are worshipping Satan.

The lusts that pervade these unbelievers is what will drive them to do anything including destroy their own body. God uses a word in this verse which can denote impurity of a ritual. Now this would definitely point to something along the satanic lines. Nowhere in Scripture is God's children ever spoken of as having any "ritualistic impurity." God's Elect have been saved through the Lord Jesus Christ and all the ceremony of the Law of God was kept in Christ. Therefore, there is no ritual impurity in any true believer, only in the non-elect. By God giving them up, He will be allowing sin to proceed to its final destination, eternal death.

Romans 1:25-32

### **Rom 1:25 KJV**

Who **changed** the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and **served** the **creature** more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

**Changed** - To exchange or substitute

**Served** - Worshipped

**Creature** - Created thing

In this verse God introduces the exchange principle. What these abominable people did was to change the truth about God into a lie. This way, by creating lies concerning God, it is much easier to serve or worship the created thing. In verse 23 we had the four illustrations of the baseness of exchanging the truth of God for a lie. In this verse, God is telling us that they are fully involved with their false religions. Those in false religions always serve a false God. That is because their understanding of God has been satanically skewed toward the founder of the religion. Look at the four hundred million gods in India. Each one who follows one or more of these false gods, are doing obeisance to the formula laid down by the adherents in keeping with satisfying the requirements of

that god, via interpretation by the leaders. These satanically endowed leaders will continue to keep the lies as impressive as they can to carry on the blindness of their followers.

Then the verse makes a comparison to the Creator who is blessed forever. In contrast to the creature worshippers who will be damned forever. Whenever we exchange the truth of God and create some type of lie, it always seems to exalt man in such a way that they become the spokesman for God to their people. When people follow people, it is easy to destroy the truth about God and then replace it with false beliefs. People then become the authority through the exchange of truth for a lie.

### **Rom 1:26 KJV**

For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature:

Here is a very ominous verse in that God gave them up. The word "vile" carries with it the meaning of "dishonor." This verse teaches a major principle in that those who wish to engage in sinful lifestyles, God will abandon them to those lifestyles which means the end of those lifestyles is physical death and ultimately eternal damnation. Here God openly condemns sodomy as He says that the women, who normally should be moral, are now giving themselves to debasing their bodies by doing what is not natural. God designed the bodies of both men and women to be honored and not to be abused in sinful fashion. The word "natural" carries with it the meaning of instinctive. Normally, the woman would be drawn to the man but in the sodomite lifestyle, they are drawn to other women in an evil manner. God gave marriage and the two sexes to procreate and complement each other. Same sex relationships do not accomplish either and are an abomination unto the Lord. When God gives somebody up, there is no chance for salvation albeit God does have some of His Elect among the sodomites whom He will save but the rest He gives up to their sinful ways.

### **Rom 1:27 (KJV)**

And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.

Now God indicts the men in the same manner as these sodomites who burned vehemently for other men. They have also lost their desire for women and have chosen to walk after the lusts of the sodomite. The word "unseemly" carries with it the meaning of "shameless or indecent." All one has to do is watch one of these sodomite pride parades and you will see their public indecency exposed. If you notice in this verse, God uses a single word which invalidates the concept that sodomites are born that way. God says "leaving..." which makes it a chosen lifestyle and not one that is forced on anyone. No sodomite is born that way, it is a learned lifestyle. The genetic scientists can take all the money they want from the sodomites and then create the lie that there is a gene which causes sodomy in a person and that is a total lie. People are born with genes that cause skeletal deformity, Lupus, Down's Syndrome, Huntington's Disease and others, and nowhere in the Bible do we read these people being condemned to Hell for this, yet the sodomites are condemned because it is a sinful lifestyle. Then God goes on to reveal that his lifestyle will have its "recompence" which carries with it the meaning of "penalty or a payment in the negative sense." We see the reward of that lifestyle in AIDS, and other sexually transmitted diseases. They like to call themselves "Gay" but that lifestyle is anything but gay. Severe loneliness is one of the root penalties of that lifestyle. This is why

they have hundreds of partners and are always trawling for new victims in hopes the next one will give some comfort. It will never happen because God will not allow it. He gave the man for the woman and the woman for the man, both sexes along with their inherent characteristics can give comfort to each other.

### **Rom 1:28 (KJV)**

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;

On the heels of moral perversion is always the mental perversion. Those who engage in sinful lifestyles must obliterate any knowledge of God from their minds. To retain knowledge of God is to be reminded that there is accountability for their actions. So in this case, God has obliged them by allowing their minds to become so darkened with sin, that they feel at ease in doing their sinful actions, although God's law is still written on their heart, as with all human beings. The word "reprobate" carries with it the meaning of "unapproved after a testing or unworthy." God gives them over to an unworthy mind. That unworthy mind causes them to do the things in concert with that darkened mind. The word "convenient" carries with it the meaning of "appropriate or suitable." The sinful mind will never do what is appropriate and will never be in concert with the law of God, it will always seek ways to break that law. As God and righteousness were the sworn enemy of the sodomites in Sodom and Gomorrah, they are the sworn enemy of them today also.

### **Rom 1:29 (KJV)**

Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,

Now God gives a representative list of the unsuitable things which emanate from the darkened mind.

**Unrighteousness** - "what is not conformable to what is right" - This is the umbrella word which is at the root of all the other sins.

**Fornication** - "Unchastity or prostitution"

**Wickedness** - "Evil nature which delights in evil"

**Covetousness** - "Insatiable desire or lust for more"

**Maliciousness** - "Depravity, ill will, evil, badness"

**Full of Envy** - "Filled with jealousy"

**Murder** - "The physical taking of life or the killing of someone in our hearts"

**Debate** - "Contentious and rivalries"

**Deceit** - "Adulteration of the truth for the reason of catching or deceiving someone"

**Malignity** - "Deep rooted ill-will or hatred, spitefulness"

**Whisperers** - "One who slanders"

### **Rom 1:30 (KJV)**

Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

**Backbiters** - "One who speaks against another or defames another"

**Haters of God** - "Those who hate God"

**Despiteful** - "One who personally insults or a willful insolent man"

**Proud** - "One who believes they are better than or above others"

**Boasters** - "One who brags"

**Inventors of evil things** - "Those who devise evil, wicked, or depraved things"

**Disobedient to Parents** - "Stubborn or willful disobedience to parents"

### **Rom 1:31 (KJV)**

Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:

**Without Understanding** - "Foolish or Stupid"

**Covenant breakers** - "Faithlessness in a depraved setting"

**Without natural affection** - "Unloving, cold, and hardened"

**Implacable** - "Irreconcilable as in one who will not make agreements."

**Unmerciful** - "Having no pity or compassion"

### **Rom 1:32 (KJV)**

Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

Here Paul makes a summation of what he has been saying. Even the most reprobate people who perform the basest sins still have knowledge of the judgment of God. Just because they choose to hide the knowledge does not mean the consequences go away. As the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah is common knowledge today, it would have been common knowledge 2,000 years ago, especially since the destruction is written in the book of Genesis. They may try to hide the fact that every human being on Earth is accountable to God for their sins and they use the method of drawing others into their sin since some believe there is strength in numbers. We have that same philosophy today, "everybody is doing it so why can't I?" or "So many people can't be wrong can they?" No matter how many we draw into our sin, there will be consequences at the judgment seat and no one will escape the judgment of God. Drawing others into our sin shows how much contempt we have for others since they too will become snared by sin and will reap judgment. How many men and women have been sexually seduced with the trite saying, "but I love you!" when in essence it is not love but lust and a desire to use the other person for self-gratification. Just because the sinful person finds temporary pleasure in sin does not negate the fact that Judgment Day will reveal the sins of men and there will be eternal consequences for those sins.

Romans 2:1-10

### **Rom 2:1 (KJV)**

Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things.

Now Paul begins an exhortation that whoever judges another person, be it Jew or Gentile, are guilty of performing some of the sins Paul listed in the previous chapter. That is because every human being on Earth has sinned, and has partaken in at least one or more of those mentioned sins. Paul is saying basically that it is hypocritical to point the finger at another person, when the one doing the pointing is guilty of the same sins. If they condemn a person for sinning, they are in essence condemning themselves because the Bible plainly teaches that every human being on earth has sinned. (1 Ki 8:46 KJV) If they sin against thee, **(for there is no man that sinneth not.)** and thou be angry with them, and deliver

them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near; When we condemn others for sinning, we are condemning ourselves because at the Judgment throne on the last day, if a person is not redeemed, the accusers as well as those accused, will be judged and condemned and cast into eternal Hell.

### **Rom 2:2 (KJV)**

But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.

Since man is not all-knowing and can only have the partial facts, when God judges each individual on the last day, He will judge from the point of having every fact, no matter how hard the individual tried to hide them. (Heb 4:13 KJV) Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. Those who stand for their sins on the last day will definitely have some of those sins in Chapter one laid to their charge, and it does not matter whether the person is a Jew or Gentile. Any unsaved person, regardless of race, will be judged and sentenced to an eternity in Hell.

### **Rom 2:3 (KJV)**

And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

Paul speaks to the Jews here in that they had the superior mindset, just because they had the law and the temple, they thought that they had some kind of special relationship with God which annulled any judgment for their sins. This is one of the most dangerous mindsets to have. No one will escape the Judgment of God. In fact there are many who hold to Dispensational Theology and believe that all the Jews will become saved and none will suffer damnation. This is unheard of and is not taught anywhere in the Bible. It is salvation by grace and not by race. There will be millions of Jews who will wake up at the Judgment on the last day and give account for their sins. Even the Christians were judged for sins but vicariously through the Lord Jesus Christ, nevertheless, it was a judgment.

### **Rom 2:4 (KJV)**

Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

In many ancient belief systems, if their gods were angered, the people who angered them believed they would suffer in this life in some manner. Now Paul is telling them that God is very rich in goodness. The word "goodness" carries with it the meaning of someone being filled with the quality of goodness. Paul also speaks of God being rich in forbearance and longsuffering. The word "riches" carries with it the meaning of "wealth or abundance." The word "forbearance" carries with it the idea of "delay, holding back, or tolerance." The word "longsuffering" carries with it the meaning of "patience, endurance, or long before becoming angry." They were misunderstanding the reason that God seemed silent concerning Judgment. We get a little insight into this from 1 Peter 3:20. (1 Pet 3:20 KJV) Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. God was patient while Noah was building the Ark and then when the Ark was completed, Judgment came in one day. It is the same with our present age. God is longsuffering in that He has a timetable for these last days but when the last one of His Elect becomes saved, then the end shall come and swiftly. Paul is trying to get these people to

understand that God is patient but to presume upon that patience is a very dangerous act because it deceives a person into believing that judgment will not come, when in essence it seems delayed because the last one has not been saved yet. The last part of this verse speaks of the goodness of God leading to repentance. There are two forms of repentance which are in view. The first, is that the goodness of God in dealing with the sins of His children will eventually lead them to repentance when God calls them in His timing. Repentance unto salvation is a gift which comes from God. (2 Tim 2:25 KJV) In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; When a true child of God comes to repentance which brings them to the truth, then that repentance is unto salvation. The second type of repentance is that of outward remorse. It is the kind that Esau showed after he sold his birthright to Jacob. (2 Cor 7:10 KJV) For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. A person can be involved in a sin and then repents of it but not unto salvation. We see this all the time in groups like Alcoholics Anonymous which dries people out but does nothing to give them the Gospel unto salvation.

### **Rom 2:5 (KJV)**

But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;

Paul makes a sharp contrast between verses 4 and 5. Here Paul is stating that these people are very hard. The word “hardness” carries with it the meaning of “resistance to movement or change.” They were steadfast in their sins and had no intention of being repentant. Therefore, every day which they live, they would amass more sins which they would have to give account for on Judgment day. God’s righteous judgment would be revealed in that day which means whatever He judges and declares will be from the standpoint of perfect knowledge and there will be no refutation of the decree.

### **Rom 2:6 (KJV)**

Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

Everyone who appears at the Great White Throne Judgment will receive due justice according to their deeds. Al Capone was responsible for the deaths of almost 1,000 men and he will receive according to his deeds. Abortion doctors kill thousands of babies, they will receive according to their deeds. Religious moral people believe they are good enough to get into Heaven, they will receive according to their deeds. No matter who you are, religious or reprobate, without Christ as your Savior, you will receive according to your deeds.

### **Rom 2:7 (KJV)**

To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life:

This verse is speaking of those who have become saved because no one will enter Heaven through any type of patience or continuing in good things, that would constitute a salvation by works. This verse speaks of those believers who patiently involve themselves in good works which is for the furtherance of the Kingdom. They seek the glory and honor of Christ which results in eternal life. The unbeliever does not seek the glory and honor of Christ but they seek their own glory and honor in hopes that will be enough to get them into Heaven.



### **Rom 2:8 (KJV)**

But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

Here is the contrasting verse. Those who are contentious, which are those who are ready to argue or cause strife, are those who do not obey the truth which results in unrighteousness and the reward of that is indignation and wrath. Indignation carries with it the meaning of "rage or great anger." Wherever Paul went he met the Judaizers who constantly opposed him with anger and caused him much trouble. Their attitude was in concert with the wrath of God they would eventually face for these sins. They obeyed their sinful natures instead of seeking out the truth of God, instead, according to their belief system, they opposed it.

### **Rom 2:9 (KJV)**

Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

To those who choose to disobey God, whether Jew or Gentile, there will be tribulation. The word "tribulation carries with it the meaning of "affliction or oppression." Then there is much distress and suffering which results from this tribulation. These are not only evident upon earth but will carry into eternity as the soul in rebellion to God suffers for eternity.

### **Rom 2:10 (KJV)**

But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

To those who become saved through the Lord Jesus Christ will have the glory of God in them, and will have honor, and will be indwelt with peace for all eternity. The one who works good is the one who is saved, and that also applies to either Jews or Gentiles. A Jew who tries to keep the law will fail and will wind up under eternal damnation just as the Gentile who worships idols.

Romans 2:11-20

### **Rom 2:11 (KJV)**

For there is no respect of persons with God.

If there is one abounding principle in Scripture concerning the Judgment of God, it is that there is no favoritism when it comes to sin. If a person dies without the Lord Jesus Christ being their Savior, then it does not matter whether that person is Jew or Gentile, they will stand at the Great White Throne Judgment and give an account for their sins, which will result in eternal damnation.

### **Rom 2:12 (KJV)**

For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law;

There are tribes and nations who do not have the law of God and those will also be judged for their sins. Just because someone does not know of the law of God does not cancel out the fact that they will face the judgment of God. There are many remote tribes where there are no Elect, therefore God will not dispatch a missionary to that tribe. If a remote tribe has Elect in it, then God will get His word to them in some fashion. Those who knew the law of God will be judged by the law of God. (John 5:45 KJV) Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. The Jews were trusting in the belief that because they had the law of God and was keeping its ceremonies, that they were within God's requirements for salvation. Paul is telling them that they will be judged according to the law which every human being fails to keep. People will be judged by the light that they have. Even the universe is a testimony to a Creator as we read in Romans 1:20.

### **Rom 2:13 (KJV)**

(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

Only those who are able to fulfill the righteous demands of God's law will be justified before God, which means they are saved. This requires a person to be totally sinless and there is no human being which has sinlessly kept every tenet of the law of God. Those who are just hearers are do nothings and would never be able to keep the law. Only in Christ can a person be justified as if they kept the law in its entirety. Christ was the one who fulfilled the righteous demands of God's law and as a result, those in Christ are regarded by God as fulfilling the requirements of the law of God through Christ.

### **Rom 2:14 (KJV)**

For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves:

There are countries both past and present who do not have the law of God governing their countries. For example, in the past the Code of Hammurabi which was in existence in ancient Babylon about the 18th century BC. Hammurabi lived from about 1792-1750 BC. The law of God was given to Moses on Sinai about 1447 BC. So the Code was around about 300 years before the law was given at Sinai. It was not the law of God but it was the law of the land and those who disobeyed that law paid the penalties for their crime. A modern example is Saudi Arabia, who does not have the law of God, yet has a code of laws which governs them. If a person is caught stealing, they lose their hand. Now even though both of these are not based on the law of God, they do have much in common with the law of God. Their laws carry penalties for disobeying the laws as does the law of God.

### **Rom 2:15 (KJV)**

Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;)

Each people group will have a set of laws and these laws are written on their hearts, basically they have been placed in each person by God. That is why you cannot find any people group which does not have some type of set of rules and regulations. There is a standard of right and wrong in every group. That standard did not just appear out of nowhere, it is the product of God's law being written on the hearts of men which will give men a conscience that will be able to discern between right and wrong. This will either

indict or exonerate someone when matters of law are taken up. The word “thoughts” carries with it the meaning of “reasoning.” Their reasoning is called upon when a matter needs to be adjudicated.

### **Rom 2:16 (KJV)**

In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

If you notice there is a parenthesis around the verses 13-15 which conveys some understanding about those without the law of God. Verse 16 picks up from verse 12 where we read concerning people being judged by the law of God and even those who do not have the law of God are culpable for their sins. God states here that every secret sin will be brought to light and judged according to the Gospel of Christ. As God saw the secret sin of Achan in Joshua 7, he sees the secret sin of every person and the unredeemed will give an account of all their sins. Not one can be hidden from God no matter how hard a person tries. They may hide their sins from fallible man on earth but Judgment Day will reveal the secrets of men. (Psa 44:21 KJV) Shall not God search this out? for he knoweth the secrets of the heart. Those who reject Christ will face Him on Judgment Day as He will judge those secret sins that they have tried to keep hidden.

### **Rom 2:17 (KJV)**

Behold, thou art called a Jew, and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God,

Now Paul specifically speaks to the Jews. He accused them of resting in the law, which means they had their confidence in the law and they would boast that they had some kind of special relationship with God by means of having received the law. Their glory was in the law of God, even though not one could keep it perfectly. The word “Jew” is really a shortened word for someone from the tribe of Judah. We will look at the spiritual implications of the word “Jew” a little later on in this chapter. On the return from Babylonian captivity, the majority were from the tribe of Judah. The Northern ten tribes went into captivity in Assyria but were never heard from again as they assimilated in the population of the world. As a Christian rests in Calvary because salvation has been purchased, the unsaved Jew rested in the law believing that because they had the law, they were special, not realizing they would suffer more condemnation. The more light someone has, the more accountable they are.

### **Rom 2:18 (KJV)**

And knowest his will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law;

Here Paul is asking the Jews if they really believe that they know the will of God. The word “will” carries with it the meaning of “desire or purpose.” What human being can know the will of God perfectly? There is none and that is why Paul is asking these Jews if they think they are informed of His will. Then Paul speaks about them being able, based on their knowledge of God’s will, to approve what is more excellent. The word “approvest” means “to try, scrutinize, or prove.” Would they be able to prove what is more excellent and having done that, are they able to put into practice what is approved? Were they practicing the law in its purest form? The word “instructed” in the Greek gives us the English word “Catechism.” Were they taking their instruction for living out of the law or were they adding things to it for the purposes of justifying certain behaviors?

**Rom 2:19 (KJV)**

And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness,

Paul was chiding them because they had such confidence, which gives us an alternate meaning in the Greek of “persuaded,” that they were capable teachers and examples to the Gentiles who they believed walked in blindness and their teachings and methods were bringing light out of the darkness. Their belief was, that because they had the law, all the Gentiles were in darkness and were to look to the Jews as a source of light concerning the teachings of God. This is why the Pharisees tried to make many proselytes out of the Gentiles. That practice is carried down to today where a Gentile can convert to Judaism. In fact, there is something called a Hasidic Gentile.

**Rom 2:20 (KJV)**

An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law.

There were many among the Jews who did not know the law of God and it was not an uncommon practice to call the leaders who taught the law, instructors. When they brought them into the temple to teach, they would try and mature them in the Jewish religion. If you notice the word that the Bible uses in this verse concerning their knowledge of the truth. It is called the “form.” The word “form” may also be understood as “appearance or semblance.” Paul is saying that these Jews really did not understand the essence of the law, instead were postulating only a form and a doctored form at that. By the time the book of Romans was written, which was approximately 56 AD, Judaism had replaced the law and was more of a collection of commentaries such as the Babylonian and Jerusalem Talmud. The Rabbis had already overshadowed the true teachings of Scripture with things like oral traditions and Rabbinical writings. This already took place as far back as the Babylonian Captivity plus we saw the lack of understanding of Scripture the leaders had in their failure to recognize the Lord Jesus Christ.

Romans 2:21-29

**Rom 2:21 (KJV)**

Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

Here Paul is bringing up the manner of the hypocrite. He asks that when they teach a proselyte the things of the law, do they practice what they are preaching? One of the biggest forms of hypocrisy is when a preacher or teacher of the Bible instructs other Christians to live a certain way and then they go and live the opposite of what they have extracted from Scripture. He asks them if when they teach that stealing is wrong, do they steal? How adept are religious leaders at fudging the truth when it comes to themselves? This is why Paul asks them basically are they being truthful to themselves?

**Rom 2:22 (KJV)**

Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that

abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege?

Paul continues the questions of introspection. If you tell someone not to commit adultery, are you committing it? Adultery is running rampant in the modern church and it is being endorsed by the church leaders in those congregations. How? The Bible explicitly teaches that when a divorced person remarries, they are committing adultery. (Luke 16:18 KJV)

Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery; and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband committeth adultery. These are the words of the Lord Jesus Christ AKA God! So clergy who remarry divorced people are aiding them in an adulterous lifestyle, yet they pound the pulpits and tell people that adultery is sin, which it is. This is the highest form of hypocrisy. They preach adultery is wrong yet they help many people commit it. Then he talks about idols. How many modern church leaders have made money their idol? How many have made themselves their own idol by being the big Ph.D. in the church and believe they cannot be challenged by the uneducated sheep in the pews? The words "commit sacrilege" carries with it the meaning of "robbing temples." How can someone rob a temple? Or how can someone rob a church? This is the only place in the New Testament the word is used. The Jews were supposed to have abhorred the idols in pagan temples yet they followed the same methods in the area of financial dealings with their congregations. There were feasts and other celebrations where special offerings would be taken. In the modern church, look in a box of donation envelopes and you will see special offerings for almost every holiday of the year. Pagans extracted money and goods from their adherents and the modern church guilt manipulates their people into making extraneous donations. God built His church on tithes and offerings, not guilt manipulations to try and pry the wallets of people.

### **Rom 2:23 (KJV)**

Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?

The Jews boasted in the belief they had a special relationship with God and the law was their bragging right. However, Paul is calling them hypocrites because instead of keeping the law they supposedly loved so much, they are breaking the law and he asks them if that dishonors God? Keep in mind that as Paul is bringing these accusations against the Jews, he himself is a Jew who used to be caught up in the same circles of hypocrisy they were until God opened his eyes to the truth. It is the same today that many false churches that are ordaining sodomites. Now we know that these churches are false but to the world they are identified with God being churches.

### **Rom 2:24 (KJV)**

For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.

What is the result of the hypocrite's lifestyle? It is the fact that God's named will be blasphemed. Blasphemy means "slander" or "speak evil of." The Gentiles were making fun of the name of God because the Jews were living lives contrary to what they were supposed to. If they claimed the possession of the law, then by not living according to that law, they were plain hypocrites and the name was fitting, but because the temple was supposed to have represented God among the people, His name was also blasphemed. The Gentiles probably looked at the temple as akin to one built to their pagan gods. If those who lived at the temple were so evil, then that would falsely show that these temple leaders were serving a false god and that is the worst indictment you can bring against the true living God. The church is following the same scenario. Remember in 1987-88 when the sex scandals of the evangelists took place? Who took the brunt of the actions of two false preachers? It was the church of the living God. We were all looked upon as

hypocrites. What about the Roman Catholic pedophile/sodomite scandal? We know the Roman Catholic Institution is a false church but the unbelieving world sees all churches as representing God, so they lump us all together and the name of Christ is blasphemed among the heathen in this world. This is why any time Christians sin publicly, it creates a very black mark upon the church and strengthens the belief of the unbelievers that our God is just a myth. This is why there is so much in Scripture pertaining to living the Christian life according to biblical principles.

### **Rom 2:25 (KJV)**

For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.

Part of the covenant which God made with Abraham was circumcision. (Acts 7:8 KJV) And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat the twelve patriarchs. Paul here states that the covenant of circumcision will profit the Jews if they keep the law. Circumcision was the last bastion of self-justification that the Jews held to. The problem was if circumcision was to be profitable for them, the law was to be kept simultaneously. Now if they broke the law, then their circumcision became uncircumcision, which meant they were no better than the heathen. (1 Sam 17:26 KJV) And David spake to the men that stood by him, saying, What shall be done to the man that killeth this Philistine, and taketh away the reproach from Israel? **for who is this uncircumcised Philistine,** that he should defy the armies of the living God? Circumcision alone could not save them but the keeping of the law perfectly could. Now, only in Christ can one be as if they kept the law perfectly. (Deu 30:6 KJV) And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live. In Deuteronomy, God was already speaking about the eternal covenant of Grace by using the statement that He will circumcise the heart to love the Lord thy God.

### **Rom 2:26 (KJV)**

Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

Going back a few verses where Paul discusses the Gentiles having their own set of laws, he now asks a pertinent question. If the uncircumcision, the heathens, keep the righteousness of the law or the essence of the law itself, then would not the fact that they are uncircumcised be counted as if they were circumcised? It would be as if they were part of the covenant of circumcision based on the fact that they were keeping the essence of the law. Basically, Paul is saying that if a Gentile was able to keep the law perfectly, then they would be part of the saved of Israel. This would mean the Gentile would be in the hands of Christ as one who kept the law perfectly and imputed that perfection to His Elect in contrast to the physical Jew who has not kept the law even though they have been circumcised.

### **Rom 2:27 (KJV)**

And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law?

Now Paul brings in another approach to his point. Those unbelievers who are not circumcised, which is the natural condition because circumcision is made by men according to the law of God, if they fulfill the law, then they will judge those Jews who are

circumcised but who are disobedient to the law of God. Just as Noah condemned the old world and the Queen of the South stood against that generation, the Gentiles who fulfill the law of God will condemn those who do not keep the law. Remember in verse 25, circumcision is only profitable if obedience to the law accompanies it. When Paul speaks of obedience in these past few verses, he is speaking of perfect and not partial obedience, because partial is akin to complete disobedience. (James 2:10 KJV) For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

### **Rom 2:28 (KJV)**

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

Paul now ends up this section by stating that a true Jew is not one who only has the outward appearance in the flesh. Remember, the flesh profiteth nothing. (John 6:63 KJV) It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. Physical circumcision also has lost its meaning since Christ went to the cross. Physical circumcision is only done today for health reasons and has no spiritual significance.

### **Rom 2:29 (KJV)**

But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

(Rom 7:22 KJV) For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: Here Paul gives the definition of what a true Jew is. Deuteronomy 30:6: (Deu 30:6 KJV) And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live. Paul states that a true Jew is one who is born again of the Spirit of God under the eternal covenant of Grace in contrast to the covenant that Israel made with God at Mt. Sinai which they could not keep. Only Christ was able to fulfill every demand of God's righteous law and those who are in Christ, are as those who had kept the law in its entirety and perfectly. Thusly because of Christ's sacrifice, we are now members of Spiritual Israel or the Israel of God. This is borne out in quite a number of other verses.

(Deu 30:6 KJV) **And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart,** and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

(Isa 45:17 KJV) **But Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation;** ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end.

(Rom 9:6 KJV) Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. **For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:**

(Gal 3:7 KJV) Know ye therefore that **they which are of faith,** the same are the children of Abraham.

(Gal 3:16 KJV) Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, **And to thy seed, which is Christ.**

(Gal 6:16 KJV) And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, **and upon the Israel of God.**

(Eph 2:12 KJV) That at that time ye were without Christ, **being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise,** having no hope, and without God in the world:

(Phil 3:3 KJV) **For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit,** and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

Every verse in this list speaks of the eternal covenant of Grace which comes only through the Lord Jesus Christ. This is the eternal Israel which God speaks of in Isaiah 45:17. The true Jew is the one who is saved through the Lord Jesus Christ, who was of the tribe of Judah. Those who are of the physical tribe of Judah who boast in their circumcision are as those who are uncircumcised, or unsaved. Those who are in the Lord Jesus Christ are of the spiritual tribe of Judah, which is the eternal Israel or the true Jew who is circumcised in the heart.

Romans 3:1-11

### **Rom 3:1 (KJV)**

What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?

As Paul just gave a biting discourse aimed at the physical Jews and in verse 25 & 26, he states that if the Gentiles who do not have the law of God, do those things that are in the law, then they are as if they have been circumcised. Paul then asks two questions. First, what then is the advantage of being a Jew and then what is the profit of circumcision? Was there an advantage of being a Jew over being a Gentile?

### **Rom 3:2 (KJV)**

Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

The chief advantage that the Jews had was that they were given the Scriptures. They had much more light than the surrounding nations. The code of Hammurabi could never have stood the test of equality with God's law because within the law of God, we read in many places of a promised coming Redeemer and salvation by Grace. (Deu 30:6 KJV) And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live. Here we read that God will circumcise the heart. This is pointing to Grace, not the keeping of the law. The law codes of the surrounding countries could be changed on the whim of the king or queen, except the laws of the Medes and Persians. (Dan 6:8 KJV) Now, O king, establish the decree, and sign the writing, that it be not changed, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which altereth not. Those laws were just penal codes aimed at keeping the laws of that country plus they were man made laws and with man-made law you have certain privileged classes of people who are not subject to those laws. God's law was not a respecter of persons as all were and are accountable. God also gave them the Prophets and with them the great prophecies of the coming of Christ and the end of the world including the prophecies of the New Heavens and the New Earth. (Isa 65:17 KJV) For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. This is why they had the advantage because they had all this divine knowledge in written form. No other nation Earth had what they had.



### **Rom 3:3 (KJV)**

For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

Now when we read the history of Israel going all the way back to the time of the Exodus, we see that they were plagued by many who did not believe God, even though the miracles were performed right before their eyes. Just because some in Israel did not believe God, would their unbelief negate the faith of God, which is the effectual calling of God? The answer is of course no, since man can never frustrate any plan of God. This same situation happened in the New Testament. (2 Tim 2:13 KJV) If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself. In the church, just because somebody does not believe the Bible, does that mean their unbelief is a persuading factor that God will not fulfill His word through His effectual calling of the Elect? The answer is no! God is faithful in calling and saving all the Elect. Every time we sin, we are exuding a faithless Christianity. If I sin against God, does that negate His promises in Scripture or even His culmination of this world and the creation of a new one? In other words, if someone disbelieves God does that in any way hinder God from bringing His plans to completion? The answer is no. In ancient Israel God had planned to save many out of Israel, He called them a remnant. The unbelief of even the Elect of God, prior to salvation, will not hinder God from saving them. Once they become saved, that ends the problem of unbelief forever.

### **Rom 3:4 (KJV)**

God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

Now Paul answers the questions posed in verse 3. Paul rapidly answers that God will remain faithful to His Elect and His purposes on this Earth. A faithless person will never hinder God's plans. In fact, the Bible states that God is true and in comparison to God's truth, every man is a liar, for there is no one on Earth who could even come close to the verity of God. God's word will always stand and His plans will be completed as He decrees. Paul states that because man is sinful and God is faithful in all His dealings, this will mean that whatever God says, He will be justified in them. He also states that when men will judge God, and that does not mean in the same manner God judges man, but when man assesses the program or plan God has executed, God will be proven correct in all His ways, even though man may disagree with the methods or results. (Deu 32:4 KJV) He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.

### **Rom 3:5 (KJV)**

But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)

Paul now asks a question which has been asked down through the ages, and remember, Paul says that he is speaking as a man, from a human viewpoint. The word "commend" carries with it the meaning of "demonstrate or shows." If the sin of Israel, which could be construed as either unbelief by some or unbelief on the national scale, if that unrighteousness demonstrates the righteousness and the faithfulness of God, then how could He judge the unrighteous since it is them who bring out the righteousness of God? He then asks the second question. If our unrighteousness commends the righteousness of God, is God unrighteous when He executes wrath upon the unrighteous? Paul then answers the question in the next verse.

### **Rom 3:6 (KJV)**

God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?

The answer is clear. (Rom 1:18 KJV) For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; All unrighteousness of men shall be judged on the last day, except those who have received the free grace of salvation through the Lord Jesus Christ. If God would allow the unrighteousness of men to continue so His righteousness would be shown, then this would not be in character with a holy God. God will not allow any sin to go unpunished, either in this world or in the one to come.

### **Rom 3:7 (KJV)**

For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?

If I as a man, who is a sinner, continue to lie to the glory of God, and my lies cause the truth of God to abound, then why would God judge me as a sinner since my actions are bringing glory to His Name? The fact is that no sin brings glory to God and this is why He has to judge sin on the last day. This is also why the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross as the substitutionary sacrifice on behalf of His Elect. The Lord Jesus Christ would not accept praise from a demon. (Mark 1:24-25 KJV) Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. {25} And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. Jesus told the demon to be quiet because He will not receive praise from the devil's camp or else it will look like He is giving approval to them.

### **Rom 3:8 (KJV)**

And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.

It seems that Paul was being slandered by accusation of teaching that if we do evil, then good will come out of it. Paul never taught any such thing and those who have spread the lies will stand for those sins and when their sentence is pronounced, their condemnation will be just and will give proof to those that sin does not abound to good but rather it abounds to judgment. This accusation is also pronounced against the doctrines of free grace that we can sin all we want and still go to heaven. It normally comes from the free will camp where man is sovereign in salvation and God the beggar.

### **Rom 3:9 (KJV)**

What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin;

Now Paul states that the Jews are in no better shape than the Gentiles because the entire human race is under sin, which means they are all under condemnation. All unredeemed human beings are under the wrath of God. All humans are born with the Adamic nature and must be redeemed by the Lord Jesus Christ to be taken to Heaven.

### **Rom 3:10 (KJV)**

As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

Here is one of the most revealing portions of Scripture concerning the pre-salvation state of man. First, we are told that there is not one human being on Earth that is righteous and God emphasizes that fact by following up with “no, not one. This means that no one is innocent, faultless, or guiltless before God. Every human being has sinned, no matter who they are or how religious they are. This portion of Scripture up to verse 19 also gives us insight as to why people cannot save themselves as the free will gospel teaches.

### **Rom 3:11 (KJV)**

There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

There is none that understand their pitiful condition before the Lord. Many people think because they are religious that they understand God. Their understanding is lacking in the area of God's requirement for salvation. They fail to understand that they cannot bring themselves into salvation because the spiritually dead do not understand God's requirement for salvation, simply because they are dead. Then He tells us that no one seeks after God. The free will movement today teaches that people can seek after God but this verse flatly denies that heresy. Today we have a new phenomenon in the churches and that is “seeker friendly churches.” This is also a fallacious concept since the Bible explicitly teaches that no one seeks after God. It is God who seeks after His Elect. (Ezek 34:11 KJV) For thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I, even I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out. Man is spiritually dead until such a time that God regenerates them and then they seek after God because they have been made alive unto the things of God. Those who believe they are seeking God without being regenerated are living a religious lie and will end up in Hell.

### **Romans 3:12-21**

### **Rom 3:12 (KJV)**

They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

Paul continues by stating that every human being has “gone out of the way.” This carries with it the meaning of “turning away from or turning aside.” All humans because of the sin of Adam have imputed to them a sin nature which has caused them to turn aside or away from God. Man now chooses his own ways and attempts to keep God out of the picture. There is no person on earth, before salvation, who walks in the paths of righteousness. Humanity has turned away from God and we can see that in our society as people attempt to quash any mention of God. Then God states that together they are unprofitable. This means the entire human race has become worthless at the same time. When Adam fell, the human race fell out of fellowship with God. Now the only thing the humans can do is to sin against God and rebel, which is tantamount to a useless existence. Then God is saying that there is not one human who does any good and He emphasizes here also, “no, not one.” All humans which are not redeemed by God's grace cannot do anything good, which means they cannot bring themselves to a point of salvation.

### **Rom 3:13 (KJV)**

Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips:

Then God brings in the poison of the tongue of the unsaved. He states plainly that our words are akin to an open sepulchre or grave. An open grave will stink with the odor of dead bodies. This is how God views the words of the unsaved as equal to a stench of a dead body. The only thing that unsaved people can spew out is death, decay, and stench. This is how reprehensible the words of unsaved man are to a thrice holy God. He also states that we are deceitful in our speech. It is impossible for an unregenerate person to speak without being deceitful in some manner. He likens the deceit of our tongues to the poison of the Asp, which is a very poisonous snake found in Egypt. Notice that God uses a snake found in Egypt because in Scripture Egypt is one country which represents the unsaved world.

### **Rom 3:14 (KJV)**

Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness:

Man is born with a bitterness in his tongue and they are always cursing and swearing. All one has to do is listen to a conversation between two unsaved people and you will hear curse words with taking of God's name and the name of the Lord Jesus Christ in vain. (Psa 10:7 KJV) His mouth is full of cursing and deceit and fraud: under his tongue is mischief and vanity. Notice that the verse uses the word "full" which means that the tongue of the unsaved is not given over partially to cursing and bitterness but totally. That is how totally depraved the tongue of the reprobate is but that comes out of a heart which is totally depraved. (Prov 4:23 KJV) Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.

### **Rom 3:15 (KJV)**

Their feet are swift to shed blood:

In the previous verses God described the sins of the heart and mouth, now He tells us that the heart and tongue is not the completion of the sins but the actual sinful activity which comes out of the heart of the reprobate. Man is always ready and willing to commit sin, even to the point of murder. Murder was the second major sin recorded in the Bible, as disobedience to God was the first. Cain rose up and murdered his brother Abel. If we look around today in our world, we will see people killing other people without conscience. Suicide bombers have no qualms about taking their own lives with the lives of their victims. They view human life as cheap. This is how anybody views human life who murders another. God already gave Isaiah good insight into human nature. (Isa 59:7 KJV) Their feet run to evil, and they make haste to shed innocent blood: their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity; wasting and destruction are in their paths.

### **Rom 3:16 (KJV)**

Destruction and misery are in their ways:

Man's sinfulness has brought nothing but ruin and misery to this present world. All one has to do is look back in history and you will find that it is written in the blood of millions of people. Empires rose and fell, and with it the deaths of many. In our modern world, we see the same things. Countries put their own citizens to death so the wealthy and powerful can remain in power. Not only countries suffer from misery but individual lives are ruined by sin and wreak misery. All one has to do is look at the conditions in many lives, even in our

own communities. Drugs, alcohol, cigarettes, and many other things are looked to by unbelievers as ways out of a seemingly inescapable world.

### **Rom 3:17 (KJV)**

And the way of peace have they not known:

The reprobate does not know the way of peace. With murder always lurking around in a person's heart coupled with bitterness and cursing, peace is something which eludes this person. (Isa 57:21 KJV) There is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked. The peace that these people need is the peace with God which comes through salvation. Those whom the Lord saves, will have peace in their hearts and will have no need for the failed gimmicks of this world to bring about some type of temporary escapist personal peace. The true way of peace is the free Grace of God through the Lord Jesus Christ. Unbelievers may try to find peace in a religious system but religion can drain a person as much as the ways of the secular world.

### **Rom 3:18 (KJV)**

There is no fear of God before their eyes.

If there is one glaring characteristic of the reprobate, it is that they have no fear of God. Partly, because they have done what they could to expunge any and every reference to God in our society. Man exudes no fear of God when they use the name of God and the Lord Jesus Christ as swear words. This is the height of the depraved arrogance of man. David know of this problem three thousand years ago because some things never change. (Psa 36:1 KJV) The transgression of the wicked saith within my heart, that there is no fear of God before his eyes. On the last day there will be trembling fear in all the hearts of the unbelievers as they stand before the holy God they have mocked and scorned.

### **Rom 3:19 (KJV)**

Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

No matter what sin a person commits, there will be no defense for it at the Great White Throne Judgment. Every mouth will be stopped, in other words, all will be guilty and self-justification will not be a defense strategy. Those people in the world who do not become saved and remain reprobates, will be judged by the law of God but the fact that they are at this Judgment is already pre-trial evidence of their guilt. Even the Elect of God were guilty of disobedience to the law of God but the substitutionary sacrifice of Christ on behalf of the Elect, allowed them to escape the judgment of God and upon salvation, go from death to life. (Mat 5:25 KJV) Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. This verse speaks of the adversary. Now in this instance it is not speaking of Satan because God never counsels anyone to agree with Satan. In this instance it is speaking of the law of God. We are to agree with the law of God that we are sinful and accountable to God for breaking the law. A person can be delivered anytime to the judge, which teaches us that if a person dies anytime in their life, the next thing they will know is that they are being raised to be judged for their sins. When a person agrees with the law of God, they realize their sinfulness and will have become saved because only those who are saved can understand that they have been an adversary to God and his righteous law.

### **Rom 3:20 (KJV)**

Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

No person in the world will ever be saved by doing works or by attempting to keep every tenet of the law of God. (James 2:10 KJV) For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. Salvation only comes through the free Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ and no one can ever work their ways to Heaven. Even if a church teaches 99% Grace and 1% works, it is an adulterated gospel and will lead a person to Hell. The law was given for the purpose of showing us that we, as sinners, could not keep the law of God. The knowledge of sin came through the law. For example, if a person knows that God has said stealing on any level is sin, then they may attempt to not steal anything. This means they have a knowledge of the fact that stealing is against the law of God. Those that stole have broken the law of God which means they now possess the knowledge that they have broken the law of God. So the law of God gives us knowledge in two areas: 1) It tells us what we must do to obey it; 2) it tells us that we are unable to obey it because all have transgressed the law of God by sinning in some manner. (1 John 3:4 KJV) Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

### **Rom 3:21 (KJV)**

But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;

The Apostle Paul has been discussing the fact that all men are sinful and unrighteous and are unable to be justified by keeping the law of God. He is now declaring there is a way one can become justified before God. If one becomes saved through the Lord Jesus Christ, then they need not keep the tenets of the law for salvation, since Christ has already done that. Justification is imputed to those who are under Grace. Justification is the act whereby a person is declared not guilty. A true Christian is declared not guilty concerning the keeping of the law since Christ already fulfilled the demands of God's holy law. Now this Grace is not only manifested in the Lord Jesus Christ but has been prophesied in the Old Testament. The thread of Grace runs through the entire Bible and not just the New Testament.

(Gen 15:6 KJV) And he believed in the LORD; **and he counted it to him for righteousness.**

(Gen 22:18 KJV) **And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed;** because thou hast obeyed my voice.

(Isa 45:25 KJV) In the LORD shall all the seed of Israel **be justified,** and shall glory.

(Jer 31:31-34 KJV) Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a **new covenant** with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: {32} Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: {33} But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. {34} And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: **for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.**

(Ezek 34:22-23 KJV) Therefore will I save my flock, and they shall no more be a prey; and I will judge between cattle and cattle. {23} **And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David;** he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd.

(Dan 9:24 KJV) Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, **and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness,** and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.

### Romans 3:22-31

#### **Rom 3:22 (KJV)**

Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

The only righteousness which is of God is not based upon any attempted keeping of the law rather it is a faith based righteousness. Now many may say that it is our faith in Christ that imputes God's righteousness to us, however, as we have pointed out man is dead in sins and can no way conjure up faith. The dead are capable of nothing, which means they are incapable of having any faith within them. Faith is a gift from God and is given only to the Elect of God. (1 Cor 12:9 KJV) To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; Here we see that in the provisional gifts of 1 Corinthians 12, we see the special gift of faith being doled to a few but later the gift of faith was dissolved. Faith was one of the gifts which was given to all believers in the body of Christ and was not given to only a certain few. In Galatians 5:22, we see that faith is a fruit of the Holy Spirit. (Gal 5:22 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, When we look at faith, we also see that Jesus is the author and finisher of our faith. (Heb 12:2 KJV) Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. Faith does not begin in the unsaved person. Faith is given to each believer as Jesus is the author and not the salvation recipient. Once we become saved, then we have the Holy Spirit living in us and we are then to live by Faith. (Rom 1:17 (KJV) For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith. The Just, which are the believers, are to live by faith. Now in the Romans verse it points not to the faith of the believer but it points to the faith of Christ. The word "faith" is in the genitive case which means possessive. The faith that we definitely live by is the faith of Christ and that faith is imputed to each believer. We also read in our verse that there is no difference. It does not matter who the believer is, whether Jew or Gentile, male or female, adult or child, the fact is that the faith of Christ is imputed to the true believer which gives them the ability to have faith in God as Romans 1:17 states, that the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith, not work to work.

#### **Rom 3:23 (KJV)**

For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

This verse teaches the very plain truth about every human being and that is that everyone has sinned without exception. The word "come short" carries with it the meaning of "inferior or failure." Man's sin has caused them to fail in grasping the glory of God, even though man in his pride likes to think that his track record of works bring glory to God. (1

Ki 8:46 KJV) If they sin against thee, (for there is no man that sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near; Even in the Old Testament the fact was made clear that there is not one person on Earth who has not sinned.

### **Rom 3:24 (KJV)**

Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

Here is the essence of what free grace does for the true believer. We are never justified by works because our works are all tainted by sins. The only way a person can ever become justified, that is, declared not guilty before God, is by the free grace of Christ through which we are redeemed. This is why a true Christian can never lose their salvation. It has been divinely sealed by the free grace of Christ. Since He was the one who redeemed us, He has stated that He will never lose any of us. (John 6:37 KJV) All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. Those who swallow and follow the free will heresy have no concept of the free grace of Christ in redeeming His children. They, in essence, declare themselves justified based upon their actions and not on the action of Christ. This is why many who believe they are saved are not because a spiritually dead person cannot enact their own salvation by their own volition. It is simply not taught in Scripture but is forced upon certain Scriptures so man can retain his pride, even in salvation. Justification not only declares us not guilty of all our sins but places the believer in a position of righteousness.

### **Rom 3:25 (KJV)**

Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;

**Propitiation** - The Lord Jesus Christ was the propitiation through which the requirements of God's Holy Law was met. The word "propitiation" is the Greek word which means "mercy seat." In fact, in Hebrews 9:5 it is translated just that. In the tabernacle, the mercy seat sat on top of the Ark of the Covenant. On the great Day of Atonement, the High Priest was to sprinkle the blood offering made for the people before the mercy seat and on top of it. (Lev 16:14-15 KJV) And he shall take of the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it with his finger upon the mercy seat eastward; and before the mercy seat shall he sprinkle of the blood with his finger seven times. {15} Then shall he kill the goat of the sin offering, that is for the people, and bring his blood within the veil, and do with that blood as he did with the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it upon the mercy seat, and before the mercy seat: The mercy seat in the tabernacle was a foreshadow of the Lord Jesus Christ who would expiate the sins of His Elect. The mercy seat was the place of propitiation. The word "propitiation" actually means to "appease or conciliate." The mercy seat in the tabernacle and temple had assuaged the anger of God toward the sins of the people. This was also a foreshadow that the anger of God toward sin and sinners is assuaged by the sacrifice of Christ. Now many people believe that God hates the sin but loves the sinner. This is a very erroneous statement. (Psa 5:5 KJV) The foolish shall not stand in thy sight: thou hatest all workers of iniquity. In Psalm 5:5, we plainly read that God hates the sin and the sinner. In fact, until the Elect become saved, we are at war with God because we are still walking as sinners. Once we become saved, the war is over and now that hatred that God had for us as sinners, is now translated into love for us because of the propitiatory sacrifice of Christ. (Rom 5:1 KJV) Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: In Romans 5:1, since we are justified, we have peace with God which means the war between us and God is over eternally. We are no longer at enmity with God instead we have become His children and being elevated to Princes and Princesses.



**Faith in his Blood** - It is only through the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ are the Elect justified. (Heb 9:22 KJV) And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission. In the ceremonial laws, it was required that an animal without blemish be killed for a sin offering. Christ was the Mercy Seat who shed his own blood for the Elect of God. (Heb 9:12 KJV) Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. The animal sacrifices were only an atonement but the sacrifice of Christ removed the sins of His people instead of covering them.

(Psa 103:12 KJV) As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.

(Col 2:13-14 KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

**Declare his Righteousness** - In the tabernacle and temple, the atonement which was made, was made only for the nation of Israel. The atonement was only seen by God and the High Priest but here God is saying that He is declaring the righteousness which was authored by the Lord Jesus Christ because of His sacrifice on Calvary to the entire world. (1 John 2:2 KJV) And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. Now this does not mean that Christ paid the penalty for the sins of every person in the whole world, if He did, then everyone would be saved. 1 John 2:2 speaks of the fact that Christ's propitiation for our sins will be as effective for His Elect who are in the uttermost parts of the Earth. Christ's sacrifice will have the same effect on His Elect two thousand years in the future as it did for the Apostles in Jerusalem. This translates into the effectual calling of the believer which completely invalidates the idea of free will. The worldwide declaration of the propitiatory sacrifice of Christ is the worldwide declaration of the Gospel.

**Forbearance of God** - Notice in this verse we read the phrase "sins that are past." Christ's sacrifice was effectual in the lives of the Old Testament Saints. The forbearance of God was during the Old Testament times before the time of Christ on Earth. From the time of Abraham to the time of the cross was about 2100 years. God was forbearing with the sins of the Elect until the Lord Jesus Christ finished the salvation plan of God. (John 19:30 KJV) When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, **It is finished:** and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost. Then justification of all the believers had taken place by the true Mercy Seat of God.

### **Rom 3:26 (KJV)**

To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

In the end of verse 25, we are told of the forbearance of God during the Old Testament before the incarnation of the Lord Jesus Christ who would finish God's salvation plan. The forbearance of God leads to the present declaration that the righteousness of God is now revealed in the Lord Jesus Christ, and because of this, God is just, especially in His salvation plan, which, through the blood of Christ, justifies those whom He elects to salvation. We can conclude that this is effective justification of the believer which means the believer can never be unjustified in God's sight. Those in Christ are securely justified. There is nothing in Scripture which speaks of temporary justification. (Acts 13:39 KJV) And

by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

### **Rom 3:27 (KJV)**

Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

The Pharisees and Sadducees believed they were justified by their works. There are many cults and churches today who believe their works will justify them before God thus granting them Heaven. This verse builds on verse 26. Based on the fact that God is just by justifying His Elect unto salvation, then where is boasting included? Does anyone have the right to boast that they did something to affect their salvation? Paul then quickly answers that question by stating that any boasting in that is excluded or eliminated. For how can one boast of securing their own salvation when God alone is responsible for it through the Lord Jesus Christ? Those who boast in the law of works will be found deficient in the arena of salvation because no one can work for their salvation. The law only proved to a person that they could never become righteous before God. The law whereby a person can become right before God is the law of faith. The law of faith is the Gospel of Free Grace. Within the law of faith, there is no boasting whatsoever since Grace is all of God. Even faith is governed by law.

### **Rom 3:28 (KJV)**

Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

The conclusion of the matter is plain. No one can become justified before God on their own merits but only through the Free Grace of God. Galatians 2:16 bears this out clearly. (Gal 2:16 KJV) Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. Since Christ fulfilled the demands of the law of God, the believers in Christ are justified as if they kept every last tenet of the law. The Judaizers had tried to mix the keeping of the law with grace, in hopes of keeping people under the law which would still keep the people under their control. Law and Grace are two different things and cannot be homogenized for salvation. Salvation has only been by grace in every case throughout history, there are no exceptions.

### **Rom 3:29 (KJV)**

Is he the God of the Jews only? is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

Paul is breaking the Jews of a bad thinking habit in that because of their history, they believed that God was exclusively theirs as in ancient times but now that God is dealing with the world and His Elect within the entire world means that He is the God of the Gentile believers as well as the Jewish believers. The Jews had forgotten that Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob were Gentiles with a lineage from Mesopotamia which meant they had a Gentile lineage. The nation of Israel was not born until they came out of Egypt in the Exodus some 600 years after the time of Abraham. You can legitimately say that the nation of Israel was born in 1447 BC. While they were in Egyptian captivity, God was preparing them to be a nation among the nations who would eventually bring forth the Lord Jesus Christ. (John 4:22 KJV) Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.

### **Rom 3:30 (KJV)**

Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.

Here Paul once again reiterates the truth that the same God which appeared at Sinai and guided the Israelites on their journeys plus judged them throughout the wilderness wanderings and times of the divided kingdom, is the same God who will also justify the Elect that He saves from among the Gentile population. The word “by” in this verse is the word “ek” in the Greek and it denotes “from or out of.” It also has a meaning of a point of departure or a separation which is very important. The Jews had thought that by keeping the law and the ceremonies such as circumcision, they would be acceptable in God’s sight. Here Paul is stating that the “circumcision” meaning the Jews, are justified apart or separate from the law, since the law cannot save anyone. He also goes on to say that the uncircumcision are saved through faith, or Free Grace. The meaning is straightforward here that the Gentiles of whom God elects, are saved through the avenue of Free Grace otherwise known as faith.

### **Rom 3:31 (KJV)**

Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

Does the law of faith void the law? The answer is a resounding no. The word “void” carries with it in the Greek the meaning of “making of no effect.” The law remains in effect until the end of time. The law still holds authority over those who remain under it. Just because many are justified through the faith or Free Grace, does not mean the law no longer has any authority. If a person breaks just one rule of the law, they become guilty before God as if they broke the entire law. A person who is saved looks to Christ, who by His sacrifice, kept the law in its entirety and that obedience is imputed to every true Christian. When that obedience of the law is imputed to the Christian by God, then that means that God has justified that believer because of their complete obedience to the law which was kept by Christ and imputed to the believer as if we were the ones who kept the law completely. The law is established, which means it still stands firm. The law remains established side by side with Grace, because the law is the one entity that teaches us that we could never keep it perfectly. Grace, through Christ, is the imputation of the obedience of Christ in keeping the law to the Christian.

Romans 4:1-9

### **Rom 4:1 (KJV)**

What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

Now Paul goes way back to Abraham in giving the proof that the doctrine of Justification was not something peculiar to this particular time and that justification by God alone was the only way that one could be saved. God justified His children as far back as the first one to become saved but Paul brings up Abraham. He speaks of Abraham in terms of the flesh because Israel was a physical descendant of Abraham while spiritual Israel was and is a spiritual descendant of Abraham. The phrase “pertaining to the flesh” could also refer to Abraham believing God on his own without inward spiritual regeneration as Paul would

be using this for illustrative purposes only. Abraham was circumcised at the age of 90 and Paul may be bringing up the fact of the flesh as he builds the contrast in Abraham's life concerning Law and Grace. The Jews held tenaciously to the fact that they were Abraham's descendants and now Paul wanted to bring Abraham up, which would go right to the heart of their prideful belief system, especially since they believed their circumcision was their ticket to exclusivity with God.

#### **Rom 4:2 (KJV)**

For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God.

If Abraham was justified by works, then he would have the right to boast in that glory. Paul was trying to get the Jews to understand that circumcision was a work and if they were justified in their works, then they too would be boasting. The problem is that they can boast to each other but they have no standing before God to boast about any of their works, even beyond circumcision. The reason is that Paul had already explained to them that no one can be justified by any works. Circumcision was about 600 years before the law came. So if Abraham was not justified by circumcision outside the law, then no one could be justified by circumcision within the law. The principle stands the same, works are works.

#### **Rom 4:3 (KJV)**

For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.

Remember in the three temptations of our Lord by Satan how He quoted Scripture in His responses to the Devil? Here Paul uses the same approach. He is letting the Scriptures do the talking since it is the Scriptures that can convict a person. He quotes from Genesis 15:6 which the Jews would have been familiar with. (Gen 15:6 KJV) And he believed in the LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness. The Scripture teaches that Abraham believed in the Lord. In the above Romans verse, we read that "Abraham believed God." Believing in the Lord always includes believing the Lord. At the time that Abraham believed God, he was already a believer who was indwelt by the Holy Spirit. It is only a true believer who is able to believe God and have righteousness imputed to them. The efficacy of the cross was already in effect when Abraham became a believer. Abraham was one of the Elect of God and was one of the earliest Gentiles in the Bible saved.

#### **Rom 4:4 (KJV)**

Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

If a person is able to work for their salvation, then that salvation is not grace but rather is a debt. When a person works for a paycheck, the company owes them that money for the work they performed for it. Once that person receives their pay, then the company no longer owes them anything. Then next week when they start working, the company owes them for their work again. A principle arises here, how much works and what kind of works will get you into heaven? The answer is that no works will get a person into Heaven. Grace is unmerited favor and debt is payment for something you do. Works will yield the payment of eternal damnation.

#### **Rom 4:5 (KJV)**

But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is

counted for righteousness.

Paul now brings up justification through grace. Those under grace do not keep the law for salvation. The law has already been kept for them by Christ and is imputed to them. It says here that through Grace, God will justify the ungodly, that is, those who are His Elect. Every person prior to salvation is ungodly. The word “ungodly” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “impious or wicked.” By salvation, God takes the wicked and turns them into His children who are justified by Grace. Then when God gives them the ability to have faith (remember people are spiritually dead before salvation and unable to generate faith from themselves) it is counted as righteousness, but not the faith itself, it is the object of the faith, which is God. A person may have faith that their car will make it another 10,000 miles but that faith does not save. That is visible faith. True Christians believe God whom we cannot see and that is righteous faith through the power of the indwelling Holy Spirit.

#### **Rom 4:6 (KJV)**

Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works,

In Psalm 32, David describes how happy a person is that God does not impute sin to. In fact, the man is twice blessed as he has righteousness imputed to him. It is a double blessing to have sins removed and righteousness implanted in its place. It is a total cleansing of the soul. Works can never cleanse the soul of its sin. Simply because works are physical and the soul is spiritual. Therefore, a spiritual cleansing is what is needed. Works may pacify the flesh but will never remove the sin and guilt from the soul. David has a trilogy of sorrow in Psalms 32, 38, and 51. When Nathan came to him and told him of his sin with Bathsheba, Nathan told him that God had already put away his sin, even though there were still physical consequences he had to face for those sins. (2 Sam 12:13 KJV) And David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against the LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The LORD also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die. The imputing of righteousness without works is the imputation of Grace to a person who is the Elect of God.

#### **Rom 4:7 (KJV)**

Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.

(Psa 32:1 KJV) Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Paul takes another quote from the Hebrew Scriptures and teaches them that even in David's time, there was the imputation of Grace and Justification to God's Elect, even without keeping the law. Remember, Nathan told David his sin was removed. Prior to this, David did not make any type of sin offering according to the law to receive that forgiveness. He received that forgiveness because he was a child of God and all his sins were paid for by Christ at Calvary, even though the cross was still a thousand years in the future. This could happen because, in principle, Christ was already slain before the foundation of the world. (Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. This goes back to the verse which speaks of the forbearance of God as He waited according to His timetable for the time when Christ would complete His salvation plan which would seal all the Elect from all periods of history and the future.

#### **Rom 4:8 (KJV)**

Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

Here is another great salvation verse. When God saves a person, He completely removes all their sin, which means both past and present, and will never lay that sin on the Elect. (Psa 103:12 KJV) As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. When Christ went to the cross, all our sins were in the future. When we were born, we came into time, which means we began to sin those sins which Christ had already paid for two thousand years ago. So if Christ has already paid for the sins of His Elect in total, then what sin can God impute to a soul that has been redeemed and fully cleansed by His Son? Not one, that is why the person is blessed to whom God imputes no sin. I wish those who believe they can lose their salvation would consider that question. Now the unbeliever has sin imputed to them every hour they are alive. They are not blessed no matter how much of this world's goods they have.

#### **Rom 4:9 (KJV)**

Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

Now Paul asks another question concerning this blessedness. Does this blessedness only come on the Jews, the circumcision, or does it come to the uncircumcision also? The answer is both, because David is mentioned and he was an Israelite. Then Abraham is mentioned and he was a Gentile from Mesopotamia. Abraham's circumcision was before the law was given. David's was done in the confines of obedience to the law. So within the confines of this discourse, God is showing that His salvation plan is not only for the Jews but also for the Gentiles. This verse teaches that salvation comes by faith and not by circumcision, and that faith was counted for righteousness. When Paul was writing this letter, many Gentiles were already being saved without the keeping of the law. When the Lord saved me I had no idea what the law was, in fact, it was only after I was saved that I came to know what the law of God was and how I was unable to keep it.

Romans 4:10-17

#### **Rom 4:10 (KJV)**

How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

Next Paul asks a very important question. How then was righteousness reckoned to Abraham? When he was circumcised or before that? The question really equates to, "when was Abraham justified?" Here is a great principle. Faith or salvation had been given to Abraham before he was circumcised. This reveals plainly that circumcision has nothing to do with salvation. Abraham was called out of Ur of the Chaldees and his belief in God was previous to him being circumcised. Paul wanted the Jews to know this so they would not place their trust in their circumcision. He also is telling them that circumcision is not a requirement for salvation since that is a work and works do not lead a person to Heaven. Justification comes through grace without the works of the law.

#### **Rom 4:11 (KJV)**

And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:

Abraham received the sign of circumcision which was the sign of the covenant which God was going to make with the physical descendants of Abraham. The sign of circumcision

was not a sign of the grace of God because God spoke of a spiritual circumcision of the heart which would accompany salvation. For Abraham, circumcision was the outward sign of what happened to him about 14 years earlier. It is like water baptism with the Christian. Water baptism is an outward sign of what has happened to the believer on the inside. Abraham was considered the father of all the faithful who would believe down through the ages. The Jews had mistakenly believed that Abraham was their spiritual father by means of circumcision, when in essence, Abraham, when he was justified by God without circumcision, was in total opposition to justification by circumcision. It would be like believing that people become saved through water baptism. Abraham is the model that God uses when He teaches in this verse that even though there will be millions of believers through the ages, the vast majority will not be circumcised but that fact does not withhold God from imputing righteousness to His Elect. Effectual imputation of righteousness will come on God's Elect no matter whether they are circumcised or not.

#### **Rom 4:12 (KJV)**

And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

Abraham is the type that God uses to show that he is the father of circumcision even to those who are not of physical Israel. Abraham was both the father of the physical nation of Israel and the father of the spiritual nation of Israel which is the body of believers. Paul continually drives home the point that Abraham was justified and saved even before he received the sign of circumcision. This is what Paul is trying to get these Jews to understand that circumcision is only a sign and reliance on signs is a dangerous practice. It is like those churches who rely on water baptism as a requirement for salvation. Water baptism is also only a sign.

#### **Rom 4:13 (KJV)**

For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

Paul now goes on to say that Abraham was going to be heir of the world, not through the law, but through faith. Abraham was justified and saved 600 years before the law came into existence at Sinai. This shows that grace salvation has nothing whatsoever to do with keeping the law of God. The seed that Abraham would bring forth in his family line was not only the Lord Jesus Christ but the seed which is the true believers who would follow. Abraham would be heir of the world in two ways. First, the Gospel would go forth throughout all the world and people would become saved in every country. Secondly, the world that Abraham would be heir of would be the new Earth which would be the eternal abode for all the true believers of God. This is why the physical nation of Israel would not be the ones who would be the heir of the world because they were trying to keep the law and to attain, through the law, what could only be attained through Grace. The Israel that God is dealing with today, is the worldwide Israel of God known as the body of believers or the Elect.

#### **Rom 4:14 (KJV)**

For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect:

Now Paul sets up a conflicting scenario. If those who are attempting to keep the law are

the heirs of the world, then the true Gospel, which is by faith, is made of no effect. The promise to Abraham would also be of no effect, simply because he did not have the law yet. The law of faith would then be made void in contrast to the law of works which could affect salvation. Law and Grace are contradictory to one another. Then the promise would be non-existent to all future believers and only those who are circumcised would have a chance to get to Heaven to the exclusion of the vast majority of the peoples of the Earth. One can be saved while in circumcision but if one is not circumcised, and circumcision is a requirement of the law for salvation, then the uncircumcised person has no chance of salvation.

#### **Rom 4:15 (KJV)**

Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

The law actually brings out the wrath of God. The law was given that it might intensify the reality that man is a very sinful person. It brings out the actuality of the sinfulness of man. If there was no law given, then man would have no transgression since there would be no law. It is like the traffic laws, if there were no posted speed limits, then a person doing 25 mph or 100 mph would both be legal and could not face charges for speeding or driving too slow. The law of God cannot justify sinners unto salvation, instead it shows that we need a Savior to bring us salvation, since the law only reveals us going from sin to sin. The breaking of the law of God represents eternal death. Basically, if the law did not come, then man would not know how sinful they are and in such a pitiful condition before a holy God.

#### **Rom 4:16 (KJV)**

Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,

Paul now sums up what was said previously, that since the law works wrath and not salvation, therefore salvation comes by grace. That grace will be given to all of Abraham's spiritual seed which is the body of believers. That promise will not only be effective for those Elect who are of the house of national Israel but to all believers worldwide, no matter what their nationality is or their prior religion. It is grace that makes the promise sure. The word "sure" carries with it the meaning of "constant, firm, or secure." The law could never accomplish in a person's life what grace has. Paul includes the statement that Abraham is the father of us all which includes those of national Israel as the physical descendants but Paul continues to teach that the physical descendants, if they rely on their circumcision and their relationship to Abraham through circumcision, they will never attain to salvation. Abraham is the spiritual father to every true believer down through the ages and in whatever country they become saved.

#### **Rom 4:17 (KJV)**

(As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were.

Paul once again refers to Scripture concerning the Abrahamic Covenant (Gen 17:5 KJV) Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. This verse leads into the fact that God had already told Abraham that He has "made him" a father of many nations. At that point, Abraham was



100 years old and still had no son to carry on the line. Abraham's body was well past seed production but we are told that God quickens, or makes alive. God had rejuvenated Abraham's and Sarah's body for the purpose of bringing forth the son who would carry on the messianic line. A great promise that God calls those things which are not as though they are. Before Abraham had the child, God already told him he would be the father of many nations, which means God had already declared, even though Isaac was not born yet, that Abraham would have a son, even in his old age. We read many promises like that in Scripture. The New Heavens and the New Earth are not here yet, but God already declared that they will be. Those things that God has promised and declared which are not here yet, will be here in His timing. It also teaches us that God is a miracle working God and is not hindered by physical circumstances.

#### Romans 4:18-25

##### **Rom 4:18 (KJV)**

Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

Abraham had believed God, even though, as a human being, having hope in being able to sire a child, his body was past that stage, yet his belief in God made him hope, against human hope, that God would bring to pass the promise of a child from his loins to be the heir of the covenant of promise. His faith had totally rested upon God which resulted in Abraham believing the promises of God. We can take a lesson from this that when human hope seems hopeless, hope in God is never hopeless.

##### **Rom 4:19 (KJV)**

And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sarah's womb:

Abraham's faith was not weak, even though he had considered his own body as dead to procreation. Sarah was also well past child bearing age but the sight of these things did not dim the eyes of true faith. Here we have a picture of the resurrection of Christ. Christ was dead but was brought back to life. Here the bodies of Sarah and Abraham were both dead in the area of child bearing, yet out of death came life. Isaac was given life by the same power that raised Christ from the dead.

##### **Rom 4:20 (KJV)**

He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;

The word "staggered" in the above verse carries with it the meaning of "doubt, hesitate or waver." Abraham's faith in God was very strong and unbelief never entered into the equation. Abraham's belief had given glory to God. Whenever we, as true Christians, believe the promises of God without wavering, we too, will give glory to God. The reason that we can have such strong faith is because of the salvation which God has given us and the indwelling of the Holy Spirit who leads us into all truth.

#### **Rom 4:21 (KJV)**

And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

This is probably the best definition of faith in the entire Bible. The words “fully persuaded” carry with it the meaning of “full assurance or fully convinced.” Abraham was fully convinced that what God had personally promised him, would come to pass. The word “perform” carries with it the meaning of “to do.” In other words, when God promises something, He is able to do it and will do it in His timing. We must realize that all God’s promises are true and sure. What we must accept, is His timing in all events. We must realize that God’s timetable is not our timetable. There was about 25 years between the promise of a son and the actual birth of Isaac. We must always trust the promises of God but we must also factor in that His timing will be or may be different than ours. Once we do that, we will not waver in our faith.

#### **Rom 4:22 (KJV)**

And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.

Abraham’s unfaltering faith in God’s promises was imputed to him for righteousness. Abraham’s base of belief was his justification by God and therefore righteousness is imputed to a person when they believe God’s promises but that imputation is for the Elect only. Believing God without being saved is not true faith. Many times unbelievers pray that God will do something in their life or in the life of a family member. If their petition comes to pass, it is only because it was the will of God in that situation. (Isa 59:2 KJV) But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

#### **Rom 4:23 (KJV)**

Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him;

Now Paul brings the episode of Abraham to the people he is speaking to. We must realize that the Bible is a book for all generations. It is a shame that many Christians believe that many Scriptures only deal with the times when they were penned. The imputation of righteousness and justification is given to all true believers in Christ. We must never view the believers in the Bible as being spiritual giants in comparison to us. The effectual justification and redemption of every believer is the same, no matter what year they become saved.

#### **Rom 4:24 (KJV)**

But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead;

Continuing the thought from verse 23 we read that every true believer shares the same benefits of salvation that Abraham had. (1 Cor 10:11 KJV) Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples; and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. Let us look at the verse from 1 Corinthians. We see that the things that happened to Israel in the past was also an example to keep us on the straight and narrow. Now let us approach the principle in that verse from a different perspective. The imputation of righteousness and justification which was given to Abraham, will also be given to every true believer. Although Abraham did not see the Lord Jesus in person until he went to glory, nevertheless, it was through Christ that he became saved. (John 8:56 KJV) Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad. So we can safely conclude

that the good as well as the bad from God's dealings with the Old Testament Saints are both examples for us.

### **Rom 4:25 (KJV)**

Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

The Lord Jesus was crucified for the sins of His people. (Mat 1:21 KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. The crucifixion of Jesus was not done for the sins of the whole world but for the sins of the Elect in the whole world. Christ's crucifixion was accepted by God the Father as payment for the sins of His Elect and when He was raised from the dead, He was raised for our justification. The true Christian was declared righteous and not guilty by reason of the resurrection of Christ. The resurrection was the final confirmation of our removal of sins and our justification. Christ successfully removed the sins from the soul of every one of His children. As He was raised to life, we too shall be raised to life. First, we are raised to spiritual life by means of being born again. (Rev 20:6 KJV) Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. The first resurrection being the resurrection of our soul from death to newness of life. (Rom 6:4 KJV) Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. Secondly, our physical bodies will be resurrected at the last day, in the same fashion that Christ's body was raised from the dead. (John 5:28-29 KJV) Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, {29} And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

## Romans 5:1-7

### **Rom 5:1 (KJV)**

Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Paul sums up the preceding chapter by stating that Faith, which is the Free Grace of God, allows us to have peace with God. Before a person is saved, they are at enmity with God. (Gen 3:15 KJV) And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. The unsaved person is one who is hated by God because He calls them workers of iniquity. (Psa 5:5 KJV) The foolish shall not stand in thy sight: thou hatest all workers of iniquity. The workers of iniquity are every unsaved person in the world. There is no such concept in Scripture that God loves the sinner and hates the sin. God loves only His redeemed children. The rest are enemies of God because of their unregenerate life. It is only through the Lord Jesus Christ does anyone have a standing with God. Paul sums up the previous chapter that the law can never bring us to salvation, instead it shows us only that we are in need of salvation through a Savior. When a person becomes saved, the war with God is over and they are now adopted into the kingdom of God. (Eph 1:5 KJV) Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, Those who reject the Lord Jesus Christ are rejecting the only way that God has given for a person to obtain salvation, there is no other.

### **Rom 5:2 (KJV)**

By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

The Lord Jesus Christ is the only way that we have access to God. The word “access” carries with it the meaning of “bringing in.” Only through Christ can one be reconciled unto God the Father. Since we are in Christ, we stand which carries with it the meaning “being firm or established.” Christ establishes our position with God the Father and keeps us firm in His hand, which also means we will never be lost. The fact that the believer is established in Christ, means that we glory in the hope of the resurrection of our bodies unto eternal life in our new resurrected bodies. (Titus 2:13 KJV) Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; No matter what our physical predicament is on earth, as a child of God, I can rejoice knowing that the troubles I suffer are only for a short season in comparison to eternity with the Lord. (2 Cor 4:17 KJV) For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;

### **Rom 5:3 (KJV)**

And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience;

Not only do we glory in the soon return of the Lord Jesus Christ but the fact that we face many trials and tribulations here on earth, we may glory in them since we may face every obstacle on earth with the power of God dwelling in us. The majority of people in the world, when faced with a dilemma, will tend to curse God for their situation. The believer may tend to murmur about their circumstances not accepting that tribulation in their life is God's perfect plan for their life. In the life of a Christian, who truly trusts Christ all the way, will triumph over any tribulation that comes into their life. Instead of murmuring against God they accept the situation that God has placed them in which results in a humble spirit and builds patience into their life. The word “patience” carries with it the meaning of “endurance.” Endurance of tribulation creates a powerful believer.

### **Rom 5:4 (KJV)**

And patience, experience; and experience, hope:

The endurance which build up in the believer's life leads to experience. The word “experience” carries with it the meaning of “proof” or “approved integrity.” The fact that a believer will endure the trials in confidence that God is in control shows that they possess true salvation because the evidence of their faith is trust in God for their situation and the proof of that faith is their trust. Since they have been approved by the fact of their trust in God for their situation, they now possess hope in God for the future of their situation, knowing that at some appointed time in their life, their situation will end, either by God's intervention on earth or by their home going. Those who truly trust the Lord will be satisfied with either.

### **Rom 5:5 (KJV)**

And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

The world may laugh at us by saying that we hope in a myth, but they are on the outside and their opinions do not count when it comes to the things of the Lord. The believer will

never suffer shame by trusting wholly in the Lord for they will see the culmination of their hope. The love of God has been “shed abroad” which carries the meaning of “being poured out.” Our hearts are indwelt by the Holy Spirit and because He indwells us, He indwells us with hope. This is why we will never be ashamed, even though the world may laugh or misunderstand, our responsibility to God is not based on how the world sees us. The world lives by sight, but we live by faith, until the time when the faith shall become sight. Those who desire to live by the law will never experience the indwelling of the Holy Spirit because He is only given to those who are in Christ. He is the seal of our salvation. (Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

### **Rom 5:6 (KJV)**

For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

Now Paul addresses the believers because he uses the word “we.” There was a time that every believer was without strength or helpless would be a good understanding also. That time would be before we became saved. We were helpless to do anything to bring about our own salvation and that means, without God electing us to salvation, we would have died in our sins and went to Hell. However, in the perfect timing of God, Christ came to earth and died for the ungodly, which describes the believers before salvation. (Gal 4:4 KJV) But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,

### **Rom 5:7 (KJV)**

For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.

Paul now makes a comparison between the mindset of the world and the mindset of Christ. A righteous man is one who is just or good and maybe for this type of man someone would be willing to lay down their life for them. Paul then mentions that perhaps for a good man which is one who is kind or generous might a person die for. Throughout history there have been some that others have been willing to sacrifice their lives for but the great question is who would be willing to die for their enemy who hates them with a passion?

## **Romans 5:8-14**

### **Rom 5:8 (KJV)**

But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

If one wishes to interpret the Bible properly, it is imperative that one looks at each statement carefully. In this passage we are told that while “we,” which is the body of believers, were still living in sin, Christ died for us. Notice the Bible uses the word “us” and not “everybody.” This is because Christ did not die for the sins of the entire world. He died for the sins of His Elect and that is why Paul uses the term “us.” It was for “us” that Christ died. He did not make an atonement for the entire world but He made atonement for His Elect in the world. (1 John 2:2 KJV) And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only,

but also for the sins of the whole world. 1 John 2:2 is very misunderstood as many think that Christ died for everyone in the world. If that was the case, then everyone in the world would be saved. The word “commendeth” in Romans 5:8 carries with it the meaning of “demonstrate.” God demonstrated His love toward His Elect by letting His only begotten Son pay the eternal price for their sins.

### **Rom 5:9 (KJV)**

Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

Here we read that not only did Christ restore what was lost in Adam for His Elect, but now we have a more intimate relationship with God the Father than Adam did, simply because we are now tied spiritually to the Triune God. Adam walked with God in the flesh but because of Christ that relationship has been greatly improved. We read in this verse that we are “justified by His blood” which means because of the sacrifice of Christ, we have been declared not guilty of all the sins we have committed in the past, committing today, and will commit in the future. Justification is not a process but is a one time act of God upon the moment of a believer’s salvation. It is a shame that some view justification as a process and even some theologians add the belief that works must accompany that justification. This is nothing more than Roman Catholic theology being imposed upon the body of believers. Continuing on in this verse, we read that because of that justification, we are saved from the wrath of God, which is eternal Hell, through the Lord Jesus Christ. It is important to know that salvation from Hell can only come through Christ as we read in this verse. There is no such thing as being able to be saved from hell by doing an end run around the cross. False religions attempt to do that but they must come to God on God’s terms and not their own. Christ is the only way to avoid the penalty of Hell. (John 14:6 KJV) Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

### **Rom 5:10 (KJV)**

For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

Once again we notice the words used here. The word “we” is used three times as “we” the body of believers are the ones who were once enemies of God but the sacrifice of Christ has reconciled us unto God. The Greek word for “we were reconciled” is in the passive voice which means that we did nothing to be reconciled unto God, it was all the work of Christ. This is why those who are attempting to add works to justification are really suborning heresy by trying to add works to something that has been fully provided for by Christ. When Christ first appeared on the scene to die for His Elect, He was clothed in the same type of body which we are in and that is weak, human flesh. Now compare that body of human flesh which He had 2,000 years ago versus the glorified, deity He now possesses. His eternal life coupled with all the powers of Heaven guards and upholds His redeemed until He brings us to glory individually and corporately on the last day. The phrase “being reconciled” in the Greek is in the passive voice and can be read “having been reconciled.” This means we cannot be anymore reconciled no matter what we do. The sacrifice of Christ for His Elect was complete in reconciling us to God. To attempt to add anything to it would adulterate it.

### **Rom 5:11 (KJV)**

And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

Once again it is important to note who received the atonement. It was “we” that received

the atonement, the body of believers. It was the atonement that reconciled us unto God, so it was not given to the whole world, only to the Elect of God. The word "joy" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "boasting or glorying" which is a characteristic of the Apostle Paul. (Gal 6:14 KJV) But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. Paul gloried or boasted in the cross of Christ. The same word used for "joy" in Romans 5:11 is the word for "glory" in Galatians 6:14. Every true believer should boast only in the cross of Christ since it was through His sacrifice that we were totally reconciled unto God, as the verse states that we "received the atonement."

### **Rom 5:12 (KJV)**

Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:

(1 Ki 8:46 KJV) If they sin against thee, (for there is no man that sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near; Here we read that through the sin of the disobedience of Adam, sin had gained an entrance into this world which resulted in not only the physical death of a person but if that person was not the Elect of God, they would also suffer eternal death in Hell, which is the real penalty for sin. Physical death was not the penalty for sin, in fact, if you assess it, it is a merciful thing that God has done. Can you imagine living an eternal life in the flesh with sickness, disease, deformity, or other fleshly maladies? This sin of Adam caused physical death to come upon every human being in the human race because every human on earth has sinned which we read in 1 Kings 8:46. There is no one who has experienced a sinless life on this earth, except the Lord Jesus when He was here. All sin is rebellion against God and must be punished.

### **Rom 5:13 (KJV)**

(For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

This verse points us to the Law which God gave to Moses but here God is telling us that sin and its punishable effects were in the world. Even though there was nothing written down, we know that sin existed because Cain murdered Abel and Cain was guilty of that sin of murder. At the time of Cain, God was giving verbal instruction as to what was right and wrong until the time of Moses when the Law of God was written down so all would now be responsible to it and there would be no guessing as to what was right or wrong. God says that if there were no law, then there could be no transgression of it and no penalty, but there was never a time on earth when there was no law of some kind governing the people at a certain time.

### **Rom 5:14 (KJV)**

Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.

Even though the Mosaic Law did not come into being until the time of Moses, the effects of sin, one of which was physical death, was still present. When we look at the descending ages of the people we see that life spans became shorter and shorter until God finally declared that a person can expect to life to be 70 years old and if by reason of strength, 80. (Psa 90:10 KJV) The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. God is also stating here that sin does not necessarily mean that we sin in the way Adam sinned. Any transgression of the law of God in any form is equal to the sin of Adam and its penalty. Then at the end of this verse God states that Adam was the figure of Him that was to come. This allusion is to the Lord Jesus Christ who would be called the

second Adam. The second Adam would be the head of the church, the redeemed of God who He redeemed with His own blood. (Heb 1:3 KJV) Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

#### Romans 5:15-21

##### **Rom 5:15 (KJV)**

But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.

Now Paul contrasts the offence and the free gift of Grace. He states that it is through the offence of the first Adam, the entire human race was plunged into sin which resulted in not only physical death but spiritual death to those who are not Elect. But the gift of Free Grace came through the Lord Jesus Christ and as a result, those who are the chosen of God will receive the free justification and salvation. The word "abounded" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "to be superior" or "excel in." This means that the Free Grace which Christ gives His Elect is abounding much more than the offense which plunged the entire human race into sin and death.

##### **Rom 5:16 (KJV)**

And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.

Paul continues the contrast between the offence and the gift of Grace. The human race was plunged into sin which was the judgment of God upon the human race because of Adam's sin. That judgment eventually led and will lead to the eternal condemnation of all the unsaved. Contrasting the judgment of the human race is the fact that the free gift of Grace will justify all the Elect of God and it will be as if they never sinned since their souls will be made ready for Heaven at the moment of salvation since justification is a one time event.

##### **Rom 5:17 (KJV)**

For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.)

Death did not only reign from Adam to Moses, it reigns until the last day when God will send forth His angels to bring home His Elect. The contrast is that death reigns over the entire population of the world but life reigns in the lives of the Elect of God, even though the Elect of God face physical death, they do not face eternal death, which is the ultimate penalty for the sin of Adam. The Elect of God, upon physical death are ushered into the physical presence of the Lord eternally. (2 Cor 5:8 KJV) We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord. Death, hell, sin and sickness will never again threaten the believer.

##### **Rom 5:18 (KJV)**

Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.



Here is one of those verses which must be carefully looked at. The sin of Adam brought the entire human race under the condemnation of God. (John 3:18 KJV) He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. Contrasting the consequences of the sin of Adam as permeating the entire human race, the free gift of Grace which brings full justification to the believer, is only permeating the body of Christ. The entire population of the world does not receive this Grace but only those whom God has chosen from the foundation of the world. (Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. The free Grace of God brings the believer from the point of death to life eternal. (1 John 5:12 KJV) He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.

### **Rom 5:19 (KJV)**

For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

So by the consequential actions of the first Adam, the entire human race was plunged into sin and death but by the obedience of Christ who went to the cross to pay for the sins of His Elect, many have been made and many shall be made righteous, in other words, they have become saved. (Mat 25:46 KJV) And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

### **Rom 5:20 (KJV)**

Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:

When the written law of Moses came on the scene, the offence of Adam was heightened because the law now showed people that they were sinners. One needs to just look at the Ten Commandments and you will see that it is literally impossible to keep them. The law showed us that we were vile sinners and it showed us how the one sin of Adam, which was disobedience, has now mushroomed into many different types of sin, all with a condemnatory nature. However, Paul contrasts sin and Grace, he shows us that even though the sins of men are heinous, the Grace of God abounds. The word "abound" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "super abounding, overflowing, or running over." The Grace of God is so potent that it can quash and remove the sins of those whom God plans to save. Sin can never excel above the grace of God. (1 John 3:8 KJV) He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. The works of the devil is sin and the sacrifice of Christ has destroyed sin.

### **Rom 5:21 (KJV)**

That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

Paul now completes his contrast between sin and Grace. Sin can only reign up to a point. Sin cannot reign beyond the grave in the believer's life. As a matter of fact, sin does not reign beyond the grave in the life of an unbeliever. When an unbeliever is in hell, sin is not reigning but the penalty for those sins are being paid. Sin is committed only on this side of the grave but on the other side, is the condemnation for those sins, which is eternal. This verse contrasts eternal damnation with the fact that Grace will reign in the life of the true

believer for eternity but that Grace comes only through the Lord Jesus Christ and never by any acts or works of self-righteousness or rituals.

#### Romans 6:1-8

##### **Rom 6:1 (KJV)**

What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?

Based upon what Paul has been teaching in the prior chapter, he now states the big question. Should we continue to sin so that we can show Grace as abounding greater than sin? The word "continue" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "continuing or persisting." The word "abound" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "exceeding or having more than enough." In other words, do we exhibit the Grace of God in our lives through the commission of sin? Of course, that is not how the Grace of God is manifest in the life of the believer. The Grace of God is manifest in the life of a believer by the avoidance of sin and the living of a holy life which is commensurate with the true Christian walk. We must never believe that the commission of sin will ever be a testimony to the abounding Grace of God.

##### **Rom 6:2 (KJV)**

God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

The Grace of God does not propel us to commit sin, rather it makes us dead to sin. As a Christian, I should have no desire to engage in the things that God saved me from. If He saved me from being a drunk, then to continue drinking does not show the Grace of God in my life instead it shows that the Grace of God is absent in my life and I am still in my sin, subject to eternal damnation. (Gal 6:14 KJV) But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. Notice the principle of dying to sin is given in plain detail in this verse. Paul is crucified to the world and the world is crucified unto him. He is telling us that he is dead to the things of the world and the pull of the world, which draws billions to sin, no longer has the magnetic effect it once had simply because he is dead to the world and he sees the world as dead to the Christian because the world system holds only temptation and sin for the believer.

##### **Rom 6:3 (KJV)**

Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

Now this is not speaking of water baptism but the fact that we are baptized into Christ through the spiritual rebirth. That baptism into Christ affects us by giving us a death to the things of the world. We read that we were baptized into His death. When Christ went to the cross, He died for the sins of His Elect but He also showed us that He died to the things of the world. This thought is carried from verse 2 concerning the death of the believer to the things which oppose true Christianity. The baptizing that we receive is a uniting of the believer into Christ and into the death of the magnetism and performance of sin.

### **Rom 6:4 (KJV)**

Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

When the believer was baptized into the death of the Lord Jesus Christ, we were also buried with Him. The word “buried” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “being buried together” or “be buried with someone.” The believer has not only died to sin but with that death came the burial of all the sins they committed. As a dead body is removed and buried out of the sight of living people, so the transgressions of the believer are also removed and buried. (Psa 103:12 KJV) As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. Our sins were removed as far as the east is from the west and that is why we were buried with Christ. He took all of our sins on Himself and when He arose from the dead on that Sunday morning, since we were buried with Him, we too also rose on that resurrection Sunday. We did not rise to live in sin again but we arose to live in newness of life. This means we do not revert to the old life from which we were killed, buried, and resurrected from. Living a life of sin does not bring any glory to the Father but living the Christian walk in holiness brings glory to God because it shows the world His salvation is true.

### **Rom 6:5 (KJV)**

For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

The word “planted” in this verse carries with it the meaning of “being united.” As we saw in verse 4, we were buried together with Christ and this verse emphasizes the fact that we also are a copy of His death, which means that we are dead to the world of sin which caused the Lord Jesus Christ to go to the cross to pay for the sins of His Elect. The death of the Lord Jesus is copied in the life of every believer as that believer becomes dead to the things of the world. Not only is the death of Christ copied in every believer but when we receive our resurrected souls at the point of salvation, we receive a copy of the Lord's resurrection which will ultimately be seen on the last day. We die to sin and we are buried but we are resurrected to that newness of life which is dead to sin.

### **Rom 6:6 (KJV)**

Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

Paul now states that since we know that our body of sin was crucified and buried with the Lord Jesus Christ, we no longer serve sin the way we did before we became saved. The word “destroyed” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “abolish or cease” and even carries a meaning of “nullify.” Sin and its power are nullified in the life of the believer. When we were unsaved we served sin because we were under the power of Satan and serving sin was a natural part of our life. When we became a Christian, we were made dead to sin and therefore sin was no longer our master.

### **Rom 6:7 (KJV)**

For he that is dead is freed from sin.

Paul now gives a short summation of the past few verses. Those who are dead to sin are freed from the power of sin. Sin no longer has the same authority as it once did in our old life. A physically dead servant can no longer serve his master and those who are dead to sin, through Christ, no longer serve the master of sin, but we serve Christ. (Col 3:24 KJV) Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

### **Rom 6:8 (KJV)**

Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

When the Lord Jesus Christ rose from the dead, that ended the reign which death had over the body of Christ. As Christ was physically raised from the dead, so will all the true believers be raised who died or will die before the return of the Lord on the last day. We also see this verse as saying that since we are dead to the world system and Satan's authority, we now live in spiritual concert with the Lord Jesus Christ because of salvation.

### Romans 6:9-16

### **Rom 6:9 (KJV)**

Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.

Now a great resurrection fact, Christ was raised from the dead and that resurrection meant that death has no more right to claim Christ and has no more dominion over Him. When the true believers are resurrected on the last day, death will have no more dominion over them. As we are today, physical death can occur anytime in the life of a believer but when the last day comes, death will be abolished. (1 Cor 15:26 KJV) The last enemy *that* shall be destroyed *is* death. We can also look at this verse that once the believer receives their resurrected soul at the time of salvation, their soul will never face death again because that soul within this sinful body has been raised to newness of life which is eternal.

### **Rom 6:10 (KJV)**

For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

(Heb 9:26 KJV) For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. In this verse in Hebrews we see confirmation of a great truth that Christ died only once for the salvation of His people. This is in contrast to the Roman Catholic Mass where they perpetuate the death of Christ. Christ died once and after His death when He was raised from the dead, He now lives unto God. When Christ went to the cross, it was the first time in all eternity that He was separated from His Father but now He lives in unbroken fellowship with the Father for all eternity. Death no longer has any hold on the Lord Jesus Christ. (Rom 8:34 KJV) Who *is* he that condemneth? *It is* Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. Christ now sits at the right hand of God interceding for His Elect.

### **Rom 6:11 (KJV)**

Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

The believer is now dead unto sin in that we do not need to succumb to or obey the lusts of temptation when it does come. With the indwelling of the Holy Spirit in the life of the believer, we now have the power, through Jesus Christ, to shun sin. This does not mean that true believers will not sin but there is a vast difference in attitude between dressing up to sin and sinning by temporary weakness. No longer do we have to obey the dictates of sin. The word “dead” in this verse is “nekros” which carries the meaning of “lifeless” which is what the believer is toward sin. Sin no longer is the lifestyle of the believer but righteousness is.

### **Rom 6:12 (KJV)**

Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

From the thread of thoughts which have been given to us in the previous verses, we are now told that sin should not have any reign in the mortal body. Sin cannot touch the redeemed soul of the believer but sin does rest in the physical body which has not been redeemed. The word “reign” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “having authority or ruling.” The word used here is a cognate of the word “basiliea” which means “kingdom” in the Greek. The warning here is that we are not to give any place to sin because it has the ability to set up a kingdom in our lives and rule. We normally would call reigning of sin in the body as “addiction.” A Christian who still smokes has allowed the sin of smoking to rule or have authority over them. The problem with having sin reigning in your mortal body is that you are attempting to serve two masters. (Mat 6:24 KJV) No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. The Lord Jesus warned us that it is impossible to serve two masters, either you will love your sin and hate the Lord, or you will love the Lord and hate your sin, you cannot have it both ways. Whenever sin has authority in the life of any believer, we will almost automatically obey the lusts which it pumps up to the point of being impossible to shun it.

### **Rom 6:13 (KJV)**

Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

Here Paul places the practical aspect of this situation on the believer. The word “yield” in both places carry with it the meaning of “present, offer or provide.” In the first part of this verse we are told that we should yield or present our members as instruments of unrighteousness. The word “member” directly points to our body parts such as limbs or any body part. Normally one of the first body parts which we yield to sin is our eyes as we look at things we should not look at and that begins to enflame the lusts in our flesh. The word “instruments” carries with it the meaning of “tool or weapon.” We must never allow our bodies to become tools of unrighteousness. In the second part of this verse, we are told to yield ourselves unto God as one who is alive from the dead. This is the essence of the Christian life. (Eph 2:1 KJV) And you *hath he quickened*, who were dead in trespasses and sins: When we were unbelievers, we were dead in sins but now since we have become saved we have received our resurrected souls and we now have been raised from the dead in our soul essence. We saw in verse 4 that we should now walk in newness of life

since we have experienced the first resurrection.

(Rev 20:5-6 KJV) But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This *is* the first resurrection. {6} Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Here we read that blessed and holy are they which hath part in the first resurrection. Notice that in describing the first resurrection, it states that the second death has no power over that first resurrection. What does the second death have no power over? The answer is those who have become saved. You obtained the first resurrection when you became saved. Your soul was resurrected from the dead and now it is made alive unto God, as we read in Romans 6:13 above.

### **Rom 6:14 (KJV)**

For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

The words “dominion over you” carries with it the meaning of “lording over or ruling over.” Those who are under the law are still unsaved and therefore sin still rules them. Now when a person becomes saved, the sin nature is still present but because of the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, the spirit rules over the flesh unless the believer allows sin to rule over them. We are told that we are not under the law but we are under grace, which means that we have been raised to newness of life through salvation and this is why sin need not rule over us because of the grace of God. Grace gives us the strength to reject sinning but the law gives no such strength.

### **Rom 6:15 (KJV)**

What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

Since we are under the grace of God, should we continue to yield to sin just because we are no longer under the law of God? Christians must realize that just because we are under grace does not mean that consequences for sin have been abolished. The Christian who fornicates faces diseases. The Christian who drinks alcohol faces cirrhosis of the liver. The Christian who smokes faces lung cancer. We must never believe that we can sin with impunity. Christians who continue to sin also live a very miserable existence because they know that they should be living a pure life and since they are not, are torn between Heaven and Hell. Every time they obey their sinful passions, they are serving Satan and that brings a spiritual depression into their life. This is why so many seem to be lethargic in the Christian walk. I can almost guarantee that every Christian who is not involved in Christian work, will have exchanged the Christian walk for some type of self-serving sin. You can only serve one master and not two, and you can basically tell which one any Christian is serving.

### **Rom 6:16 (KJV)**

Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

Here is the great dichotomy, either a person is a servant of sin which is unto death and in the case of the unbeliever, it is unto eternal death or a person is a servant of obedience

unto righteousness. If a person is tied to the world system, they will be slaves of that system which means they will buy into everything it has to offer and that system leads only to death. If a person, and only the saved will, turn away from the world system, that will lead to obedience unto a righteous life. This verse is definitely addressing only the saved since we all came out of the world system and know what that system can lead to. God is reminding us that if we did not become saved, then we would suffer the same fate of eternal death as those who die under the world system.

## Romans 6:17-23

### **Rom 6:17 (KJV)**

But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

Here the apostle Paul is telling us that the true believers were once servants of sin. That word “servant” is better understood as “slave.” Notice that it says we “were” and that we are not now. (1 Cor 6:10-11 KJV) Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. {11} And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. Notice in these two verses from 1 Corinthians, Paul states the same things that the true believers “were” vile sinners but through God’s salvation, they are now sanctified and justified in the Lord Jesus Christ. The fact that we are now saved, means that we now have the strength to obey the form of doctrine which was delivered unto the brethren. Those who are unsaved do not have the ability to obey the doctrines of Scripture simply because their hearts have not been regenerated. Only those who have been saved have the ability to obey the true gospel.

### **Rom 6:18 (KJV)**

Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

Since we were once slaves to sin, when God saved us, He made us free from sin and its bondage. When God freed us from the bondage of sin, we were not made free agents to do as we wish. God made us servants of righteousness through the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. There was a time in our life that we served sin but now through regeneration, we now serve righteousness. What must be kept in mind here is that because our souls have been freed from sin, we still have a body which lusts after sin and therefore the true believer still struggles with sin in their life. However, the situation has changed, when we were unsaved, we served sin without any hesitation but now we have the ability to resist sin and to live righteously before God.

### **Rom 6:19 (KJV)**

I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

Paul explains that he was using the analogy of being a slave to sin because he knows that the infirmity (weakness) of the flesh can still get us into trouble. Paul states that as unbelievers we lived from sin to sin, that is because we were servants of sin. When a person is a servant or slave, their entire life is dedicated to the one they are serving. When a person is an unbeliever, their entire life is spent in servitude to sin. Now that we have become saved, we are, in like manner of slavery to sin, we are to become slaves to righteousness and to serve righteousness as strongly as we served sin. We used our

body and our earthly goods to serve sin so now we use those very same things to serve righteousness.

**Rom 6:20 (KJV)**

For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

This short verse gives a powerful principle. That principle is that everybody is a slave to something. Before we became saved, we were slaves of sin and were free from righteousness in our life. In other words, we had no problem in engaging in any sinful activities because our minds were still unregenerate and darkened in sin. Righteousness does not dwell in the unregenerate mind. Not only did we have no righteousness, we did not desire to have any since it would interfere with our sinful activities.

**Rom 6:21 (KJV)**

What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

When we look back at what we did before we became saved, what did those things really profit us? Did they bear any fruit that would be beneficial for the rest of our lives? Did they bear any fruit which would be beneficial in the lives of those we knew? When we look back through the eyes of salvation, we realize that the things which we did had no fruit except to send us to an eternal damnation. Our life of sin yielded no good things which could benefit us. Those things which we did, we hope they never come to light since they could be embarrassing to us.

**Rom 6:22 (KJV)**

But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

In contrast to living the unregenerate life with its fruits that ends up in eternal damnation, Paul now states that because God freed us from sin, and that we are serving Him, the fruit that we now produce will end in everlasting life and not everlasting damnation. There is the great difference between being the servant of sin and the servant of righteousness. God made us holy and with that our works are holy.

**Rom 6:23 (KJV)**

For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

As with everything evil in this world, there are consequences. Here God uses the word "wages" to state that a sinful life will receive compensation and that compensation is that the wages of living a sinful life is eternal death. He then contrasts that eternal death with the great gift of salvation which God gives to His Elect through the Lord Jesus Christ.

Romans 7:1-9

**Rom 7:1 (KJV)**

Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?

Here the apostle Paul is speaking to those Jews in Rome who were familiar with the law of



God. He tells them that the law has dominion or rules over a person as long as they are alive. Those who lived under the law of God were culpable to that law unless in some form the law was fulfilled and they were no longer liable to the law. The only way a person will not have to answer for their sins against the law is by becoming saved because in Christ, the law was fulfilled. If a person lives under the law, then that law will rule over them for life.

### **Rom 7:2 (KJV)**

For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.

Here is a principle which is illustrated through the marriage relationship. A woman is bound by the law to her husband but only as long as he is alive. If the husband dies, then she is freed from that binding. The woman is to live in obedience and subjection to her husband. This is akin to anyone who lives under the law, that they, like the wife, are to be obedient and subjected to the ordinances of the law. If the husband dies, then she is no longer required to be obedient to the law which bound her to her husband. She is now free. In like manner, we who were under the law, were subject and obedient to the law of God. Then when the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross, he died in fulfillment of all the righteous demands of the law, so when He died, we who became saved through Grace, were now loosed from the judicial demands of the law. The body of believers is also called the "bride of Christ." So when He died to the law, we also died with Him and no longer have to keep the tenets of the law for salvation. When Christ fulfilled the demands of the law, those in Christ also fulfilled it through Him and had the results imputed to us.

### **Rom 7:3 (KJV)**

So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.

So now the comparison of the law of marriage is that if a woman gets divorced from her husband and she marries another while he is still alive, then she is committing adultery. This verse is normally avoided by those who believe that marriage after divorce is permissible. Many churches are guilty of church sponsored adultery by remarrying those who have been divorced. However, if her husband has died, then she has been freed from the law of marriage and she is biblically qualified to marry again, plus she will not be committing adultery.

### **Rom 7:4 (KJV)**

Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

Our first marriage by reason of being born physically into this world is to the law of God. Every human being on earth who has not become saved will be accountable to the laws of God which they have transgressed. Now since Christ died to the law in fulfillment of God's righteous demands, we are now dead to the law of that law and now have been married a second time, to Christ. That second marriage carries with it an unending relationship for eternity since neither Christ nor His bride will ever die again. (John 11:26 KJV) And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believeest thou this? Now because we are in an eternal marriage with the Lord Jesus Christ, we now bring forth fruit unto the God.

### **Rom 7:5 (KJV)**

For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our

members to bring forth fruit unto death.

The word “motions” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “passions.” The passions which we obeyed while we were in the flesh and exacerbated by the written law had only one long term effect, and that was eternal death. The law did not create these passions in the unregenerate person but it aggravated them by bringing them to the light and showing the true dark nature of man. It also did one other thing showing us that we needed a Savior because we were unable to keep the law.

#### **Rom 7:6 (KJV)**

But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

Since we became saved through the Lord Jesus Christ, we have been delivered from keeping the tenets of the law for salvation. The law held us under bondage and there was no way for any of us to come out from underneath the law. While we were under the law we were spiritually dead to the things of God. No longer are we to serve in the manner of the old mannerisms of the law such as rituals and observances for all of them had their fulfillment in Christ which means they are all abrogated and are not for the true believer who has been delivered. We have been rescued from the letter of the law and raised to newness of life in the Holy Spirit where we now serve the Lord Christ, not out of the oldness of the law but in the newness of the Spirit.

#### **Rom 7:7 (KJV)**

What shall we say then? is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

Paul is now reminding us that because the law shows us how sinful we are does not mean that the law is sinful. The purpose of the written law of God, was to show us that we are very sinful people and unable to save ourselves from the judicial penalty of the law which is eternal damnation. Paul gives two examples stating that he could not know what lust and coveting were unless the law showed him that these things were sinful. We could use any example, I would not know that stealing is wrong unless the law showed me. It is like driving, we have set speed limits all over but if there were no speed limits, then there could be no transgressing of the law but if there is a posted speed limit of 25 mph and we go 40 mph, then we are violating the law, and if caught, will pay the appropriate penalty. With God's law, every infraction has been recorded and each one will be required of those who have not become saved.

#### **Rom 7:8 (KJV)**

But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead.

Since we have the written law of God, it shows us that we go from sin to sin. The word “concupiscence” carries with it the meaning of “lust.” This means that no matter what Paul was doing or thinking, it carried the same weight of condemnation under the law. Every action and thought was accountable to the law of God. As long as sin was in the world, the law of God was alive and active. Paul then goes on to contrast that without the law, if it never came into being, then sin would be dead. In other words, there would be no transgressions since there would be no written law but because the law is here, now sin is alive.

#### **Rom 7:9 (KJV)**

For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I

died.

This is a very difficult verse to interpret and I make no statement that what I write here is the absolute understanding of this verse. It seems that the Apostle Paul was speaking of the time when he was an unsaved Pharisee, for that group believed they were totally righteous and in good standing with the Lord. Even though he definitely had the law, they believed that they had kept the law and were above others. Their own arrogance deceived them into believing they were righteous. Then there is a point just before a person becomes saved that they are absolutely aware that they are reprobate sinners unable to save themselves through any ritual or ceremony. At this point, Paul states that he realized that he too was a sinner and being a Pharisee did not insulate him from the judgment of God. When the true commandment or his true calling came, then he realized his sinfulness and at that point he knew that he was a spiritually dead person. The law now became a living document concerning his sinfulness and the fact that he was a Pharisee made no difference. Paul develops this understanding in the next few verses.

### Romans 7:10-17

#### **Rom 7:10 (KJV)**

And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

The law of God would grant eternal life to anyone who would be able to obey it perfectly and Paul being a Pharisee thought that he would be able to keep the law perfectly. (Phil 3:5-6 KJV) Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee; {6} Concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless. In these verses from Philippians, Paul believed that he was righteous in the law, which means that he would have had to obey the law perfectly in every detail. Then when he became saved, he realized that the law did not provide eternal life, rather it was unto death since no one could keep the law perfectly, including himself. (1 Tim 1:15 KJV) This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief. Paul came to the conclusion that being a Pharisee did not exempt him from the righteous demands of God's law and realized that the law did not ordain anyone to life but it did ordain to eternal death because of its holy nature. Holiness and sin are in total opposition.

#### **Rom 7:11 (KJV)**

For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

Those who believe they can keep the law of God are really deceived by sin, which is exactly what the law of God shows us, that it is impossible to keep the law perfectly. Sin is intensified by the law not mollified. Sin deceives us into believing that we are not sinners and that deception is described by Paul as "slaying him." What he means by that is what he believed was his righteousness was really his condemnation unto eternal damnation, and therein lies the deception.

#### **Rom 7:12 (KJV)**

Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

The law reflects the lawgiver and that means that the law is holy, just, and good because it objectively sits in judgment of every human being on earth regardless of any religious, political, or social status. The law is holy writ therefore the words are holy coming from

Holy God Himself. The words are just because it properly judges the actions and motives of every human being who has ever lived on earth. The law is good because it drives us to the Savior because it teaches us that we are unable to keep it. The law is good in another aspect too, that if kept perfectly it will bring someone into eternal life.

### **Rom 7:13 (KJV)**

Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful.

The law, which is good, did not create death in Paul but it was sin that was working in him unto death. The law showed us the exceeding sinfulness of every human being on earth. The law showed us what sin was and how it permeates every person who has ever lived. When looking at the law of God, we do not blame it for the fact that humans are sinful. It is like blaming the law of the land against thievery when we get caught stealing. The law did not make us steal but sin which indwells us is what made us steal. The law just showed us that stealing was wrong and that there are penalties for disobeying the law. God's law shows us that there are penalties for breaking His law and that penalty is eternal damnation unless we become saved. One thing the law definitely shows us is that it is absolutely impossible for anyone to obey the Law of God perfectly all their life.

### **Rom 7:14 (KJV)**

For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

The law of God is spiritual and those who are truly saved understand that it is not the law which leads someone into sinning but it is the sin nature which lives in us that causes us to break God's law. Paul contrasts the fact that the law is spiritual and that he is carnal, sold out to sin. Here Paul begins a section on the struggle between the purity of the redeemed soul and the sinfulness of the unregenerate flesh which every believer still lives in until the Lord takes them home. Paul is speaking here as a redeemed man because only when a person becomes saved do they realize that there is a tremendous struggle between holiness and sin, and that struggle exists in every true believer.

### **(Rom 7:15 KJV)**

For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

In verse 15 we see Paul surfacing the spirit-flesh struggle. As long as we remain in these earthly tabernacles we will always have this struggle. We want to do good but yet we will do the very things we hate. It is a spiritual war to fight against the flesh. The flesh is always seeking to have its own way because the flesh has not been redeemed and is still in sin. Every true believer will continue this good-bad struggle until the day of their home going.

### **(Rom 7:16 KJV)**

If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.

The Bible is teaching us that we are unable to keep the law and the law of God has a good handle on human beings. We may have a desire to do good but because of sin, the working out of that desire may result in some sinful acts. In other words, God is correct when he says we cannot keep the law. When we sin we are agreeing with the fact that the law is good in that it brings to light our fleshly weakness and the sin which results.

### **(Rom 7:17 KJV)**

Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

A major principle unfolds for us in understanding the sin problem in the Christian's life. Paul states that when he sins it is no longer he that does it but sin that dwells in him. How could that be when he performs the sin, how could it not be him? The sin nature remains in the believer after salvation and the next verse tells us how.

## Romans 7:18-25

### **(Rom 7:18 KJV)**

For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.

Here is the culprit that causes the Christian to sin. THE FLESH! Paul says that he wills to do good but that he cannot because sin abides in his flesh. Paul makes sure he emphasizes the fact that no good thing is what dwells in his flesh not his spirit. Romans 6:12 says, "Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof." Do you see where the sin abides? It is in the flesh and not the spirit. There is a war waging between the mortal body and the immortal body which is our spirit essence. The real Paul, which is the redeemed Paul is not the one who is sinning because those that are born of God cannot sin. (1 John 3:9 KJV) Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In 1 John 3:9, we are told that those who are born of God cannot sin. The word "cannot" is a word of ability and not permission. The reason that those who are born of God cannot sin is because the soul has been redeemed and made perfect through the Lord Jesus Christ and the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. Therefore, the true believer in his spiritual essence cannot sin in his redeemed soul but because of the sinful flesh that we still abide in, we will sin, but those sins have already been paid for and removed through Calvary. (Col 2:13-14 KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

### **(Rom 7:19 KJV)**

For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

In this verse we see the struggle between spirit and flesh continue. It will never cease until we are freed from our earthly bodies. When we want to do good, we will do evil but the evil that we hate to do, we will do. When a Christian understands this principle that there is a sin struggle between the regenerated soul and the unregenerate flesh, there will be less spiritual depression when sin happens in the life of the believer because they will now understand what is happening and will be able to better prepare to prevent the flare up of sin in the flesh.

### **(Rom 7:20 KJV)**

Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

Paul reiterates that sin is the culprit and not "I." Since the sin nature is still remaining in the flesh, even after salvation, we will be able to understand the source of the sinful acts that we do. However, one must realize that because the sin nature is alive in the believer, does not give them permission to go and live a sinful life and then blame it on the sin nature. We must struggle against the sinful desires of the flesh to keep it under control. We are

still responsible to live a holy life before the Lord.

**(Rom 7:21 KJV)**

I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

Good is always hounded by evil. We saw this principle back in Genesis 4 with Cain. (Gen 4:7 KJV) If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him. God gave Cain this eye opening principle. Sin lies at the door and if we open that door we open that door to sin. Any time we want to do good, we must be on our guard because the sin nature can crop up at anytime and entangle us in sin.

**(Rom 7:22 KJV)**

For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:

Here is the verse that we need to look at as it ties together 1 John and Romans. The law of God after the inward man is a synonym for salvation, it is the regenerated spirit, in contrast to the outward man which is corrupted flesh. The reason Paul says that it is not "I" doing the sin is because he was given the same spirit that "cannot" sin as all believers are. The reason we have such a struggle between spirit and flesh is because we have a pure spirit given to us by God which is incapable of sinning and we have flesh that is corrupt and highly capable of sinning. As the war continues between a pure spirit and corrupt flesh we will always feel bad when we sin. This is how we grieve the Holy Spirit and sin should grieve us too. So to sum up this exegesis we may conclude that the passages in 1 John are teaching us that because we are born again of the Holy Spirit and since the Holy Spirit is eternal God, we, in our spirit essence cannot sin but since we live in the flesh that pure spirit is surrounded by corruptible flesh which continually seeks to sin. This why we always will have a spirit-flesh struggle.

**Rom 7:23 (KJV)**

But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

Paul saw and experienced the law that sin must be obeyed and the way that sin is obeyed is through the use of the members of the body. The law of practicing sin is warring against the law of the mind and that is the mind of Christ that every believer is given. (1 Cor 2:16 KJV) For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ. The mind of Christ in the believer is the result of salvation. So when we sin with our body it is waging war against the redeemed mind which we possess. Sometimes we get caught up in sin and it literally takes us captive as one who is a prisoner of war. Paul wants nothing more than to be freed from that law of sin which is still being obeyed by the unregenerate physical body. This should also be the same cry of the believers that we want to be free from the law of sin which is obeyed by our physical bodies.

**Rom 7:24 (KJV)**

O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?

In ancient Rome a punishment which was common was when a person killed somebody else, they would take the dead body of the murdered person and attach it to the murderer. Now after a while the rotting flesh of the corpse would begin to rot the flesh of the killer which would eventually kill him. Well this is the situation with sin, eventually it begins to eat away at us like a cancer in our body. The physical body which we possess is our body of death and that body actually hinders us from our full potential in serving the Lord. (Mat 26:41 KJV) Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the

flesh is weak. We must always be on guard because the law of sin has the ability to titillate this body of sin into sinning against God. Laws are made to be obeyed and that is how strong the law of sin is in our bodies.

### **Rom 7:25 (KJV)**

I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

Here is the great dividing line in the life of the believer. We serve with the regenerated mind, the law of God but the physical body we possess still serves the law of sin because it remains in its unregenerate state until death. So this is why Paul annunciates the fact that there are two camps in the body of the believer. There is the redeemed camp which is the regenerated soul and then there is the physical body which is the unregenerate part. It is the latter which gets us into trouble if we do not allow the spirit to rule over the flesh.

### Romans 8:1-10

### **Rom 8:1 (KJV)**

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

In the previous chapters, Paul was giving us the great division that exists in every believer and that is that our souls have been saved but our flesh has not and that makes for a war between flesh and spirit in every true believer. In this verse, the Bible is telling us that within true believer this war will always exist as long as we are clothed in flesh but because we have been truly saved through Christ, we are not under the condemnation of the law as those who are unregenerate. This verse is very comforting because many believers, when they sin, will wonder if they are truly saved. God places this verse here to give confidence to the true believer that even though they have the flesh and spirit struggle, they are covered by the blood of Christ and therefore are not coming under any judicial condemnation since Christ had paid for all the sins of the believer. There is no sin in the life of any believer which was not atoned for by the Lord Jesus Christ. Many people combat this truth by asking, "well what about future sins?" Well, when Christ went to the cross, all your sins were in the future plus if He only paid for part of your sins, then it was a partial atonement and not a full atonement which would never get anyone into Heaven. The key in this verse, is that those true believers are walking or living according to the Spirit and not the flesh. A true believer will not order their life according to the dictates of a worldly system and thus go back in sinful bondage. If they are truly saved, then the indwelling of the Holy Spirit will be evident in their changed lives. This is why the true believer never has to worry about loss of salvation as so many erroneously teach. Loss of salvation gives the impression that Christ only made a partial atonement in the life of the true believer which is nowhere taught in the Scriptures.

### **Rom 8:2 (KJV)**

For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

When we became saved, a new law became effective in our lives and that was the law of the Spirit. The law of the Spirit freed us from the law which leads only to death. The law of the Spirit in Christ brings life. When the law of the Spirit of life is present in the believer, this law fulfills and exceeds the demands of the law of Moses which brings only eternal death. The law itself was not sin but as Paul had so excellently brought to light, it exacerbated sin in the life of every human being but when a person became saved, they

were freed from the demands of that law since Christ was the one who fulfilled those demands on behalf of His Elect.

### **Rom 8:3 (KJV)**

For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:

First, the law of Moses was not able to help a person become truly saved since it only brought to light the fact that all human beings are sinful. If a person could keep every tenet of the law perfectly, then they could become saved but as this verse teaches us, the flesh is weak and corrupted because of sin as we saw in Romans 7, that the flesh is where the sinful nature resides and that is why the believer will always have the sin struggle, even many years after becoming truly saved. Secondly, since the law could not engender salvation, for the sake of His Elect, God sent the Lord Jesus Christ in the flesh to fulfill the law perfectly and impute that perfection into the souls of His Elect. Notice that it says that He was in the likeness of sinful flesh. This is because the Lord Jesus Christ was sinless, even in His flesh. When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross, then all the sins of His Elect were placed upon Him and He became sin for us as He met the righteous demands of God's Holy Law. (2 Cor 5:21 KJV) For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him. Christ being in the flesh, was sacrificed in the flesh, and condemned sin in the life of all His Elect in the flesh.

### **Rom 8:4 (KJV)**

That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

Here is a great spiritual principle. It is based on the doctrine of imputation. The fulfilled righteousness of the law by the Lord Jesus Christ is imputed to the Elect of God. This is done by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit which is the seal of our salvation. There is no way that any human being can fulfill the righteous demands of the law of God, so the results of the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ who fulfilled those demands are imputed to the believer and then we are walking in the Spirit and not in the flesh. Those who walk in the flesh are the unregenerate but those who have the Holy Spirit are walking in the Spirit.

### **Rom 8:5 (KJV)**

For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.

Here is another evidence of those who are saved. We see in today's world that many are concerned with the environment and other worldly issues. There are many in mainline churches who call themselves Christians but are concerned only with worldly things such as save the whales or world hunger. These are the people who mind the things of the flesh. Those who mind the things of the Spirit are those who are concerned about the things of the Lord such as evangelizing this world, discipling new believers, missions, etc. These things are the priorities of the true child of God. These are the spiritual things we concern ourselves with in contrast to the things tied to this world that the carnal or fleshly person concerns themselves with.

### **Rom 8:6 (KJV)**

For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

The carnal mind is the mind of the unbeliever which is totally tied to this world and does not have concern for the spiritual things of the Lord. This is why the carnal mind is a mind which leads to death because it is unregenerate. On the other hand, when a person



becomes saved and the Holy Spirit indwells the person, they are not only given a new resurrected soul, they are given a new mind which thinks upon the things of the Lord. (Heb 8:10 KJV) For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: The mind without Christ is a mind which does not have the laws of God in it.

### **Rom 8:7 (KJV)**

Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

The mind of the unregenerate is always at enmity with God. The word “enmity” carries with it the meaning of “hostility.” The unsaved mind is hostile towards God. This can be easily proven out, all you have to do is hand somebody a tract or speak with them about the Lord and they will rebuke you. This rebuke comes from the unregenerate mind which wants nothing to do with Christ. A person who is spiritually dead cares nothing about the spiritual life as all they concern themselves with are the things of the world. Unless God regenerates the person, their mind remains dead to the things of God. This is because the carnal mind and the spiritual life are at enmity with each other.

### **Rom 8:8 (KJV)**

So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

(Heb 11:6 KJV) But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him. Those who are unsaved are not given the gift of faith, therefore without faith it is impossible to please God. The unregenerate person lives their life in the flesh and sinful flesh is always at enmity with a Holy God. When a believer sins, they are momentarily walking in the flesh and at that moment they are not pleasing God, only when they repent of that sin and return to the spiritual life. Those who live their entire lives and die in the flesh will be judged for their sins at the last day since they have no Savior.

### **Rom 8:9 (KJV)**

But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

Here is another great difference for the comfort of the believer. Those who are truly saved, even though we reside in sinful flesh, are not in the flesh according to the biblical definition. We who are saved have the Spirit of God living in us and He quickens us or makes us alive unto God. So even while we are in the flesh, we still serve God through the Spirit while in the body of flesh. Now another major principle taught in this verse is the fact that if a person is not regenerated and does not have the Holy Spirit living in them, then they are still reprobate and in Satan's kingdom. This means that no matter how religious a person is, even an ordained clergyman, if they are unsaved and have not the Spirit of Christ dwelling in them, then they are still in their sins and are not a child of God. It should also be noted that when a person becomes truly saved, they receive the indwelling of the Holy Spirit at the moment of salvation and is not a separate or future event as some charismatic teachings may convey. (Eph 1:3 KJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: **We** have received all spiritual blessings in Christ and those spiritual blessings always begin with the receiving of the Holy Spirit at the moment of salvation.

### **Rom 8:10 (KJV)**

And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of

righteousness.

Paul now adds another major teaching that our physical bodies are dead because of the indwelling of sin. We may still be alive today but our physical bodies are walking dead bodies as eventually they will fail and die but if we are truly saved, we have eternal life in the Spirit which can never be affected by the decaying physical body. (Psa 90:10 KJV) The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. Notice this verse teaches very simply that life in our physical bodies may be 80 years and the physical body will fail, "cut off," and then we fly away. What a picturesque way of stating that we go to Heaven when our bodies fail the final time. This will be the real us and no longer will we be hindered by frail flesh.

#### Romans 8:11-20

##### **Rom 8:11 (KJV)**

But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

Here is a great promise to every true believer. God the Father, who raised the Lord Jesus Christ from the dead, will, on the last day, quicken or make alive our physical bodies, whether we have already physically died or we are still living in them on the last day. God is going to make the believer fit to live in Heaven, a place of total righteousness. As we are now, the physical body would not be able to survive the glory of God the Father and God the Son. This is why on the Mount of Transfiguration, Peter, James, and John had to be temporarily qualified to be able to see the Lord Jesus in His glory. If they were not qualified, then they would have been consumed as straw in molten lava. (Mat 17:1-2 KJV) And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, {2} And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light. How long could you look at the sun without protection before you went blind? It is the same principle as a human trying to look on the Glory of God. This is why when Moses wanted to see the Glory of God, God himself shielded the eyes of Moses. (Ex. 33:18-23)

##### **Rom 8:12 (KJV)**

Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

Based upon what Paul just said, we are not debtors to the flesh to live after or according to the flesh but we are debtors unto God who is the one that is going to quicken the mortal body into an eternal spiritual body. We owe nothing to the flesh but because of all the work that God has done in our body, it is Him that we are indebted to. (Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. Whenever we sin, we grieve the Holy Spirit who dwells in us and that is why we are never to think that we owe a debt to the flesh and to indulge ourselves in sinful activity.

##### **Rom 8:13 (KJV)**

For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Now Paul is exhorting the believers that if they live a life of flesh, then they can expect to die from that life. Now a true believer cannot lose their salvation but they are susceptible to the same physical penalties of living sinfully as unbelievers are. Let us take an example

from someone who works seven days and never rests. It does not matter if the person is a believer or not, they will suffer physical penalties for such a life. A person who smokes or drinks alcohol will suffer from the sicknesses associated with these worldly habits and it does not matter if a person is saved or not. (Rom 13:14 KJV) But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof. The true believer is to avoid the ways of the world by not re-igniting the passions of sin which were killed by the sacrifice of Christ. If we are dead to sin, we must keep them mortified or dead, for if we resurrect those sins of the old man. It could be our downfall right to the grave and with it goes our testimony.

#### **Rom 8:14 (KJV)**

For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

The Christian is led of the Holy Spirit as part of their normal Christian walk. I remember in 1990 I attended a "Deeper Life Seminar" at the Seminary where I worked and taught and Dr. Norman Wilson of the Wesleyan Hour was the main speaker. I will always remember his opening comments, "Instead of calling it a deeper life seminar, we should call it the 'Normal Life Seminar.'" He is absolutely correct. The Christian who is indwelt by the Holy Spirit will be led by the Spirit. The word "led" in the Greek is in the Passive Voice which means the Holy Spirit is doing the leading and not the Christian. The Christian is the recipient of the guidance of the Holy Spirit. This verse tells us that those who are led by the Spirit of God are the regenerated sons of God because the Holy Spirit does not dwell in the hearts of the unsaved.

#### **Rom 8:15 (KJV)**

For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

(Heb 2:14-15 KJV) Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; {15} And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. When we were unsaved we were in the bondage of the Law which consistently kept the eternal death penalty over us. Physical death is also feared by unbelievers since they do not know what is on the other side and that is why they are in bondage to the fear of death. Physical death to the believer is the beginning of eternal life in Glory. (Gal 4:9 KJV) But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? The Christian is not indwelt with the spirit of bondage that we had when we were unbelievers. Instead we have received the Spirit of adoption. This means, that because of the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, we were taken out of the kingdom of Satan and transplanted into the Kingdom of God and that transference is so thorough, that we are able to see God in a relationship so close that we can call Him "Daddy," which is what "Abba" means.

#### **Rom 8:16 (KJV)**

The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:

The Holy Spirit bears witness that we are saved. The fact that we are indwelt by the Holy Spirit, gives us a kinship to other believers which we can identify with. There are many out there who claim to be saved by reason of Church membership but instantly you can tell of what spirit they are by what their priorities are. If you go to a church and hear a speaker talking about environmental issues, you will not identify with them on a spiritual level but if a missionary speaker was speaking about reaching certain people groups, your spirit will identify with the ministry desire of that person. In this verse, we read the term

“Spirit itself.” This phrase has been used by cults such as the Jehovah’s Witnesses to try and prove that the Holy Spirit is only a force and not a person. Here is where their understanding hits a dead spot. The word “itself” is in the neuter gender, which means that it is neither male nor female. Spirit does not have a sexual category, therefore the word “itself” is a very good word to describe the Holy Spirit. (Mat 22:30 KJV) For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. Angels are spirit and that is what the believers will be like in Heaven.

#### **Rom 8:17 (KJV)**

And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

Since we are children of God by means of the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, the benefits of salvation do not end there. We are also heirs of God. Remember back in verse 15 we read that we were adopted? Well that adoption into the family of God makes us co-heirs with Christ and carries with it all the benefits of spiritual adoption. (Heb 1:1-2 KJV) God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, {2} Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; We read that Christ is the heir of all things and since we partook in his sufferings by means of imputation, we will also be glorified together with Christ, not on the same level since He is eternal God, but His glory will also be imputed to the believer on some level.

#### **Rom 8:18 (KJV)**

For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

Here is a great principle in that even though we may be going through a rough time now, whether it be persecution, sickness, or something else, these sufferings in no way can ever be compared to the ultimate glory which shall be revealed in us. Remember, our bodies are tied to this world and are susceptible to all kinds of pain and suffering but the redeemed soul that we possess can never be touched by the things on this Earth. The soul, which has been redeemed will be glorified in our new glorified bodies which the Lord will give us on the last day. Those glorified bodies could never be compared to the frail, corrupted flesh which we now possess. In fact, the only bit of insight we have on the spiritual body in its glorified state is what is revealed to us on the Mount of Transfiguration. (Matthew 17:1-9)

#### **Rom 8:19 (KJV)**

For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

Here we see in view that these creatures are desiring to see the manifesting of the sons of God, that is, in their glorified state in the New Heaven and New Earth. These creatures may be the ministering angels, it may be the creation of the world itself and all it contains or it can be the Christians themselves who look forward to the last day when God is going to give all His children their glorified spiritual bodies. The word “manifestation” carries with it the meaning of “revealing or unveiling.” Right now as God is saving His Elect, the world and our physical bodies remains in decay but as soon as the last one becomes saved, then He will turn our vile bodies into glorified ones. (Phil 3:21 KJV) Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

#### **Rom 8:20 (KJV)**

For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope,

Not only were human beings made subject to vanity but the entire creation was plunged into vanity. The word “vanity” in the Greek carries with it the idea of “futility or worthlessness.” The entire creation was plunged into a state hostile to God because of sin and this punishment was placed on the entire creation. One need only look at a garden with weeds and bugs that devour it, storms like hurricanes and tornadoes, hatred built up between humans, etc. The entire creation has turned against itself because of sin. The animals did not sin against God yet they were also subjected to the same situation. In the beginning, the animals were herbivorous but since sin came on the scene, many of them became carnivorous and vicious. Since animals do not have souls and are only tied to this earth, the hope that we now look for is the hope of the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ when God shall create the new Heavens and the New Earth where only righteousness dwells. (2 Pet 3:13 KJV) Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

Romans 8:21-30

### **Rom 8:21 (KJV)**

Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

The entire creation will be freed from the effects of sin which has affected even the entire physical creation. One only needs to look at a rose and see the thorns or to look at animals and see the fear and ferociousness they possess since sin entered the world. The entire creation has been corrupted or in a state of degeneration because of sin. We see how metals rust or wood rots because of the degenerative effects of sin. Once God has saved the last one, then the entire creation is going to be remade but this time it will be kept righteous for eternity and no sinful thing shall be allowed to enter into it. As the children of God will be delivered or freed from the bondage of the present corruption, so will the entire creation itself.

### **Rom 8:22 (KJV)**

For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.

Here we are told that the entire creation which is made up of humans and the animal and vegetable world has all suffered the same fate when sin entered the world. Death comes to all phases of the creation. Trees, plants, and animals die as well as all human beings. The word “groan” carries with it the meaning of “sighing.” It means a grieving or yearning. God created this Earth and all it contains in righteousness and nothing was degenerating until sin entered the world. Once sin entered the world, all the creation groans together as all the creation suffer the same physical fate.

### **Rom 8:23 (KJV)**

And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.

Here Paul tells us that not only the creation is waiting for renewal but every Christian is also waiting for the day when the Lord gives us our new bodies which will be eternal in nature and will never suffer pain or sickness again. We groan inside desiring to be free of the effects of sin and the flesh body which so hinders our service and enjoyment of our salvation in the present. Countless numbers of Christians through the ages have had their ministries cut short because of sickness or some other infirmity which dwells in our mortal

bodies.

### **Rom 8:24 (KJV)**

For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

The Christian has been given the earnest of the Spirit which means that we have the hope of eternal life already implanted in us. (2 Cor 1:22 KJV) Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. The word "earnest" carries with it the meaning of "pledge." So within the heart of the Christian, God has given us the Holy Spirit who instills the hope of the resurrection of the body unto eternal life with the Lord. (Col 1:27 KJV) To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: The hope that we now have is yet unfulfilled in its final form and that will occur on the last day. We have that hope in us and now it is invisible. Therefore, we cannot see it but if we could see what God has planned for us then we are not living in hope but we are living by sight. If we see something, then hope is finished. For example, I hope to see the Grand Canyon in two years, if the Lord allows me to do that, then when I am standing at the rim, it is no longer hope but it is sight and there is no need to hope for it because it is right before me.

### **Rom 8:25 (KJV)**

But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

(1 Tim 6:11 KJV) But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. One of the principal traits of the Christian faith is patience. As we continue to live in hope, it under girds patience. The Holy Spirit is the one who places patience and hope in our hearts. The world runs on impatience. All we have to do is look around and see how fast the world is running to and fro. Just watch the way people drive or the way they live their lives and you will see a steady diet of impatience. The Christian is to run opposite of the world. We can have patience because we know that this life is not all there is. The world sees that few years it has as the only thing it has and therefore needs to rush and fulfill every second.

### **Rom 8:26 (KJV)**

Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

This is why the Holy Spirit is called the Comforter because He helps us in our times of weaknesses. How many times we go into prayer we really do not know how we should pray for ourselves and others. Many times we pray according to the way we see things or according to the way we want things to happen in our life. However, the Holy Spirit takes our prayer requests and even our deepest needs, those that we may not even be aware of, and makes intercession before the Father, so when the Father hears our prayers, they have been faithfully and properly put in order with all the selfness removed. The Holy Spirit, being eternal God, is able to know what we really should be praying for and having Him indwell us is the greatest gift God gave us this side of Heaven. This is why we should never be afraid to pray, even shallow prayers are brought under intercession. Remember the short prayers of Nehemiah? These prayers also were brought under the intercession of the Holy Spirit because Nehemiah was a believer. Those deep groanings which cannot be uttered by humans are the real prayers being brought before the Father in a proper way as I already mentioned.

### **Rom 8:27 (KJV)**

And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.

(Jer 17:10 KJV) I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings. God is the one who searches the hearts. He knows exclusively what is in the mind of the Spirit and that knowledge brings the two in harmony over the prayers of His redeemed. That harmony brings the proper intercession of the weak prayers of the Saints into line with the will of God. Many times we Christians pray according to our will or desire and we fail to take into account what the will of God may be on a certain situation. This is why God denies many of our prayer requests. He does it for our good because we do not know what the future God has for us according to His will, and that is why many times we pray apart from His will and that is why the Holy Spirit has to bring our prayers back into line with God's will for our life. Think of it this way that absolute wisdom is in control of our prayers.

### **Rom 8:28 (KJV)**

And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

Here is the reason that the Holy Spirit makes intercession for us. No matter what happens in our life, even when it is opposite of our prayers, we can have the confidence that everything works together for good to those who love and trust God. This means that only the Elect of God is the recipient of the good. Those who are unbelievers or who are religious use this verse in its truncated form and believe that God will work on their behalf but here we are seeing that only the Elect of God are the ones that work out for good. Only the true believers are called according to the purpose God has for them. There are many times that we are cast into a situation and we wonder how this could work together for our good. The way we know that things work out for our good is that we take things on faith, knowing that it is God who is working out the details behind the scenes. Job never found out why God had allowed those things to come into his life but he continued to trust the Lord and his health, wealth, and family were restored. There are many times that we will never know why God works something on our behalf the way He does, and quite frankly, we really don't need to know.

### **Rom 8:29 (KJV)**

For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

The foreknowledge of God has always been a debatable subject, especially for those who hold to the Arminian view where the idea that God predestines someone is reprehensible. The Bible is very clear on this subject and the only way someone can be confused on this is by intentionally twisting the meaning of the words. This verse is one of the most twisted by the free will camp. I have read people claim that the way is predestined but not the person. I have also heard that this verse is not teaching salvation by predestination. Both of these are seriously wrong. First of all, the question must be asked. When did God first know us? He first knew us when He wrote our names in the Lamb's Book of Life before the foundation of the world.

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was,

and is not, and yet is.

If you notice in these two Revelation verses, we read that the names of the Redeemed were written in the Lamb's Book of Life and it was done before the world was created. The word "predestinate" is the Greek word "proorizo" which carries with it the meaning of "selected beforehand, appoint or determine beforehand." Now this verse states that we are predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son. The word "conform" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "having the same form." Now how can a person be conformed to the image of His Son unless they first become saved. We read above in Revelation that we are written in the Lamb's Book of Life before the world was formed. This means the Elect of God was predestined to become saved at some time in their life and that salvation is to image the person of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Lord Jesus Christ is the "firstborn" among the brethren. This means that He was the first to rise from the dead to never die again. While we are on this earth, we image Christ in our souls when we are saved because we receive our resurrected souls. In our soul existence we too will never die. The physical body will die but the resurrected soul lives on eternally. On the last day when we receive our new bodies we will then be like Christ, in that we will never die again. So before one can be conformed to the image of Christ, they must become saved, and the Elect of God are the ones who were written in the Lamb's Book of Life. We also image Christ in his characteristics because we are given the mind of Christ when we are saved.

### **Rom 8:30 (KJV)**

Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

Here God continues the chain of events which occurs in the life of the Elect. First of all, God predestines us by writing our names in the Lamb's Book of Life before the world was formed. Then when that person is born physically into the world, sometime within their lifespan God calls them as they hear the Gospel being presented in some fashion. Then after the calling, God then justifies the person. Justification is a singular event whereby a person is found not guilty of any sins. This person is given a clean slate as if they had never sinned. Now that God Himself has declared that Christian not guilty, He now glorifies them. This glorification is not based upon anything the believer has done but upon the work of Christ. The ultimate glorification of the Believer will take place when we receive our new glorified bodies after the last day. (1 Cor 15:44 KJV) It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. A very simple chain of events taking place behind the scenes before the Believer becomes a Believer and we see that it all starts with being predestinated.

Romans 8:31-39

### **Rom 8:31 (KJV)**

What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?

What things? The things we just read in the previous verses. We see that God is the one who has given us salvation and it was all done by Him as the Elect receive it passively. This verse also teaches us that since God gave us His salvation, that He is for us. If the God of this universe is the one who gave us salvation, then who can act contrary to God's actions? (Isa 14:27 KJV) For the LORD of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back? There is nothing or no one on this earth that can annul any of the works of the Lord on behalf of His children. God's justification has declared His children totally guilt free from their sins.



### **Rom 8:32 (KJV)**

He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

God the Father did not spare His own Son in the working out of His salvation plan. (Isa 53:10 KJV) Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. We read that it pleased the LORD to bruise Him because the recipients of God's salvation plan would bring glory and honor to the Lord. He has given us every spiritual blessing which accompanies salvation. (Heb 12:2 KJV) Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. The Lord Jesus despised the shame which He endured on the cross for His Elect. The word "despise" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "setting aside." So the Lord Jesus Christ looked beyond those few hours of shame and mocking, which He would endure, for the purpose of looking forward to the eternal results which would occur in the lives of His Elect. We too, in this world, when we are reviled for bringing the Gospel to others can look beyond these few years to the glory which we will be given on the last day that will last for eternity.

### **Rom 8:33 (KJV)**

Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.

Satan tried this with Job. He tried to bring all sorts of accusations against Job but Job was a righteous man, which means he was saved, and his salvation gave him the understanding to trust God in this situation. Satan is called the accuser of the brethren and is constantly bringing accusations against God's Elect. (Rev 12:10 KJV) And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. Since God is the one who declares His own people not guilty, then who can bring any accusation against the brethren which can negate God's justification? There is no accusation which can stick to God's Elect since God Himself is the one who has saved and cleansed the believer by the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. (Col 2:13-14 KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; We read in the Colossians verses that every sin which we committed has been removed judicially and therefore there is no sin which can ever condemn the true believer.

### **Rom 8:34 (KJV)**

Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

Is there anyone who can bring any condemnation against God's Elect? The answer is no because Christ is the one who died for His Elect. Not only did He die for the Elect but when He was raised from the dead, it was for our justification. (Rom 4:25 KJV) Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification. His rising from the dead showed us that God accepted the sacrifice on behalf of His Elect and that they would never have to face the judicial penalty for sin because Christ took that penalty on the cross. All grounds for condemnation has been removed from the believer for all eternity.

### **Rom 8:35 (KJV)**

Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?

Paul now brings us a major principle concerning separation from Christ. Separation from Christ in its ultimate implication is eternal damnation. No opposing force ever garnered against the believer can ever have a separating effect. The six things which Paul mentions above does not separate us from Christ, rather, when the Christian faces these things it drives them closer to the Lord. Paul knew this well since he faced all of these things as he built the churches. Then the final one that Paul brings is "sword." The sword cannot separate us from Christ because if we are killed, and the sword is just symbolic of any method which takes our physical life, we go immediately into the presence of the Lord. (2 Cor 5:8 KJV) We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord. Therefore, knowing this, nothing can separate us from the love of Christ.

### **Rom 8:36 (KJV)**

As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.

(Psa 44:22 KJV) Yea, for thy sake are we killed all the day long; we are counted as sheep for the slaughter. This quote from Psalms gives us insight into the peril that the Christians face every day. Some Christians face death every day, especially in countries where Christianity is outlawed. Even in countries which allow religious freedom, there is no guarantee that any Christian will not face martyrdom. The danger we face as Christians will be consistent until the Lord takes us home or until the last day. Christianity is reprehensible to the ungodliness of this world and that includes the religious crowd, since it is religion which is the biggest persecutor of Christianity. All one has to do is look at the history of the church and you will see religions like Roman Catholicism or Islam persecuting the Christians, no matter where they are.

### **Rom 8:37 (KJV)**

Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.

This is one of the most encouraging verses in the entire Bible. The words "more than conquerors" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "super or above victors." The word roots from the word "nikao" which means "overcome, win, or victory." In fact, Nike Missiles are named after this word. No matter what situation we face, we are overwhelming conquerors through the Lord Jesus Christ. (Isa 54:17 KJV) No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, saith the LORD. The greatest enemy on this Earth, death, has been conquered by the Lord Jesus Christ and that victory has been imputed to the true believer. (Rom 8:11 KJV) But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

### **Rom 8:38-39 (KJV)**

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, {39} Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Here we are given a list of ten circumstances which cannot separate the believer from the love of God through Jesus Christ our Lord. Death brings us into the presence of Christ in Heaven. Life with all its trials and tribulations cannot bring about any separation from Christ. Angels do not have the power to separate us from Christ. Principalities and Powers are no doubt referring to the evil powers which continually plot against the Christian to trap them. Things in this present world or things which may come at us from the future can never separate us for God knows the end from the beginning and nothing takes Him by

surprise. Nothing from the highest places in the physical universe to the lowest place on Earth can ever separate us. These two may be pointing to ancient false gods which drew people away from the worship of the true God. No false god can ever separate us from the love of God. No created being, no matter who they are, with all their worldly powers can ever separate us from the love of God. These two verses are giving great encouragement that there is nothing on this Earth or in the physical heavens which can separate us from the love of Christ. These verses must also be taken into consideration when some people claim they can lose their salvation. If all of these things cannot cause separation from Christ, which is also loss of salvation, then what can possibly cause us to lose it, especially when we read in verse 33 that who can lay a charge to God's Elect? Even self-condemnation can never be used as a charge against oneself when we sin.

#### Romans 9:1-11

##### **Rom 9:1 (KJV)**

I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost,

Here Paul is affirming the fact that what he is conveying in these chapters is the absolute truth. By using the term "in Christ," he seems to be using this as sort of an oath but also he is identifying himself that he is a true believer in the Lord Jesus Christ. The truth that he is bringing is also in concert with the testimony of the Holy Spirit. What is being taught here is not a private belief but is truth given to Paul by the Holy Spirit and since the Holy Spirit indwells Paul, as He does every believer, then the truth that He gives Paul to write will definitely bear witness with his conscience. Now as Christians today, the Scriptures will bear witness to our consciences because the Holy Spirit is the author of the Scriptures and we are indwelt by the Holy Spirit, therefore, there is a divine witness between the two.

##### **Rom 9:2 (KJV)**

That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.

Paul is now stating that he has much sustained grief and sorrow in his heart. The word "sorrow" in the Greek conveys the idea of "pain of mind or distress." Paul then goes on to explain in the following verses what is causing his distress.

##### **Rom 9:3 (KJV)**

For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh:

Paul was very heavy hearted in that his desire to see the nation of Israel come to know their Messiah, that if he could somehow accomplish this, he is willing himself to be accursed from Christ, that is, he is willing to go to Hell for all eternity. Notice here that Paul is speaking of the people of Israel according to the flesh. This means those Israelites who were alive at Paul's time were whom he desired that they would come to know Christ as their Messiah. It takes a big heart to be willing to sacrifice your salvation for others to know Christ as Savior. However, this cannot happen and no one can exchange their salvation for even the noblest and most honest desires in the Lord.

##### **Rom 9:4 (KJV)**

Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises;

Paul continues from verse three that his kinsmen according to the flesh are the true Israelites and not the talmudic Jews who are really imposter Israelites. The true Israelite is the one who is truly descended through Jacob's twelve sons. They were to be adopted as God's family. (Deu 7:6 KJV) For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God: the LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth. They also received of the glory of God as they traveled through the wilderness, the "shekinah" glory of God had preceded and followed them for the full forty years. The covenants of God were also given through them, such as the Davidic covenant, the covenant of Mt. Sinai, the Abrahamic covenants. God also gave the nation of Israel the Law of God at Mount Sinai through Moses and for one thousand years following until the book of Malachi was penned as the last book of the Hebrew Scriptures. Within the law of God, they also received the instructions on how to do serve God in the Tabernacle and then later in the Temples which were built. Israel was also given the great promises of God which we find in Scripture. God would give them a condition or promise and if they kept their side of it, then God would keep His side with the blessing.

### **Rom 9:5 (KJV)**

Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.

The fathers of the faith came out of Israel. Abraham, who was not an Israelite but a Chaldean whom God saved, brought the eternal covenants that we find in Genesis 13-17. Isaac was the promised son of Abraham that brought the covenant to Israel. (Gen 17:21 KJV) But my covenant will I establish with Isaac, which Sarah shall bear unto thee at this set time in the next year. (Gen 21:12 KJV) And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called. Then Jacob and Esau were born to Isaac but it was through Jacob who eventually became named Israel that the nation Israel really began. It was through his twelve sons that the tribes of Israel came into existence and it was through the tribe of Judah that the Lord Jesus Christ would eventually come on the scene. The Lord Jesus Christ coming through the tribe of Judah was eternal God Himself who came to Earth to pay for all the sins of the Elect. "Who is over all" is a direct statement which belongs only to the supreme God Himself as being the absolute ruler of the entire universe, earth, and Heaven. "Amen" implies finality in that it is so.

### **Rom 9:6 (KJV)**

Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

Here Paul reveals that there are two Israels. If you notice in the past few verses, Paul was speaking of his kinsman according to the flesh and the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ according to the flesh. The Bible is now revealing that there are two different Israels. There is Israel according to the flesh and Israel according to the Spirit. This is a very important verse as Paul begins by stating that the Word of God was effective in doing what it was supposed to do. When we look back at the history of the nation of Israel from the time they came out of Egypt, we will see two distinct populations. One of them was the people who built the Golden Calf and were the ones who disobeyed God right down through their entire history. Men such as Korah, King Saul, Baalam, etc. Then you also have the history of the men who obeyed God during their history. Men such as Moses, Joshua, David, Nehemiah, etc. What Paul is saying here is that God's Word reached His Elect among the ancient nation of Israel, even though it looked more like it failed in keeping the nation of Israel as a holy people. Nothing could be further from the truth.

The word of God, made a distinction between the Israel in the flesh which was disobedient

and the Israel of God which was in the Spirit who were the obedient of God. Thus, we see that Paul speaks of two Israels, one according to the flesh and one according to the Spirit. Those who are born again are of Spiritual Israel, which is the eternal Israel. Paul is saying that just because a person was born in national Israel, does not mean they are part of the eternal Israel. One enters the eternal Israel through redemption through the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ. The true chosen people of God are those chosen for salvation and that is the only chosen people God has. The idea that the modern talmudic Jews are God's chosen people is nothing more than political heresy which is embraced by many preachers simply because they will not approach these verses in Romans in truth, instead they approach them through the eyes and writings of well-paid false prophecy pundits who receive much money from the Zionists to make sure Christians keep thinking that the modern talmudic Jews are God's chosen people. (1 Pet 2:10 KJV) Which in time past were not a people, **but are now the people** of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. Notice in this verse it states "the people of God." The direct article means there is no other people of God.

### **Rom 9:7 (KJV)**

Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called.

Here Paul speaks of the fact that just because someone is a physical descendant of Abraham, whether Israelite or Arab, does not make them chosen people. The line of the Arabs came through Ishmael and the line of Israel came through Isaac. It must be remembered that this is a family line. (Gen 21:12 KJV) And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called. Those who are the redeemed of God are placed in the spiritual line of Isaac. The true spiritual seed of Abraham will come through the line of Isaac. Notice that the seed is called and it is not automatic because of birth. This is a great insight because it is teaching us that birth does not mean you are born into the family of God. Those who are called and saved are the true spiritual seed of Abraham. (Gal 3:29 KJV) And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

### **Rom 9:8 (KJV)**

That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

Here is a direct statement that those who are born of the flesh are not the children of God. We read in Genesis 21:12 that the spiritual seed of Abraham is called and not born. (Gal 3:16 KJV) Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. (Gal 3:29 KJV) And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise. Those who are in the Abrahamic covenant which speaks of eternity, those are the true children of God. (Gen 17:8 KJV) And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God. Notice in Genesis 17:8, we read that God is going to give Abraham the land of Canaan for an everlasting possession. This is language which is teaching us that the land that God is going to give Abraham is of an eternal nature. We know by the Scriptures that God is going to destroy this present world and He is going to remake the New Heavens and the New Earth. It is the New Earth which is going to last forever and not the present Earth. The present Earth is degenerating because of the effects of sin as we have previously read but the New Earth will suffer no such fate since sin will not be allowed in that place. The Bible speaks in the principle of two. There are only two kingdoms on Earth, the kingdom of God and the kingdom of Satan. There are only two ages, the present evil age and the one to come. There are two

Israels, the one according to the flesh and the eternal Israel according to the Spirit. This is why when we read the above statement we can safely conclude that the modern physical Jews are not the children of God but only those who are truly born again by the Spirit of God who enter the Spiritual or eternal Israel through the Lord Jesus Christ.

### **Rom 9:9 (KJV)**

For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son.

The promise of God for the eternal covenant began with the promise that Sarah was going to have a son and not the son which came through Hagar. (Gen 17:19 KJV) And God said, Sarah thy wife shall bear thee a son indeed; and thou shalt call his name Isaac: and I will establish my covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed after him. (Gen 17:21 KJV) But my covenant will I establish with Isaac, which Sarah shall bear unto thee at this set time in the next year. Notice that this covenant is called an everlasting covenant which means that this is speaking of the promise of Grace and the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ who effected that eternal covenant by His sacrifice on Calvary for His Elect.

### **Rom 9:10 (KJV)**

And not only this; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac;

Here God is telling us that the line continues through Isaac and Rebecca, that the promise of Genesis 21:12 is now coming to fruition that the true spiritual descendants of Abraham are going to be named through Isaac.

### **Rom 9:11 (KJV)**

(For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;)

Two sons were born to Isaac and Rebecca, Jacob and Esau. Esau was the oldest and therefore entitled to the privileges of being first born. Now in this passage we are told that the two children were not yet born and neither of them had done any good or evil. However, Jacob was the one who received the blessing which should have gone to Esau but this was God's plan. God's plan was for Jacob to receive the blessing and it was not that Jacob was any better than Esau but it was done according to election by God Himself. This election has nothing whatsoever to do with any type of works. God chooses His people based upon election and not upon their works or their will. (John 1:12-13 KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. God had already named those He planned to save before the foundation of the world and when the world was created, God began His election program, choosing a people for Himself based on the names He wrote in the Lamb's Book of Life. Here we read that Jacob's name was written in the Lamb's Book of Life while Esau's name was not and this is why Jacob was the one who was to receive the special blessing. God's purpose was to have Jacob receive the blessing and as we read about the unfolding of this, we know why, because it was through Jacob, who eventually became known as Israel, that the twelve tribes would be formed and the Lord Jesus Christ would come through the line of the tribe of Judah.

Romans 9:12-22

### **Rom 9:12 (KJV)**

It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger.

(Gen 25:23 KJV) And the LORD said unto her, Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger. Continuing the thought from verse eleven on election, Rebecca was told that the elder, which was Esau, would serve the younger brother, who was Jacob. We saw that this was planned by God Himself by divine election.

### **Rom 9:13 (KJV)**

As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

There was nothing in Jacob that would cause God to love him above Esau. However, the Bible teaches that the love of God is qualified. (Psa 5:5 KJV) The foolish shall not stand in thy sight: thou hatest all workers of iniquity. God places His love upon His Elect while righteously hating the unbelievers since they are at enmity with God. There is no place in the Bible which teaches that God loves the sinner and hates the sin. (Psa 7:11 KJV) God judgeth the righteous, and God is angry with the wicked every day. God is angry with the wicked every day and He does not bestow His love upon those who are non-elect. On judgment day, God is not going to separate the sin and sinner. Each sinner is going to stand in the judgment for their sins and be cast into eternal Hell. So when we see the verse teaching us that God loved Jacob but hated Esau, it was because Jacob was the Elect of God and Esau was not. I have heard it say that God hated Esau in contrast to the loving of Jacob. However, the words stand in the Greek just as they are translated. The word "hated" in the Greek carries with it the idea of "detest, abhor, or prefer against." The word "loved" is rooted from the "agape" love of God which is the love associated with those whom God saved.

### **Rom 9:14 (KJV)**

What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.

Paul then asks a question based on the last statement in verse 13. Just because God chose Jacob over Esau and loved Jacob over Esau, does that mean that God is unrighteous? The answer of course is God forbid, that can never happen. God has already predetermined who He has chosen and for what purpose as we see in these verses. Just because people refuse to believe that God has the sovereign right to do as He pleases, does not mean that God is unrighteous, rather it means that we refuse to accept God's methods based upon His purposes. (Isa 55:8-9 KJV) For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. {9} For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts. God's thoughts and ways are way above our thoughts and ways and if Christians stop trying to fit God into a mold that we create, then there will be less confusion. God's salvation plan is by His election and not the mythical free will of man.

### **Rom 9:15 (KJV)**

For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

(Exo 33:19 KJV) And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the LORD before thee; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will show mercy on whom I will show mercy. Back in Exodus, God already gave us election in the Scriptures. The Romans verse is very plain as it tells us that God will have mercy and compassion on whom He desires. As we read, that the mercy and compassion (love) of God is qualified and He gives them to those He named before the foundation of the world through election.

### **Rom 9:16 (KJV)**

So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that showeth mercy.

(John 1:12-13 KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. The mercy AKA salvation of God is not given for any type of works that man can do but is given only by God to His Elect. This is the kind of verse that those who hold to the free will of man in salvation despise.

### **Rom 9:17 (KJV)**

For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might show my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

(Exo 9:15-16 KJV) For now I will stretch out my hand, that I may smite thee and thy people with pestilence; and thou shalt be cut off from the earth. {16} And in very deed for this cause have I raised thee up, for to show in thee my power; and that my name may be declared throughout all the earth. When God was ready to raise His hand against Egypt for not letting His people go, He specifically named Pharaoh as being raised up for this purpose. Pharaoh was considered a god and Egypt the mightiest nation on Earth at that time. If Pharaoh and Egypt would be defeated, then the conqueror would be feared all over the Earth as the word spread. The name of God was feared among the nations after Egypt was destroyed by the plagues and the death of Pharaoh in the Red Sea. So basically in this verse God is telling us that He can raise up a mighty nation for the purpose of bringing it down according to His mighty power and no one can stay His hand from doing it if that is His will.

### **Rom 9:18 (KJV)**

Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.

Here God tells us that that He can have mercy on whom He desires and on the other hand, He can harden whomever He desires, such as the case of Pharaoh. (Exo 4:21 KJV) And the LORD said unto Moses, When thou goest to return into Egypt, see that thou do all those wonders before Pharaoh, which I have put in thine hand: but I will harden his heart, that he shall not let the people go. The mercy of God is in the hands of God.

### **Rom 9:19 (KJV)**

Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?

Some may say by misunderstanding the sovereign will of God that who can resist Him or how can He find fault if He is in control of everything? What man fails to understand is that when sin entered the world, everything had changed. God's will and purposes control the entire Earth. What many fail to understand is that God is sovereign and has control. Man believes that he is in control. The Bible teaches that God controls every aspect of humanity. People ask questions like those above because they fail to recognize the sovereignty of God. When one embraces the sovereignty of God, then questions like the two above would not be asked but since unsaved man is sinful, they do not see God as sovereign but rather they see their actions as independent of God.

### **Rom 9:20 (KJV)**

Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

Man must realize his created place in that whatever God wills for his life will come to pass. Man may complain about things but Paul is saying here basically, what right do you have to question God's purposes since you are only a created being. Man tries to exalt himself



as more than he is but we are only created beings and subject to God's will in all things. If Pharaoh, who was the mightiest man on Earth at that time was subjected to God's purposes, then who do we think we are in questioning or trying to oppose God's will?

### **Rom 9:21 (KJV)**

Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

Here Paul brings in the potter who makes pottery out of clay. If the potter makes a pot which comes out perfectly then he would display that one in the front window. If he makes one that is irregular, then that one goes in the back room, either to be broken up and remade or to be sold at a lower price. The potter has absolute authority over the clay. It is interesting to note that clay is just passive and cannot decide what it wants to be, whether honorable or dishonorable. That choice is in the hands of the potter.

### **Rom 9:22 (KJV)**

What if God, willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

(Prov 16:4 KJV) The LORD hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil. Here we are told that God made both vessels of wrath. We read in the Proverbs verse that God even made the wicked for the day of evil, which is Judgment day when all the evil deeds of wicked unregenerate man will be brought to light. The longsuffering of God waits until the last day when all the unbelievers will have been born and then those that have died will be raised to the resurrection of damnation. (John 5:29 KJV) And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. The sovereignty of God shines through in these passages as God is totally sovereign over both the believers and the unbelievers.

## Romans 9:23-33

### **Rom 9:23 (KJV)**

And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory,

Not only will God bring wrath upon the unbelievers on the last day, He will also bring the riches of glory on all the Elect whom He predestined from the foundation of the world. Here we read that His vessels of mercy were prepared beforehand. The word "afore" carries with it the meaning of "before prepared." God had written the names of those He planned to save in the Lamb's Book of Life from the foundation of the world and finalized their salvation when the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross and cried out "It is finished." Now the only thing the believer looks forward to is the consummation of the age when God will give us our new spiritual bodies for eternity.

### **Rom 9:24 (KJV)**

Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?

Paul now states that those believers who were living at that time, will also partake in the heavenly riches. Paul assures his hearers that God will not only save a remnant of Jews unto salvation but He will also save a multitude of Gentiles, which He has been doing and will continue to do until the last day.

### **Rom 9:25 (KJV)**

As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved.

(Hosea 2:23 KJV) And I will sow her unto me in the earth; and I will have mercy upon her that had not obtained mercy; and I will say to them which were not my people, Thou art my people; and they shall say, Thou art my God. Here we see an Old Testament prophecy coming to fulfillment. In the Old Testament we will find passages like this woven in that God was going to save another people. Of course, He was speaking about the saving of the Gentiles through Grace. (Isa 65:1 KJV) I am sought of them that asked not for me; I am found of them that sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation that was not called by my name. Isaiah brings a similar prophecy. Here God is stating that He will be found by people who did not seek Him. This would be the Gentile Elect which would be coming into the Kingdom of God through Grace. In the Old Testament, Israel was the only nation who called upon the name of the Lord but since they went apostate, God divorced them and stated that there would be others whom He was going to save and we see in both Hosea and Isaiah that He was going to fulfill that.

### **Rom 9:26 (KJV)**

And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God.

(Hosea 1:10 KJV) Yet the number of the children of Israel shall be as the sand of the sea, which cannot be measured nor numbered; and it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, there it shall be said unto them, Ye are the sons of the living God. Here is another interesting passage in that in the Hosea passage God speaks of the children of Israel that cannot be measured nor numbered. This is not speaking of the physical nation of Israel but is a prophecy of the body of Christ in the entire world. Notice in the Hosea passage, it states that they are going to be as the sand of the sea. This means that they are unable to be measured and counted. Sand cannot be measured because it changes with every tide coming in plus it takes sand pebbles out to sea with every tide thereby forbidding an accurate count of sand pebbles. The true believers are placed all over this world which means they cannot be numbered because they are everywhere and no one knows who they are except God. Since all the believers are placed all over the world, they cannot be measured by being in any one specific place. Notice in this Romans verse we read another direct article, "there shall they be called **the children of the living God.**" This means that only those who are saved by the Lord Jesus Christ are the true children of God. (1 Pet 2:10 KJV) Which in time past were not a people, but are **now the people of God:** which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. The same teaching is echoed in 1 Peter 2:10.

### **Rom 9:27 (KJV)**

Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved:

(Isa 10:22 KJV) For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness. Out of the nation of Israel, God is going to save a remnant of them. The number of them may be many and uncountable but God is going to save a remnant of them according to His promise.

### **Rom 9:28 (KJV)**

For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

(Isa 10:22-23 KJV) For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant of them

shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness. {23} For the Lord GOD of hosts shall make a consumption, even determined, in the midst of all the land. (Isa 37:32 KJV) For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of mount Zion: the zeal of the LORD of hosts shall do this. This verse has been a stumper but if we go back to the original language, we will see how it opens up. This verse lies in the middle of a quotation from Isaiah 10:22-23; 37:32. In Isaiah 10:22 we read that though there are many in national Israel, only a remnant of that nation will become saved. This same verse teaches there will be a destruction of national Israel. The word "consumption" in this verse means "a pining or destruction," but then God declares that out of this destruction will come righteousness. The righteousness is the gospel that will come forth from the remnant. It was out of national Israel that Christ came but only a remnant would believe on Him. The majority of national Israel disbelieved and rejected Christ, and therefore, Christ rejected the nation of Israel, and this rejection, except for a remnant, will stand until the last day.

In Isaiah 10:23 God declares that the destruction will be total in that national Israel will cease to exist as the nation which was entrusted to send forth the gospel. Only a remnant will be chosen out of national Israel, the nation will lose its favored status with God. In Isaiah 37:32, God again speaks of the remnant of believers which will be saved in national Israel. Now we may feel confident that the context of Romans 9:28 is dealing with the remnant of believers from Israel. Let us now approach Romans 9:28 with this thought in view.

The word "finish" means "to complete entirely." It is also translated "ended" in Matthew 7:28 and "fulfilled" in Mark 13:4. So this word carries the meaning of an ending. This verb is in its active voice. The phrase "cut it short" also is an active voice verb which may be translated "cutting short." It may also be translated "speedily." The words "short work" should be translated "having been cut short," which means the work of salvation will not continue on for thousands of years. God is stating the work has already been completed and it will not be drawn out. God is going to completely wrap it all up on a day which He has already predetermined, as we read in Acts 17:31. When God saves the last person He intends to, that will usher in the last day, and no golden age will follow. In this verse, these phrases declare finality.

### **Rom 9:29 (KJV)**

And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha.

(Isa 1:9 KJV) Except the LORD of hosts had left unto us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we should have been like unto Gomorrah. God was not going to allow the entire nation of Israel and Judah to perish from the face of the earth so He determined that there was going to be a remnant who was going to become saved out of them. Sodom and Gomorrah were totally destroyed without leaving any progeny but the Lord stated that this would not happen to Israel as He would grant salvation to a remnant of Israelites. The term "Lord of Sabaoth" is the term used for the Lord of the Hosts.

### **Rom 9:30 (KJV)**

What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith.

In ancient times the Gentiles were mainly worshippers of false gods. They neither looked for the true God nor did they desire Him. This is because man in his natural state is spiritually dead. Here Paul is stating that even though the Gentiles did not seek the Lord and true righteousness, nevertheless, through the Grace of God, millions of Gentiles have come to know the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal Savior through Election. That

Election brought salvation to those who were not looking for it. I know in the summer of 1980, I was not seeking the Lord, instead as the Scriptures teach, He sought me. See Romans 9:25.

### **Rom 9:31 (KJV)**

But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.

National Israel had tried to follow the law of God but they never attained to the keeping of the law because of the sin nature which permeates every human being and one can never attain to the law of righteousness by works of the flesh. The flesh is corrupt and that means any works emanating from it will be tainted with corruption. The law of God must be kept perfectly or it will not be kept at all. Israel made a covenant with God at Sinai and told Him that they would do all that was commanded of them but they soon fell away and that was the end of any righteous attainment via the law.

### **Rom 9:32 (KJV)**

Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

As was previously stated, Israel had tried to keep the law according to works but that could never happen as long as we are in sinful bodies. The law had to be kept perfectly and the only one who kept it perfectly was the Lord Jesus Christ. Only those who become truly saved are given the gift of faith. Faith is in total opposition to works for attainment of righteousness. There was another reason that Israel had failed in their attainment of righteousness by the works of the law, they stumbled at the stumbling stone, namely, the Lord Jesus Christ. They did not understand that salvation and righteousness came through a person rather than the keeping of the law. This was the great mystery which baffled Israel. Righteousness is imputed to those who are in Christ and that imputation of righteousness is as if the believer had kept the law perfectly.

### **Rom 9:33 (KJV)**

As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

The Lord Jesus Christ is found in Zion, that is, the body of believers. Those whom God grants the gift of salvation to will have the ability to believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and that belief will mean that they are saved. Those who are saved will never be ashamed of their eternal salvation, both here and now. They will not be ashamed to be called Christians. The term “ashamed” carries with it the meaning of “dishonor or disgrace.” No Christian will ever be disgraced for leaning upon the Lord. The Lord Jesus is a stumbling stone and rock of offense to any false religion in this world. False religion would not look upon Christ as the only way to become saved, instead, each false religion sticks to their own set of rules and regulations. The atheist and general unbeliever will be offended at Christ, since they will think that they are doing well on their own, believing that there is no God and being confident they never have to give an accounting for their lives. These are the people who will be ashamed at the coming of the Lord.

Romans 10:1-7

### **Rom 10:1 (KJV)**

Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

Paul begins this chapter by stating that his heart's desire is that those of the nation of Israel would become saved. Paul being a Jew had a strong desire that the nation's leaders would not continue to follow those who did not recognize Christ and that had a hand in His crucifixion. Paul had desired that the nation of Israel would embrace their Messiah. Even though salvation comes by predestination, Paul shows us here that praying for someone's salvation is not wrong.

### **Rom 10:2 (KJV)**

For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

Israel had a zeal for God and His Law but they totally misunderstood the reason the Law was given. This is why Paul stated that they had zeal but it was not according to knowledge, that is, knowledge of the real way to God. They believed that keeping the law was the real way to please God and they thought that they had an eternal relationship with God through the law. This of course was not true. The law served the same purpose for Israel as it did for the entire world. It was given to show that man could not be righteous before God and therefore needed a Savior.

### **Rom 10:3 (KJV)**

For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

The word "ignorant" in this verse carries with it the meaning of "not knowing, not understanding, or disregarded." It is something that for 1400 years, Israel had the guidance of God and the prophets and yet they did not understand God's righteousness. Instead of them acceding to God's Law, they instead began to write their own laws. We can still see those laws today in two commentary sets, one is the Babylonian Talmud and the other is the Jerusalem Talmud. The Babylonian Talmud is the favored one which is sought out when something is needed concerning something in the law. The problem is that the Talmud overshadows the Hebrew Scriptures because it contains much rabbinical comment which is more sought after than the Scriptures. This is why Israel had submitted itself to the commentaries by their leaders and not the word of God. Unfortunately many churches and denominations have also done this. They have looked to their confessions and leaders as the authorities, even if they differ from the Scriptures. Many have set up their own righteousness in this manner.

### **Rom 10:4 (KJV)**

For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

The law prescribed certain ceremonies which must be kept and that all the males must appear before God in Jerusalem three times a year. (Exo 23:17 KJV) Three times in the year all thy males shall appear before the Lord GOD. Then there are all the different sacrifices which had to be kept. In this verse we are told that those who are born again in Christ, have fulfilled every aspect of the law and never again need to partake in any of the ceremonies. Christ perfectly fulfilled the righteous demands of God's holy law and that fulfillment was imputed to the believer upon salvation. So the believer is as if he or she kept the law perfectly. This is why we are told that Christ was the end of the law because after His final sacrifice for sin, there would be no more reason to keep any aspects of the law. A person cannot be more saved than completely. We have full salvation in Christ and that is why the temple was destroyed in 70 AD because the temple system, which typified Christ and His sacrifice, was now invalid since Christ fulfilled every aspect of the law. This is why those who are looking for some future temple to be built based on Ezekiel 40-48, are going to be disappointed because it will not happen. Any Christian who looks eagerly

for another temple to be built and commence with animal sacrifices reinstated by the unbelieving Jews are actually spitting in the face of Christ and His final sacrifice. The theology of unbelief should never be followed by any Christian.

### **Rom 10:5 (KJV)**

For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.

(Lev 18:5 KJV) Ye shall therefore keep my statutes, and my judgments: which if a man do, he shall live in them: I am the LORD. Those who can keep the law perfectly on their own do not need a Savior because they are establishing their own eternal life by keeping the law perfectly. This person is considered as one living in the law. This is what Israel thought they were doing. They did not realize that no one could keep the law perfectly and in its entirety, yet they believed they garnered the approval of God by keeping it, when in reality, they were breaking the law every day they existed. They were deceived in that just because they received the law, they believed the law was their way to eternal life.

### **Rom 10:6-7 (KJV)**

But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) {7} Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.)

In continuing his discourse from verse 5, Paul makes a marked distinction in the righteousness of keeping the law versus the righteousness of faith which comes by Grace. Those who keep the law may ask how one can please God and they will therefore ask who will go up to Heaven. This is what the Jews asked when faced with a difficult question. (Job 11:7-8 KJV) Canst thou by searching find out God? canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection? {8} It is as high as heaven; what canst thou do? deeper than hell; what canst thou know? In the Christian faith, we can easily accept the fact that Christ came to Earth and died for His people and was then resurrected. The statements in Romans 10:6-7 indicate that these were questions which the Jews dealt with according to their law. (Deu 30:12 KJV) It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Then they would ask who would go down into the deep? In other words, they were seeking to find answers from both heaven above and the deep below. This was because they followed the law and did not know how to please God, so they thought by going up to heaven, they could find out how to please Him. This is why Paul brings in the righteousness of faith because those in Christ have already pleased God. These are difficult verses to interpret but I believe this is the general picture which is in view, the righteousness by the law versus the righteousness by faith.

## Romans 10:8-14

### **Rom 10:8 (KJV)**

But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach;

For 1500 years the word of God was so close to the nation of Israel because it was through them that God brought the entire Hebrew Scriptures. However, because they did not receive the word of God in faith it was to no avail. Here Paul is making the same claim to those who hear him. The word of God is readily available to them who hear it. In fact, the word is so close it is in their mouth and heart but the problem is that it doesn't take root because they are steeped in the belief that they must adhere strictly to the law of God

for salvation. They did not accept the reality that salvation came through a person and not the written law. This is the same situation with many people who sit in churches each week or listen to Christian radio, the word is near them but it does no good for them if it does not regenerate them unto salvation.

### **Rom 10:9 (KJV)**

That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

The word “confess” carries with it the meaning of “saying the same thing.” (Amos 3:3 KJV) Can two walk together, except they be agreed? A person can say the same thing as God says because they are regenerated. Those who are unsaved will say exactly the opposite of what God has to say. The only reason a person can confess openly and verbally the Lord Jesus Christ, is because they have become saved. Notice the second part of this verse. If a person believes in their heart, not just empty words, that Christ was raised from the dead, then that is evidence that a person is saved. There is a big difference between believing truly and just uttering some words which will mean nothing toward anyone's salvation. This verse has unfortunately been used in trying to get people to believe they are saved just because they say a few words. The reality is that the words of the regenerated are only truly spoken by those who are already.

### **Rom 10:10 (KJV)**

For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Here is a verse which teaches that twofold evidence of salvation. First, when God saves a person, they believe in their hearts, which is really in their spirit essence. They receive their resurrected souls at the moment of salvation. (Ezek 36:26 KJV) A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. Secondly, a person who truly believes in their heart, will be unable to keep it to themselves and will become a verbal witness and tell others about the Lord. Jeremiah wanted to stop bringing the word of God to Judah but he could not because it was as a fire in his heart. (Jer 20:9 KJV) Then I said, I will not make mention of him, nor speak any more in his name. But his word was in mine heart as a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I was weary with forbearing, and I could not stay. The mouth confesses what the regenerated heart has believed.

### **Rom 10:11 (KJV)**

For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

As stated in Romans 9:33 that anyone who believes on the Lord will never be ashamed. The word “ashamed” carries with it the meaning of, “disgraced or dishonored.” Those at the White Throne Judgment will be the ones who will be ashamed because they will still be in their sins because they stand naked before the throne. (Heb 4:13 KJV) Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. As we walk in this world, when we have faith in God for every situation, even though the world will look down on faith in God, God will always work things out and when we have faith in God, it produces peace in our life and that is when people will see that our faith is real. Believing God is never wrong in the life of the believer, instead, disbelieving Him is.

### **Rom 10:12 (KJV)**

For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him.

We are saved by grace and not by race, therefore it does not matter what race we are concerning the kingdom of God. The Lord bestows full blessings upon all His true children. The ground is level at the foot of the cross plus God is no respecter of persons. (Acts 10:34 KJV) Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: As God makes no distinctions between sinners of all races, He does not discriminate when it comes to His redeemed. All sinners will go to Hell, regardless of race and all the saved will go to heaven.

### **Rom 10:13 (KJV)**

For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.

Here is a simple definition of the previous verse. Whosoever, which means anybody of any race who is truly Elect of God, will be saved. We call upon the name of the Lord in response to the Lord already regenerating us. We do not call upon the name of the Lord from a position of being spiritually dead because that would be impossible. What can the dead do except be dead? (Eph 2:5 KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) We, the believers, were once dead in our sins but it is God who quickens us, or makes us alive unto Him, and only then can we respond to Him. The dead cannot call upon the name of the Lord, only the living.

### **Rom 10:14 (KJV)**

How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

Now Paul asks three pertinent questions concerning the responsibility of both the church and the individual believer. First, how then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? It is impossible to call upon the Lord unless the person has already believed. Secondly, and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? If the true gospel is never preached, then how could it be possible that they believe in God if they have never heard of Him? Thirdly, and how shall they hear without a preacher? It would be impossible for someone to hear if they did not have the word preached to them. Here the word "preacher" in the Greek is the word "kerusoo" which means "to proclaim aloud or publicly preach." This does not necessarily mean that an ordained preacher is to do the preaching but it means that every believer has a responsibility to proclaim the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. Public proclamation can also be the dissemination of the Word by the written word.

Romans 10:15-21

### **Rom 10:15 (KJV)**

And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

(Isa 52:7 KJV) How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth! Paul asks the fourth question concerning how can anyone preach or proclaim the Gospel unless they are sent? This is the great question which every truly born again person must answer. It is a shame that when parents plan the future of their Christian children, it seems missions is never an option, only industry. God sees the feet of those who bring the true Gospel as beautiful. In fact, the word "beautiful" carries with it



the meaning of “timely or seasonable.” Whenever we bring the Gospel to anyone, it is always in a timely manner because they may not see tomorrow or we may not see tomorrow. This is why it is important for Christians to get busy doing something because sooner or later God is going to wrap it all up. We wouldn’t want to go to Heaven with an empty life.

### **Rom 10:16 (KJV)**

But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report?

Here Paul states that not all Israel has obeyed the Gospel in Isaiah’s time of prophesying. The question is then asked who hath believed our report? Well only those whom God has chosen from the foundations of the world will believe the Gospel. The majority of those in ancient Israel did not believe the reports of the prophets and the majority of the people in the world will not believe the proclamation of the true Gospel, yet it is the responsibility of all believers to continue in evangelism, no matter what hindrances they run in to.

### **Rom 10:17 (KJV)**

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

Here is the essence of the matter. Those who are truly saved are never saved apart from the hearing of the Word of God. It has been asked that what happens if there is a tribe somewhere in the world that never hears the Gospel? If that is the case, then that means there was no Elect among that specific group and therefore the word of God did not have to be preached to them, but we do not know whether there is Elect among any nation so it is our responsibility to continue to send forth the Gospel everywhere we can. Presently there are some people who believe that we do not have to hear the gospel to be saved. Billy Graham and Robert Schuller teach that you do not have to hear the true word of God to become saved. They are convinced that there will be many in Heaven from different religions. That is so heretical because we read above that faith (salvation) comes from the hearing of the word of God. When the Elect of God are hearing the Gospel proclaimed and it is their time of salvation, then they will become saved on that hearing. The absence of the Gospel is not a means of salvation. If it was, then we should stop all Bible preaching so people can become saved without the Gospel. Isn’t that ridiculous, especially in light of the Lord’s Great Commission. (Mark 16:15 KJV) And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. If a person can be saved outside of hearing the Gospel, then why did the Lord command us to go and preach to all the world? He should have said, go and be silent in all the world. When people espouse theories like that, they should be branded a heretic but what do Christians do with people like that? They send them millions of dollars to keep them preaching their heresy. May God forgive us for supporting heresy based on the personality of the one bringing it.

### **Rom 10:18 (KJV)**

But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

Now Paul switches his emphasis from the ones who bring the message to those who hear it. Who is the they? Paul is now emphasizing that Israel has already heard the Gospel, in fact, they have been saturated with it. Paul here speaks of the known world not the entire world as has been reached today. During the time Paul lived, there was probably not one Jew who did not know about the crucifixion of the Lord Jesus and who He was, plus the claims that He made. Think of the thousands that must have been instantly told about the raising of Lazarus. Do we think an event like that would warrant publicity? Israel was the most evangelized nation with all her prophets and divine warnings. Israel had no

excuse concerning her behavior toward the true Gospel.

### **Rom 10:19 (KJV)**

But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

(Deu 32:21 KJV) They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation. God had continued to preach the Gospel to Israel and the first one He used was Moses. Moses had penned the first five books of the Bible leaving them a record of God's grace and warnings. God said that He would provoke them to jealousy by bestowing His grace on another foolish nation. That nation is the nation of Gentiles that God has saved through His grace. When the Israelites saw the Gentiles coming into the Kingdom of God, it was to provoke the Israelites to become jealous that instead of them receiving God's favor, a nation of rebellious people who did not know God would receive the favor. The Gentiles did not know God but after Calvary when the Holy Spirit was given, the Jews saw thousands of Gentiles coming into the Kingdom and this should have provoked them to at least inquire but instead in their rebellion, they continued to persecute them.

### **Rom 10:20 (KJV)**

But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

(Isa 65:1 KJV) I am sought of them that asked not for me; I am found of them that sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation that was not called by my name. Here is one the most clearest verses on Election. The Gentiles who did not seek after God nor did they want anything to do with Him, suddenly have become Christians. Nobody wakes up in the morning and says I think today I am going to get saved. God revealed Himself, through Grace, to many thousands of Gentiles. Whether it is in Isaiah's time or in Paul's time or in our time, no one is saved apart from the Grace of God through the Lord Jesus Christ. During the time of Isaiah, Judah was being a very stiff necked people so God was already revealing that He was about to bring His salvation program outside of the borders of Israel, eventually to the entire world. There would be many in different countries who would become saved from false religions. When a person is in a false religion, they are not seeking after the true God because salvation is always on His terms and not theirs.

### **Rom 10:21 (KJV)**

But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

(Isa 65:2 KJV) I have spread out my hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walketh in a way that was not good, after their own thoughts; Here God gives another indictment against Israel. He stated that He was going to provoke them to jealousy by bringing the Gospel to other nations. Yet, this did not move Israel in the slightest to mend her ways concerning the things of God. God had had a special relationship with the nation of Israel from the time they came out of the land of Egypt and all His goodness was only returned with rebellion. Israel had thought they had a permanent covenant with God and that their actions would not abrogate that covenant. They were wrong because God finally dissolved both the Northern Kingdom and Judah and assimilated them into the nations, never to be heard from again. Since Calvary, God is now dealing with the whole world, not just one nation.

**Rom 11:1 (KJV)**

I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

Here Paul is asking a great question has God forsaken His people? Now for the proper understanding of this chapter, we must define who “His people” are. Now many make the claim that this is speaking of national Israel of modern times. Nothing could be farther from the truth. God is no longer dealing with one nation but the entire world. 1948 seems to have been an iconic year for many Christians. However, it must be noted that modern Israel is not a biblical state but it is a Talmudic state and it does not run itself according to the Scriptures. That nation is a nation in unbelief and it will remain that way until the Lord returns, except for a small remnant of God’s Elect within its borders, just like in every other country.

When God speaks of His people, He is not speaking of the entire population of Israel. Keep in mind people like Ahab, Korah, Dathan, Nabal, and many others who opposed God and His prophets. When God sent prophets to Israel and Judah, they were all rejected and some of them were killed by murdering Israelites. These are not the people of God. The “His people” are those whom God has chosen from the foundations of the world for salvation. (Mat 1:21 KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

(Luke 1:76-77 KJV) And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways; {77} To give knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins,

The mission of John the Baptist was to bring the knowledge of salvation to “his people” and if you notice the next phrase, “by remission of their sins.” Who are the ones who receive remission of their sins? Only those whom God has chosen for salvation. Not everyone in ancient Israel was a child of God as the majority of them died in unbelief. (Heb 4:6 KJV) Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: There were children of God in ancient Israel but they were in the minority as they are today. So when Paul asks the question about God casting off His people, the answer is no because His people are those whom God saved in ancient Israel. God did not cast off His people with the unbelievers because they were saved. For today’s understanding, we must realize that God is stating that He is speaking of those whom He has or will save.

**Rom 11:2 (KJV)**

God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

Now this verse factors something else into the equation which gives us specific information about who “his people” are. Notice it states that his people are those whom He foreknew. When did God foreknow his people? It was when He named us and wrote our names in the Lamb’s Book of Life before the foundation of the world. (Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. Just because Elijah, in 1 Kings 19:10-18, denounces Israel for forsaking the covenant with God, this did not mean that God was going to forsake His redeemed people within Israel. Eventually both Israel and Judah went

into captivity but His redeemed within them were not forsaken.

**Rom 11:3 (KJV)**

Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

This is the indictment that Elijah brought against Israel. It looked to Elijah like everyone in Israel had succumbed to the false religion of Baal. However, Elijah could not read the hearts of the people. It looked to Elijah as if all of Israel had become apostate and that he alone was left of the true faith. What Elijah saw was a major portion of the Israelites going after Baal.

**Rom 11:4 (KJV)**

But what saith the answer of God unto him? I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

God assured him that he was not the only one left. God had a remnant of true believers in Israel who did not go after the false religion of Baal. It is like today when we look at many churches. It seems that the false gospels have completely overtaken them but God will leave a remnant of churches and believers faithful to Him. (Heb 13:5 KJV) Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. One of the ways that the Lord will not forsake us is that He will allow many Christians to remain faithful so those of like mind will not be alone in this wilderness of sin.

**Rom 11:5 (KJV)**

Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

Paul now speaks to the fact that in the time he was living that there were those who were saved through grace. Even though many had allowed themselves to be carried away with false teachings, there was a remnant in Israel at that time just like there was when Elijah was alive. It is this remnant that we see as God not forsaking. In Elijah's time, we saw that the "seven thousand" were "his people" whom He did not forsake. Even in modern Israel, there are many who are becoming saved, right in the midst of the prevailing false religion of Judaism, which is not founded upon the Hebrew Scriptures. This is just like many people in different countries are becoming saved in the midst of prevailing false religions.

**Rom 11:6 (KJV)**

And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

Here Paul points out the great differences between grace and works. He continues the thoughts from verse 5 that at present there is a remnant who is saved by grace. The works-grace battle has been going on for thousands of years but the bottom line is that works can never save anyone. What is presented here is an either/or situation. Either you are under a covenant of works as Israel was for many years or you are saved and under the covenant of Grace which means you have become saved. You are part of the seven thousand. However, if you insist on trying to keep the law, then you will not be under grace. The Judaizers which followed Paul had tried to get the people to keep the law while under grace. They added that and claimed that keeping the law of Moses was a necessary part of salvation and without it, one could not be saved.

**Rom 11:7 (KJV)**

What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded

This is a very pivotal verse in this discussion. Israel had attempted to please God by keeping the law and resting in the fact that they were the privileged nation to receive the law of God. However, God tells us here that all of Israel did not obtain what it had vehemently sought but only those who were the Elect of God within Israel received salvation and God had blinded the rest of them. So within ancient Israel, God had His Elect and those who were not Elect. Those who were not Elect were blinded to the truth of the Gospel. This is called Limited Atonement. This same situation takes place in every country around the world. Those who are the Elect of God will be part of the believing remnant while the rest will be blinded. This is the plan of God and must be embraced and not explained away with man's thoughts.

(John 12:39-40 KJV) Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, {40} He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

(Isa 6:9-10 KJV) And he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not. {10} Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed.

### **Rom 11:8 (KJV)**

(According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;) unto this day.

Here is a verse which is hated by those who hate God's salvation plan. Yes that's right, anyone who explains away these plain verses on limited atonement, hates the plan of God and attempts to restructure it according to their desires. Notice this verse says that God is the one who did not give some spiritual ears and eyes to see and hear the true Gospel. That blindness continued right into Paul's day and that blindness is easy to see as we read the history of Israel in the Scriptures. This is why God connects the apostasy in Elijah's time with the fact that He had a remnant of faithful called the seven thousand. God was letting us know that even during the times of the heaviest apostasy, there were those who were faithful to God. (Mat 24:24 KJV) For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. The Matthew verse teaches us that the Elect of God will never be so deceived that they cannot become saved. God's grace can penetrate the deepest apostasy and bring one of His own to salvation. This is why the Elect of God cannot be deceived to the point of being unable to be saved.

### **Rom 11:9 (KJV)**

And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompense unto them:

(Psa 69:22-23 KJV) Let their table become a snare before them: and that which should have been for their welfare, let it become a trap. {23} Let their eyes be darkened, that they see not; and make their loins continually to shake. In Psalm 69, David is remarking about the unsaved in Israel. The table, represents the sinners who are setting up a feast and David is saying that their good times should be turned into sorrow because of their hatred for him, being God's servant. The table does not necessarily only represent a feast of food but it can represent any type of preparation of sinners for some type of sin. Whenever anyone makes plans against a servant of God, they are in essence, making those plans against God

Himself. (Acts 22:8 KJV) And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest. Paul did not personally persecute Jesus but because he persecuted His followers, Jesus told him that he was ultimately persecuting Him. This is the great snare or trap which the unbeliever falls in. David even asks God to recompense their own evil back to them. One can never fight against God and think they can win, this is a great deception.

## Romans 11:10-18

### **Rom 11:10 (KJV)**

Let their eyes be darkened that they may not see, and bow down their back away.

David continues his imprecatory desires on the enemies who have persecuted him. Here he continues by praying that God would darken their eyes that they would not see the truth of the Gospel. He also states that they should be like those in servitude by bowing down their backs. For many years ancient Israel had opposed God, even when they were barely out of Egypt they already showed how stiff necked they were by building a golden calf and descending into idolatry. They had just witnessed the ten plagues and the destruction of the entire Egyptian army and yet their sinful desires had overtaken them like the Red Sea overtook the Egyptian army. David knew how stiff necked they were and was leaving them in God's hands to bear whatever justice God would dole out to them.

### **Rom 11:11 (KJV)**

I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.

So then Paul asks the cutting question. Did God allow them to fall so they become broken or fall into ruins? The answer is no but because of their rebellion against God, God then began to bring the true Gospel to the Gentiles of the world. This was done to provoke them to jealousy so Israel would see that the real blessings of God came through faith and not through the works of the law. Since God had divorced Israel, He now went to the world with the Gospel but that did not negate the promise that God made that there would be a remnant saved out of Israel.

### **Rom 11:12 (KJV)**

Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fullness?

When the Jews rejected their Messiah and was set aside by God, this opened the door for Gentile evangelism. This resulted in millions of Gentiles becoming saved. Now when any of the Jews became saved, they were now filled with the same Spirit and joy the Gentile believers were filled with and because they had the law, they now understood what the purpose of the law was and can come to a realization that nothing they could ever do, within the confines of the law, could ever save them. Once they came to know this, through salvation, their fullness would be exceeding great joy because all the promises that God made to Israel are fulfilled in the Lord Jesus Christ.

### **Rom 11:13 (KJV)**

For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office:

Paul now states that he is speaking to the Gentiles because even though he was a Jew, he was the apostle to the Gentiles. (Acts 13:46-47 KJV) Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold,

and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. {47} For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth. Paul magnifies or “glorifies” his office. Now he is not speaking of himself as Paul was a humble man but he speaks specifically of the office God gave him and the works which were accomplished through that office. Basically, what Paul is saying is that he honors the office that God gave him as he used it for the right purpose. Unfortunately, many have an office in the ministry and use it for the wrong purpose such as glorifying themselves instead of God. Paul did not do this as he was always aware that it was God's office given to him as a steward. (1 Cor 4:1-2 KJV) Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. {2} Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful. I don't think anyone can say that the apostle Paul was anything less than faithful.

### **Rom 11:14 (KJV)**

If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.

The word “emulation” carries with it the meaning of “making someone jealous.” By honoring and performing the duties of his office properly, that he might make his fellow countrymen, according to the flesh, jealous, to the point that the Lord would save some of them. Notice Paul did not say every one of them, but instead he looks for the promised remnant to be saved.

### **Rom 11:15 (KJV)**

For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?

Paul once again reiterates that because they were cast aside because of their rebellion and that casting aside had resulted in the salvation of millions of Gentiles. When a Jew becomes saved, it is like a resurrection which is life from the dead. The Jews who basked in the law did not understand, because of blindness, that the law was not leading them to salvation but to eternal death. So when one went from the law to grace, it was a resurrection from eternal death. Grace gives life to the dead. (Eph 2:5 KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

### **Rom 11:16 (KJV)**

For if the firstfruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.

(Num 15:19-21 KJV) Then it shall be, that, when ye eat of the bread of the land, ye shall offer up an heave offering unto the LORD. {20} Ye shall offer up a cake of the first of your dough for an heave offering: as ye do the heave offering of the threshingfloor, so shall ye heave it. {21} Of the first of your dough ye shall give unto the LORD an heave offering in your generations. Here Paul uses an example from the Heave offering. The idea behind this is that if the small amount of dough which was presented to God was holy, then the rest of the dough, out of which the small portion came, would also be holy. He also mentions a root being holy. If a root of a tree or some plant was holy, then it would follow that the rest of the entire tree or plant would be holy. It is possible that Paul had in mind the early patriarchs such as Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob as being the first part of the nation of Israel which was to come. Now the question remains, is Paul speaking of the physical nation of Israel or is he speaking of the eternal spiritual Israel? When bringing in the patriarchs, we must look at the eternal covenants which God made to Abraham and confirmed to Isaac and Jacob. The physical nation of Israel could not be holy in the sense of being saved in its entirety. The only ones

who were holy in ancient Israel were the ones who God chose for salvation, so the thread of the eternal covenant which God made with Abraham flowed through national Israel simultaneously with the covenant of works which was made at Sinai. Remember Romans 9:6 where Paul stated that not everyone in Israel was of Israel. This means that ancient Israel was really made up of two nations. The two nations were the saved and the unsaved. Those of the Covenant of Sinai and those of the eternal covenant that God made with Abraham.

### **Rom 11:17 (KJV)**

And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree;

Some of the branches broken off are those descendants of Abraham who were not saved or in the eternal covenant. Paul was just speaking about this in the previous verses. He then says to the Gentiles that they were like a wild olive tree. An Olive tree is normally cultivated to bear much fruit, so a young sprout is normally grafted into the tree. This is done by grafting the young sprout into a tree limb, but first the tree limb which is chosen is removed because it is a useless branch which cannot bring forth any fruit. So the branch is removed and the sprout is placed where the previous dead branch was. This would cause the young sprout to gain nourishment from the tree which is fed by the root. So here in this verse we see that the Gentiles were grafted into the body of Christ after God had broken off the branches, which was national Israel. The saved Gentiles would now be nourished by the root and the fatness of the olive tree which is a representation of the true Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. (Prov 28:25 KJV) He that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife: but he that putteth his trust in the LORD shall be made fat.

### **Rom 11:18 (KJV)**

Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

Paul now warns those Gentiles who have become saved that they should not boast in their salvation because God grafted them in after He set Israel aside. He tells them that it is not them who bears the root but it is the root, or the Gospel, that bears them. The Gospel is the one who sustains the true believer and it is never the true believer who sustains the Gospel. We are kept by the power of God and not by any power that we possess. (1 Pet 1:5 KJV) Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. Paul is telling these saved Gentiles that if they boast, it must be done properly. They must boast in the cross of Christ and give true testimony to the true Gospel and give glory to God. (Gal 6:14 KJV) But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

## Romans 11:19-27

### **Rom 11:19 (KJV)**

Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

In verse 18 Paul told the Gentiles not to boast or glory against the branches and here he continues his warning to the Gentiles. They may say that the branches were broken off to allow the Gentiles to be grafted in to the body of Christ. Just as the smaller trees were grafted into the larger trees, so each true believing Gentile is grafted into the larger body of Christ.



### **Rom 11:20 (KJV)**

Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear:

Paul says “well” in that he agrees with the statement that the branches were broken off so the Gentiles might be grafted in. However, he goes on to say that they were broken off because of unbelief. (Heb 4:6 KJV) Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: The Gentiles were grafted in by faith. Faith is what Israel had lacked. The Gentiles here are being warned not to be or act arrogantly against Israel. Paul wanted them to know that arrogance was not the right attitude because if these people remain unsaved, then they will be going to Hell for eternity, so pity is what was needed to be showed and not arrogance as if the Gentiles were the ones who saved themselves. They were to live in fear, not of eternal damnation, but that they offend God and God brings a chastisement upon them.

### **Rom 11:21 (KJV)**

For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.

God had brought judgments upon the nation of Israel which caused them to lose their spiritual position. Paul is warning anyone who thinks they are out of the realm of the chastising hand of God to beware. (1 Cor 10:11 KJV) Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. What happened to Israel was to serve as an example for us. God does not tolerate arrogance in His church or in His people. If we think we can get away with anything evil, we do not understand the true nature of God.

### **Rom 11:22 (KJV)**

Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

The word “severity” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “strict or cut.” Notice that Paul places “goodness” and “severity” of God as two opposite traits of God but are both definite traits of God. The nation of Israel, because of their unbelief, had experienced the strict nature of God concerning obedience. Those who became born again through the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ experienced the goodness of God in that the imputed righteousness of Christ was given to those Gentiles. It was as if, they had kept the law perfectly through the Lord Jesus Christ. In the last phrase of this verse it almost looks like if the Gentiles do not continue in the goodness of God, it seems like they can lose their salvation. This can never happen since God grants us eternal life. What is in view here is that God will begin pruning the branches of the tree. A corresponding principle to the above phrase is found in John 15:2: (John 15:1-2 KJV) I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. {2} Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. In this verse we see that if a Christian lives a fruitless, wanton life, God reserves the right to remove that branch. He will do so by physical death and that is how the arrogant Gentile can be cut off.

### **Rom 11:23 (KJV)**

And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again.

Those Israelites whom God will save will be grafted into the Body of Christ in the same manner as those Gentiles who have become saved. God is able to graft both Jew and

Gentile into the Body of Christ, for there is no respect of persons with God.

**Rom 11:24 (KJV)**

For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?

The unsaved Gentiles who were in opposition to God are able to become saved and grafted into the body of Christ which is totally opposite of the sinful ways of the world. The kingdom of Christ and the kingdom of Satan are two different kingdoms run on two different ideologies. God is able to take any unbeliever out of the kingdom of Satan and save them, and then transplant them into the kingdom of Christ. Then Paul states that the Israelites, who have had the teachings of God for 1,500 years, when they become saved, it is like being grafted back into their own natural environment, under the teaching of God. The Gentiles did not have the teaching of God and the Hebrew Scriptures which Israel did. The Gentiles had to learn the ways of the Lord and that is why Paul had his hands full with the churches since everything was new to the saved Gentiles.

**Rom 11:25 (KJV)**

For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

Paul now gives them a revealed mystery so they will not think of themselves as wiser than others. Israel was spiritually blinded, only in part, because there were many who were becoming saved, as God had promised that a remnant out of Israel would become saved. This blindness had opened the door for the Gentiles to come into the Kingdom of God. Paul states that this blindness not only allowed the Gentiles to come in, but they would come in until the last day, when the last one is saved who is to become saved.

**Rom 11:26 (KJV)**

And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

The word “so” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “in this manner” or “in this way.” Paul is stating that in this manner, all Israel shall be saved. What manner is that? Now many have erroneously interpreted this verse to mean that sometime in the future all of national Israel is going to be saved. This is a very fallacious interpretation because God is not giving salvation based on a race. The Israel that is going to be saved, is the entire body of Christ and not a physical nation. The body of Christ is an amalgamation of saved Gentiles and Jews. This is how the entire body of Christ is going to be saved. Below are some verses which teach that the Israel in view, is the body of Christ and not a physical nation.

(Gal 6:16 KJV) And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

(Phil 3:3 KJV) For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

(Rom 2:28-29 KJV) For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

(Rom 9:6 KJV) Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

(Gal 3:29 KJV) And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

(Eph 2:12 KJV) That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:

(Isa 45:17 KJV) But Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end.

The verse then goes on to say that the Deliverer will come out of Zion and drive ungodliness from Jacob. (Isa 59:20 KJV) And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the LORD. The Deliverer is the Lord Jesus Christ, also known as the Redeemer in Isaiah 59:20. Jacob is another term for the body of Christ because only those whom the Lord saves shall have ungodliness turned away in their lives. In other words, the Redeemer makes them clean. Zion is another term for the body of believers. (Psa 99:2 KJV) The LORD is great in Zion; and he is high above all the people.

### **Rom 11:27 (KJV)**

For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

Here Paul brings in the Abrahamic Covenant. The eternal covenant is the only one which saves people and removes their sin. God had made a covenant with the entire house of Israel that He was going to take away their sins. The Israel in view is not the physical nation of Israel but the body of Christ. (Jer 31:34 KJV) And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more. (Heb 8:12 KJV) For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. It is the body of Christ which has had their sins removed and not the physical nation of Israel.

## Romans 11:28-36

### **Rom 11:28 (KJV)**

As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sakes.

Paul now turns to the Gospel and tells them that Israel was the enemy of the Gospel. This is because they did not embrace the gospel of grace because they believed their salvation was secured by the keeping of the law. They did not understand that the truth of the Gospel came through the person of the Lord Jesus Christ. As enemies of the Gospel, God had broken them off as the branches so the Gentiles could be grafted in. Then Paul speaks of the election according to grace, which they are beloved because God had promised that He would save a remnant of Israel by Grace, which was according to the eternal covenants that He promised to Abraham and confirmed through Isaac and Jacob.

### **Rom 11:29 (KJV)**

For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

The word “repentance” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “irrevocable.” When God calls someone and grants them the gift of salvation, He does not change His mind and remove it for the slightest infraction. Here Paul is also alluding to the fact that God was calling and saving many Gentiles and the giving of salvation would not be rescinded, even while God was saving a remnant from Israel.

### **Rom 11:30 (KJV)**

For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:

In the past the Gentiles were mainly idol worshippers and caught up in the false religions. Now, God is grafting them into the Kingdom of God through the Lord Jesus Christ. This influx of saved Gentiles was the result of obtaining mercy because of the unbelief of Israel. These Gentiles will be coming into the Kingdom from every country in the world right up until the last day.

### **Rom 11:31 (KJV)**

Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.

Now because they have not believed the true Gospel but the Gentiles that have been coming into the Kingdom of God, are now able to show mercy to those Israelites by bringing them the Gospel. The Gentiles should not cut themselves off from the Jews but instead should be bringing them the Gospel so that the remnant of believers will continue to come out of darkness and be placed back into the tree in their natural environment.

### **Rom 11:32 (KJV)**

For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

Here is one of those verses which must be looked at carefully. The word “concluded” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “enclose or consign.” So we see that God has consigned the nation of Israel to unbelief. Then Paul goes on to say that God will have mercy upon all. Now He is not speaking of the entire nation of Israel because God has never saved an entire nation. His salvation plan is initiated one person at a time. God is going to have mercy on those that believe the Gospel. (Gal 3:22 KJV) But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. This is confirmed in the Galatians verse that we see that all are under sin but the promise of Faith is given to them believe. If you notice, it says that the promise is given and not asked for as in a free will Gospel.

### **Rom 11:33 (KJV)**

O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!

This epilogue is telling us that the riches of the wisdom and knowledge of God are very deep and that depth is absolutely unreachable by any finite person. The one who thinks that they can understand the ways of God will be deluded about other things as well. The words “finding out” in the Greek, carry with it the meaning of “untraceable, incomprehensible, and cannot be explored.” The word “unreachable” carries with it the meaning of “inscrutable.” Inscrutable means “not readily investigated, interpreted, or readily understood.”

### **Rom 11:34 (KJV)**

For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been his counsellor?

What human being on this earth could actually know the mind of the Lord. What finite being could be His equal to the point that they are able to counsel Him? Those who are saved are given the mind of Christ but while we are in these physical bodies, we will never have the full capacity of that mind. Even when we are in glory, our knowledge and understanding will never be equal to that of the Lord's.

### **Rom 11:35 (KJV)**

Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

(1 John 4:19 KJV) We love him, because he first loved us. No saved person on Earth has initiated their salvation. God is the one who has given salvation to a person. God is also the one who has given all the common gifts on this Earth to the entire human race. God gives the sun, He gives the rain, He gives the harvest, He gives us our families, etc. There is nothing that we have not received from God. (1 Cor 4:7 KJV) For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it? This principle is confirmed in 1 Corinthians 4:7, that it is God who has given all things and all we did was receive them. Therefore, it follows that God will not have to repay anything to any human being since everything we have initially came from God Himself.

### **Rom 11:36 (KJV)**

For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

God is the recipient of all the glory. No person can boast of anything they have. There is no such thing as a self-made millionaire. Were they able to create themselves? We as believers have received salvation from God, through Christ, and for Him. God is the source, the agency of administration of all things, and the definitive end of all things.

## Romans 12:1-7

### **Rom 12:1 (KJV)**

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

Beseech - Exhort

Present - Put at someone's disposal, offer, provide

Acceptable - Pleasing or well-pleasing

Reasonable - (logikos) Rational

Paul now exhorts the brethren, by the mercy of God, that they are to provide their bodies as a living sacrifice in the service of the Lord. Now when we think of a sacrifice, we think of one which is put to death. However, the Lord is stating here that since we are alive unto God, we are to remain in the service of the Lord as a living sacrifice. A living sacrifice here is one that gives themselves and of everything that they own for the purpose of the Kingdom of God. We are to withhold nothing when it comes to the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. The essence of a sacrifice is to give all. If you want to review the full surrender of a sacrifice, then read Leviticus chapters three and four. A sacrifice was not only killed but all the parts were separated from the body for other parts of the offering. When God speaks of us as living sacrifices, He is telling us that we are to give all. Not only are we to be sacrifices, but our sacrificial living is to be holy unto the Lord. Holiness in its root meaning means to be separated. Our sacrificial living must not be only before the eyes of men for a show but it must be a totally dedicated life. When we are living that holy life, then this is well-pleasing unto the Lord. Then the last phrase teaches us that holy,

sacrificial living is our reasonable or logical service which is the life of the believer. Holy living unto a holy God is the logical way of life for the true believer. God makes us holy through salvation and we are to exude that holiness in all phases of our life, not just the public portion. It would be illogical for someone to call themselves a Christian and live like the world.

### **Rom 12:2 (KJV)**

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

Conformed - Fashion yourselves

Transformed - To be changed in form

Renewing - Change or renovation from former way

Prove - To try, scrutinize, or examine

Paul continues the discourse from verse one and now he is exhorting the true believer not to be conformed or to fashion ourselves according to the ways of the world. The believer was saved out of the world and we are not to fashion ourselves once again in the ways of the world. This is done by living the holy life which Paul just mentioned in verse one. For the believer to be conformed to this world would be falsely exhibiting what took place upon salvation. When we became saved our souls were made alive unto God and therefore if we partake in the evil ways of the world, we are not showing the transformation which took place in our souls. Notice that our transformation is linked with the renewing of our mind because sin begins in the mind. Every time we have partaken in a sinful act, it was because we first thought of it and then acted out on that thought. When our mind is renewed, it is renewed because of salvation. When we were unsaved our minds were darkened with sin but now it is made light unto the glorious Gospel of salvation.

The renewing of our mind also serves another function according to this verse. With the renewed mind we will be able to scrutinize or to examine things to make sure that they are good according to the word of God. This way, when we can rightly discern what is good in the sight of God, then we know that it will be acceptable (well-pleasing) unto Him which leads to the perfect or completed will of God for our life. Whenever we allow our minds to be taken up with the things of the world, it obstructs the purity in which God desires in our life and that obstruction will cause us not to see the will of God for our life. (2 Cor 11:3 KJV) But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. The 2 Corinthians verse warns us that our minds can still be corrupted because of sin in our life and that too will obstruct the understanding of God's will for our life. Conforming to the world can render a believer inactive in the service of the Lord.

### **Rom 12:3 (KJV)**

For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

Now Paul begins a discourse which will deal with the spiritual gifts and he precedes this section by admonishing, through the eyes of salvation, that every Christian should not think of themselves too highly. The words "more highly" carries with it the meaning of "to be high minded." In other words, we cannot be the center of our lives which brings up a spirit of arrogance and self-importance which attempts to place us above other believers. Instead of us thinking more highly of ourselves, we need to think soberly. Soberly does not mean when we are not drunk instead it carries with it the idea of "to be of sound mind or sensible." None of us saved ourselves and we should never place ourselves above

anyone else. We need to think properly because God has given each member of the body of Christ a measure of faith according to the needs they will have to fulfill their ministry. That measure of faith corresponds to the talents and abilities God has given us but mainly to the spiritual gifts which He gives each Christian.

### **Rom 12:4 (KJV)**

For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

Now Paul begins to unveil why we are not to act arrogantly against other believers. Just as the human body contains many members such as arms, legs, heart, lungs, skin, fingers, toes, etc., each of the aforementioned body parts do not have the same function. For example, the toes keep us balanced but the fingers do not have that function. The lungs convert oxygen into the blood while the heart pumps the blood. So when we look at the human body and all its parts, both large and small, they do not have the same functions, yet they all work in concert with each other. Even though the parts are different, in the aggregate they are all vitally needed for the body to work in harmony.

### **Rom 12:5 (KJV)**

So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

Just like the human body has many parts which all make up the whole human body, every Christian is just like a body part. Each one may serve a different function, but in the aggregate we are all members of the body of Christ. As members of the body of Christ, we are all members of each other. If the fingers hurt, it sends a pain signal to the brain and alerts the rest of the body that something is wrong. When one person in the body of Christ suffers for the Kingdom, then all members are put on alert that we may also be called to suffer. The body of Christ is intricately woven as intimately as the human body is.

### **Rom 12:6 (KJV)**

Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith;

Here Paul begins a section on what is called the preparation gifts. These gifts prepares us for the ministry which God has for us. He starts off with the gift of the prophet. Before the completion of the Bible, God would commission special people to bring His messages to a group of people. For example, Isaiah prophesied to Judah and Jonah prophesied to Nineveh. Upon completion of the Bible, there are no longer any special people receiving any special revelations from God. God has given us His full revelation in the entire Bible. However, the gift of the Prophet did not go away. Instead of the Old Testament prophet bringing a special revelation, the New Testament prophet now declares the completed word of God from the Scriptures and not from any type of new revelation. The prophet is to bring the word according to the proportion of faith or it must be in accordance with the faith and not some wild prophetic nonsense. For these following spiritual gifts, I want to give some principles from a study I did on finding your spiritual gifts.

### **PROPHECY**

Definition: To speak forth, prophetic declarations, exhortations and warnings

Characteristics: Elijah

Scripture: 1 Kings 18

Vs 1 They are programmed to Scripture because they are motivated by Scripture. They are normally heard asking the question, "Where do you read that in the

Bible?"

Vs 18 Have a note of warning in their speech.

Vs 18 They will normally point out specific sins.

Vs 19 They normally will have a confrontational spirit.

Vs 19 They normally emphasize the judgment of God.

Vs 21 They offer black and white solutions.

Vs 22 They sometimes believe they are alone when it comes to understanding truth.

Vs 27 They seem to have an uncaring or caustic personality.

Vss 37-39 They usually bring people back to the Lord by fear.

Vs 46 There is always a sense of urgency in their life.

### **Rom 12:7 (KJV)**

Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching;

The gift of ministry is the gift of service. This could entail serving the body of Christ in any capacity where there is a need. It could be spiritual service or it could be physical service.

### **MINISTRY**

Definition: Service, Servant, or Attendance

Characteristics: Timothy

Scripture: Selected

Acts 17:15 A desire to serve others.

Acts 19:21-22 They are happy to follow orders and be support personnel.

1 Cor. 4:17 They are faithful servants.

1 Cor. 16:10 They have an inner joy serving others.

Phil. 2:20 They are fulfilled while serving others.

Phil. 2:21-22 They look for opportunities to serve others.

1 Thess. 3:6 They serve without complaining.

1 Tim. 1:2 They are happy to be disciples.

1 Tim. 1:18-20 They do not fear hindrances to God's work but view them as opportunities.

Philemon 1 The servant identifies with the teacher, master, or project at hand.

Then there is the gift of teaching where God gives this person the ability to dissect the word of God. They are normally happy being chained to their desk for hours of bible study and normally these people can bring to light things in the Scriptures which others may overlook.

### **TEACHING**

Definition: Instruction or Instructor

Characteristics: Luke

Scripture: Luke 1:1-4

### **VS**

1 A teacher holds back information until all pertinent material is in. (MANY HAVE TAKEN IN HAND)

2 A teacher is careful of their information sources. (Entire verse)

3 A teacher has an attitude of joy in doing research. (IT SEEMED GOOD TO ME)

3 A teacher realizes he is part of the body of Christ and does not hold sole interpretation. (TO ME ALSO)



3 A teacher will have optimum understanding of the material. (PERFECT UNDERSTANDING) ("perfect" denotes follow closely, trace, examine) The teacher does not accept another's teaching unless it completely harmonizes in the entire Bible.

3 A teacher is concerned with all facts and details. (OF ALL THINGS)

3 A teacher is happy to be chained to a desk for many hours. (TO WRITE)

3 A teacher personalizes the Scriptures for daily living. (UNTO THEE)

3 The teacher has the desire to deliver truth in a systematic way. (IN ORDER) "Order" means in succession or consecutive order.

4 The teacher is concerned that their hearers understand. (THAT THOU MIGHTEST KNOW)

4 The teacher teaches with absolutes. (THE CERTAINTY OF THOSE THINGS)  
 "Certainty" means firmness, steadfastness, stability

4 The teacher takes previously written material, tests it by Scripture and either clarifies it or rejects it. (WHEREIN THOU HAST BEEN INSTRUCTED)

## Romans 12:8-14

### **Rom 12:8 (KJV)**

Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

### **EXHORTATION**

Definition: Comfort, Entreat, To call to one, Call near, or Call for.

Characteristics: Paul

Scripture: Selected

Romans 6:6-7 & 11-13 - The Exhorter desires to give precise steps of action in stimulating a believer to growth.

1 Corinthians 1:10 - The Exhorter takes a person at the point of where they are and encourages them to grow.

2 Corinthians 7:3 - The Exhorter does not condemn but makes no excuse for sin either.

Galatians 3:1 - The Exhorter counsels on a personal basis and avoids programmed procedures.

Philippians 1:12 - The Exhorter sees tribulation as a method of spiritual growth.

Colossians 1:9-12 - The Exhorter desires to see the Christian reach their maximum spiritual potential.

Colossians 1:28 - The Exhorter sees the full potential of every believer.

1 Thessalonians 2:8-9 - The Exhorter stays with someone until they are restored.

Then Paul lists the gift of Giving and notice he connects the gift with simplicity. The word "simplicity" carries with it the meaning of "generosity or purity." Those who have the true gift of giving do not give with ulterior motives for gain. They are concerned with getting the true Gospel out to the world. Their motives for giving are pure and it doesn't matter whether they get a tax deductible receipt or not because they care for the propagation of the Gospel.

### **GIVING**

Definition: Share or Impart

Characteristics: Matthew

Scripture: Book of Matthew

Matthew must have had the gift of giving since he penned many principles of handling money in the book named after him.

### TITHING DOES NOT MEAN YOU HAVE THE GIFT OF GIVING!

- 5:42 - The Giver has inward joy giving to those who have need.
- 5:46-47 - The Giver does not expect nor require a pay back.
- 6:1-4 - The Giver desires to give in secret.
- 6:19-20 - The Giver has the ability to make wise investments.
- 6:24 - The Giver views money as a vehicle not a goal.
- 6:25 - The Giver is satisfied with the basic necessities of life.
- 7:6 - The Giver is very cautious where they invest their money.
- 10:8 - The Giver sees the money in their possession as God's and He has the right to claim it for His needs.
- 10:9 - The Giver is frugal.
- 10:38 - Sacrificial giving is a way of life for the Giver.
- 13:46 - The Giver has the ability to make wise purchases.
- 16:26 - The Giver does not have an inward desire to stash away the Lord's money in worldly investments. If they do, It is in short term investments for easier access and no penalties.
- 18:8-9 - The Giver may rebuke a cheap Christian.

---

Then he speaks of the gift of ruling. "Ruling" carries with it the meaning of "taking the lead." The ruler is to rule with diligence. "Diligence" carries with it the meaning of "effort, earnestness, or zeal." The ruler is not to be a lazy self-serving individual but is to be one who is concerned for the organization which God has entrusted them to lead.

### RULING

Definition: Preside or Set Over

Characteristics: Solomon

Scripture: Selected

- 1 Kings 3:8-9 - The Ruler sees himself as a servant with no self-ambitions.
- 1 Kings 3:23-28 - The Ruler is able to make wise and discerning judgments.
- 1 Kings 4:1-19 - The Ruler has the ability to delegate authority.
- 1 Kings 5:5 - The Ruler can see the big picture and results of a major project.
- 1 Kings 5:6,13 - The Ruler can see what is needed to complete the task at hand.
- 1 Kings 5:8,12 - The Ruler can deal rightly with other leaders.
- 1 Kings 5:14 - The Ruler has the ability to assign the right people to the right tasks.
- 1 Kings 6:38-7:1 - The Ruler has the desire to tackle and accomplish many tasks.
- 2 Chronicles 2:9 - The Ruler is a planner and a schedule keeper.
- 2 Chronicles 7:4-5 - The Ruler identifies himself with his people in a given task.
- Proverbs 22:13 - The Ruler abhors excuses by lazy people.

---

Then Paul introduces the gift of Mercy. The person with the gift of mercy is one who helps other people and does not do it grudgingly but with joy in their heart that they are fulfilling God's plan for their life.

### MERCY

Definition: To have the desire of relieving the miserable or to have pity upon by actually relieving them.

Characteristics: Apostle John

Scripture: The Gospel of John

John must have had the gift of mercy as he wrote much about merciful acts, plus he was the disciple whom Jesus trusted to care for his earthly mother. It is interesting to note that Jesus had earthly brothers and sisters yet John was given the task to care for Mary.

3:30 - Mercy puts the needs of others before their own needs.

4:9 - Mercy does not care if the person that needs help is an enemy.

4:14 - Mercy understands the deeper needs of others.

5:6 - Mercy will attach themselves to the poor and helpless, in both material and spiritual areas.

5:8-9 - Mercy will remain with a person until healing or improvement happens.

6:15 - Mercy tends to shy away from public ministry or life.

6:26 - Mercy may become a mark for their sympathetic virtues.

7:3-4 - Mercy may be misunderstood that they are seeking notoriety.

9:2-3 & 6-7 - Mercy is more concerned about healing than cause.

11:35 - Mercy identifies with the sorrow someone is feeling.

11:36 - Mercy builds deeper friendships than normal.

18:10-11 - Mercy may rebuke people who cause pain.

### **Rom 12:9 (KJV)**

Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.

Paul not exhorts the believers to have love without dissimulation. The word “dissimulation” carries with it the meaning of “without hypocrisy or insincerity.” We are to love the brethren without any hypocrisy, in other words, our love must be without any designs of self-gain. (Jude 1:16 KJV) These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage. The unbelievers feign love and admiration for the purpose of self-gain and the believer is to love with pure motives. Then Paul goes on to say that we must abhor anything which is evil. That word “abhor” means to “detest or denounce” anything which is evil. Then he uses an interesting word concerning the good. He states that we are to “cleave” to that which is good. The word “cleave” is normally used in reference to the marriage relationship where a man is to cleave to his wife when he leaves his parents. When we become saved we are to cleave to that which is good and we are to abhor the evil that we were saved out of. As a man cleaves to his wife, we must cleave to that which is good and holy. The word “cleave” carries with it the meaning of “cling to or join oneself to.” We are to join ourselves to the good and detest those things of evil.

### **Rom 12:10 (KJV)**

Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another;

Paul here uses a term found only once in the New Testament, it is “kindly affectioned” which carries with it the meaning of “tenderly loving or loving dearly.” Since the body of Christ is a body plus it is a family, he uses the words “brotherly love.” He also tells us that we are to honor the brethren and put them ahead of us. Preferring carries with it the meaning of “going before.” It is a very hard thing to do to seek the betterment of other Christians before ourselves. (Phil 2:4 KJV) Look not every man on his own things, but every

man also on the things of others. The Philippians verse teaches us that we are not just to look out for our own lives but we need to look after the things of others. In other words, I am to be my brother's keeper and watch out for things of those people whom God brings into my life, whether they be of physical or spiritual nature.

### **Rom 12:11 (KJV)**

Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord;

The Christian should never be lazy. There is a time to rest but there is a time to work. (Ecc1 9:10 KJV) Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest. If a Christian holds a secular job, then they are to the best they can be at that job. The word "fervent" carries with it the meaning of "to boil or to be impassioned." The Christian must have a great zeal in serving the Lord. Our service to the Lord also includes our job but it does not stop there. We are to be actively involved in some phase of the ministry since we just read that God gives spiritual gifts to every Christian and those gifts are not to remain dormant. (2 Tim 1:6 KJV) Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands. The words "stir up" carries with it the meaning of "fan into flames." The spiritual gift that God gave us is to be used in the service of the Lord. This is why we are to be very fervent or impassioned in service to the Lord Jesus Christ. Laziness should never be once named among the Christians. If the cults can find time to go pound on doors, how much more can Christians do since we are in the power of the Lord and not our own.

### **Rom 12:12 (KJV)**

Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer;

(Rom 8:24 KJV) For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? We are to rejoice in hope. As Christians we look forward to the return of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Bible refers to it as the Blessed Hope. (Titus 2:13 KJV) Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; While we are rejoicing in the hope of the Lord's return to earth, we will suffer tribulation and while we suffer tribulation, we are to be patient or enduring in that suffering, knowing that it will come to an end when the Lord returns. As we continue in the tribulation of these present days, we are to continue instant in prayer. The words "continue instant" carries with it the meaning of "steadfastly continuing." Our prayer life is vital as we face an increase of satanic activity in these final days. We pray that God may guide us into all truth and to give us the wisdom to elude the clutches of the Devil's work and workers, who pawn themselves off as ministers of righteousness. (Prov 22:3 KJV) A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished. We pray that God gives us the spiritual eyes to see the evil so we will not become snared.

### **Rom 12:13 (KJV)**

Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.

Here we are told that we are to help those Saints who have physical needs. Now this does mean we try to fulfill their wants but we minister to their needs. If they need food, we buy food. If they need help with their bills, then we give them money. The Saints of God should be hospitable. The word "hospitality" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of a "guest room." We need to care for the downtrodden Saints of God as if they were staying in our homes in a guest room. When we have visitors to our home, we place them in a guest room and then tend to their needs as long as they are visiting. It is a shame that many Christians do not see this as a vital ministry. Sometimes we think that God will only bless us if we send money to missions overseas. This is a false notion because we meet needs

wherever we are and that is what garners the favor of the Lord. Too many churches and Christians look beyond the needs of those who are standing right there beside them.

### **Rom 12:14 (KJV)**

Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not.

This is a small verse but is probably the hardest thing to do. When we are being persecuted, our first reaction may be to fight back but the Lord is telling us that we need to bless our persecutors. (Mat 5:44 KJV) But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; This is because they are really persecuting the Lord and not us. It is God they hate, not us. (Acts 22:7 KJV) And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? Saul was persecuting Christians but the Lord told him that he was ultimately persecuting the Lord through His children's suffering. As hard as it may be, we must persevere in persecution and the Lord will deal with these people who persecute on the last day. There is also a principle here. The one who is doing the persecuting may be a future child of God and if we attack them, we may be attacking a predestined brother or sister.

Romans 12:15-21

### **Rom 12:15 (KJV)**

Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.

Here we are encouraged to be with those who suffer loss in their life. Many times when people are suffering, they are left alone to suffer when it is at that time they can really use some comfort. We are also told to rejoice with those who are happily rejoicing. If a brother or sister receives a major blessing in their life, we should rejoice with them and not make them feel as if they don't deserve it or for us to be jealous and think that we could make better use of it. No matter what situation a brother or sister is in, we need to be there for them to the best of our ability.

### **Rom 12:16 (KJV)**

Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.

We must treat all the brothers and sisters in the body of Christ equally. If one has more earthly goods than another, it is not a reason that we should find them more appealing. We must not look at those who may be wealthier as some kind of special people as God sees all His children as equal. Those who have less than others does not mean they have incurred some kind of judgment from God. It means that the will of God for each believer may be different and one may need much material goods to effect that will, while another may not need as much to effect the will of God in their life. We are not to be wise in earthly thinking because in doing so, we may inadvertently prejudice ourselves against those Christians who seem to have much less and this we do not want to do. The world determines the value of a person by how much material goods they have. In Christianity, we see that every Christian is valued by God, no matter how much or how little they possess, and that is how we need to view other believers. In my life, I have found that those who have little seem to be the most solid and likeable Christians who stick by their friends.

### **Rom 12:17 (KJV)**

Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

When someone does something evil to us, our first desire may be to get even but the Bible is teaching us here that we are not to recompense (render) evil for evil. If we return evil, then we are showing that we are no better than the person who doled out the initial attack against us. It does not show the transformation that took place in our souls plus it does not show that there is a difference between our former life and our present new life. By not rendering evil for evil, we are showing in all honesty that we have been changed by the Spirit of God who indwells us.

### **Rom 12:18 (KJV)**

If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

God knows that in this fallen world that there are going to be those people that no matter how hard we try, will never want to live in peace with us. God tells us here as best as we can do, to live in peace. At least from our end we are not to fan any flames of evil or vengeance. If attacks come from other people, they are to be unprovoked attacks because we must live in peace with those around us. We must never suffer as an evildoer or give grounds to others to accuse of being an evildoer.

### **Rom 12:19 (KJV)**

Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.

Here is God giving us assurance that those who cause us grief in this world will be dealt with at the Great White Throne Judgment. We cannot exact our own vengeance because they may be a future child of God and only He knows who they are. So for us, we must let God take vengeance on those who attack his children.

(2 Th 1:6-9 KJV) Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; {7} And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, {8} In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: {9} Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

So for now until the last day, we are to see these attacks as part of the tribulation of this life. (John 16:33 KJV) These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. When we commit the evil acts that people do against us to the Lord, then there will be a rush of peace which will permeate our lives. We bring great anxiety on ourselves if we attempt to plot and execute plans of revenge.

### **Rom 12:20 (KJV)**

Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

We must define who our enemy is. The enemy of the Christian is every unbeliever in the world. There are only two kingdoms in this world, the Kingdom of God and the Kingdom of Satan. The saved belong to God's Kingdom and the unsaved belong to Satan's Kingdom. So if our enemy hungers or thirsts, then we are to give them food and drink. Now what food and what drink are we to give them? Is it physical food? Well, yes we can give them physical food and drink if they need it but is that what is in view here? The key to understanding this is the phrase about the coals. I have heard it said that if we feed and give drink to our enemies, then that will make them so angry it will be like coals of fire. That is nonsensical interpretation.

(Prov 25:21-22 KJV) If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread to eat; and if he be thirsty, give him water to drink: {22} For thou shalt heap coals of fire upon his head, and the LORD shall reward thee.

(Isa 6:6-7 KJV) Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: {7} And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.

Notice in Proverbs 25, we see that if we feed and give drink to the enemy, then the Lord will reward us. The key to understanding the idea of the reward is found in Isaiah 6:6-7. Notice Isaiah was receiving his commission and we see an angel took a live coal from the altar and laid it on the mouth of Isaiah. Then what was the result of that coal on Isaiah's mouth? We read that his iniquity was taken away and his sin purged. This is the language of salvation. The coals of fire is the Gospel. We are to give the Gospel to those who are our enemies, namely, the unbelievers. In Romans 12:20 we read that it is like heaping coals of fire on their head.

If a person becomes saved, then they too, like Isaiah, will have their iniquity taken away and their sins purged. (Psa 103:12 KJV) As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. Now to the subject of the reward. (1 Cor 3:14 KJV) If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. What is the only work which will abide or continue on into eternity? It will be the salvation of a person. So the reward we gain is the soul of that person who became saved. If they do not become saved, then we suffer loss and that loss will be the time, effort, and material goods which we put into that witness but we never know who God is going to save. Sometimes we may witness to a person and then years go by and we never see them again and then when we get to Glory, we will see them, and this is why we are never to say that a certain person will never become saved.

### **Rom 12:21 (KJV)**

Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

Here the chapter concludes with simple but excellent counsel. That we must never allow evil to overcome us. We must always remain astute so we will know if we are being drawn into a situation whereby we may be overcome of evil. The other side is that we are to overcome evil with good. When we are attacked for being a Christian, then we must not return those attacks but allow the good in us through the power of God to overcome that evil with the goodness of God. We must also not get ourselves into a situation which is ruled by sin for we can be overcome quickly by it since we still have physical bodies which lust after sin.

Romans 13:1-7

### **Rom 13:1 (KJV)**

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

Paul continues the thread from chapter 12. One of the reasons that we are not to attempt to take vengeance for ourselves is that God has ordained national governments to oversee the population of each country. We are instructed in this verse that we are to be subject or submit ourselves to the government which God has raised up over us. We are

also told here that there is no government of any country, state, province, or city that is not ordained or appointed by God. Many times we wonder at this when we think of governments such as Hitler, Stalin, or even Idi Amin. How could God allow such governments to exist? We must remember that we live in a fallen world and God works His perfect will, even through evil, wicked rulers. The Kingdom of God is not subject to earthly rule. (Gal 5:22-23 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, {23} Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. However, because we, as believers, still live in this present world, as citizens of a country, are subject to the laws of that country.

### **Rom 13:2 (KJV)**

Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.

This is also an interesting verse since we are told here that if we resist the power, then we are resisting the government that God set up. The first word "resisteth" carries with it the meaning of "setting oneself against." Citizens who set themselves against their governments, are in essence, resisting the authority of God. Now the question comes up, what about a tyrannical government? Well, same situation exists. If God has allowed a tyrannical government to exist, then the citizens are to obey the laws of that government. When the Lord Jesus Christ was on earth, He was born under the Roman Empire. Christ did not go around fostering rebellion against Rome, instead He was subject unto their laws because He knew that all earthly governments are ordained of God.

(John 19:10-11 KJV) Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee? {11} Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.

Jesus told Pilate rightly that he had no authority at all except for the authority which God gave him. Now also in this verse we must understand that if the earthly government makes laws which are contrary to the laws of God, then the Christian is under no obligation to keep them. (Acts 5:29 KJV) Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. For example, in China if a woman has two children and she becomes pregnant again, the government can force her to have an abortion. Abortion is murder and therefore is against the law of God, so Christians are not to murder so they will attempt to disobey that law in obedience to God's law. In the United States, we have something called the Federal Reserve and it was formed in 1908 by a private banking cartel and ratified illegally in 1913.

In 1914 the Internal Revenue Service was formed as the collection agency for the Federal Reserve. The Federal Reserve creates money out of thin air and then loans it into existence and charges interest. This is why we have serial wars so the government can keep borrowing from the Federal Reserve and continue to pump up the national debt. Resulting from the Federal Reserve, the United States went bankrupt in 1938. Both the IRS and the Federal Reserve are illegal, unconstitutional organizations in which the President of the United States can disband at a moment's notice. Today about 40% of all income goes to the illegal Federal Reserve. Yet, in this country, despite Satan's attempt to bankrupt the funding of the gospel, God has allowed enough money to be printed so that the Gospel can be well-funded. This verse also teaches that Christians should not be terrorists or anarchists.

### **Rom 13:3 (KJV)**

For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the



power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same:

#### Terror - Fear

The judicial authority of government is to wield its God-given authority not to those who do good works or who are good citizens. It is to come down on those who break the civil laws such as organized crime, murderers, bank robbers, drug dealers, or any such infraction of the civil laws. A good citizen is one who fears the power of the government, not because they would be wrong in opposing a bad law but because they are Christians who do not want to tarnish the testimony of Christ in their life. How many of us feel a little intimidated when we are driving and a police car is behind us? We may have done nothing wrong but we feel like we have. We are told here that we should be good citizens and we should not break the law, and by doing that we will get praise for being good citizens. The word "praise" carries with it the meaning of "commendation or approbation." This praise means that if we obey the law, then the law will allow us to live a life in peace within the borders of our country.

#### **Rom 13:4 (KJV)**

For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

Minister - Servant

Revenger - Avenger

The law is the minister or servant of God which is designed to preserve society and make a peaceful existence for those who obey the laws. This is what good the law does by weeding out those criminals who make the streets dangerous. In 1934, I am sure the people of the Midwest were happy when John Dillinger, Baby Face Nelson, Pretty Boy Floyd, and others were finally killed by the authorities. They would rob and even kill innocent people, even though they came off as Robin Hood types. They were anything but because they stole people's money and killed without conscience. The authorities do not bear the sword in vain because of sin, there is always somebody who is disobeying the laws and committing crimes which affect all of us. In Genesis, we are told that if man sheds blood then he is to give his own blood, in other words, capital punishment is ordained of the Lord. Now since He doesn't send lightning bolts to do this, He ordains government to fulfill the duty of bringing the lawless to justice. Of course, even though they pay a temporal penalty here on earth, like jail, if any of them remain unsaved, they will pay the ultimate penalty of eternal damnation after the judgment of God. It must also be understood that tyrannical governments that persecute Christians will be accountable to God also. They cannot use their titles and positions to persecute innocent people. They will face the ultimate Judgment of God and will be cast into the same place as those who broke the laws of their land.

#### **Rom 13:5 (KJV)**

Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

Since the government is to be a servant of God on earth, it is necessary then that Christians are to be in obedience to those who do not oppose the laws of God. We are not to obey the laws of the land just because of judicial penalty being held over us but as a matter of conscience toward God. Our Christian testimony must also be considered whenever we wish to do something. We do not want to have our testimony blemished. So judicial penalty is something to fear but loss of testimony for a Christian is also something to fear. A minister friend of mine once told me that he is afraid to play the lottery. He was

not concerned about losing his money, he was concerned about winning, and that would ruin his testimony. He is concerned for conscience sake.

### **Rom 13:6 (KJV)**

For for this cause pay ye tribute also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

For the protection of the people, the government must have money to operate law enforcement because in this world nothing comes cheap or for free. Therefore, government has the right to collect a proper amount of taxes from the people to be able to fund their protection. Taxes are not to be levied on the public by out of control politicians who refuse to hold their spending. In the United States alone, the illegal Federal Reserve sucks \$300 billion dollars a year out of the U.S. economy. This is illegal taxation and tribute. These people who run the private Federal Reserve and the government officials who sanction its continued existence are going to give an account to God for their thievery, for the Bible teaches: (Exo 20:15 KJV) Thou shalt not steal. They have been stealing from the American People since 1913. They think they are above the law, but they are not above God's law.

### **Rom 13:7 (KJV)**

Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.

In all that was spoken to the Christians concerning obedience to proper civil government, we are to pay legitimate taxes for the running of the government. Custom in this verse is something which is used for the public good. For example, we have departments of public works in our cities who pick up garbage, who clean the streets, does repairs to roads, etc. The word "custom" carries with it the meaning of "end" which is something spent for the use of the public. Taxes are collected to keep local governments operational but the money collected must be returned to the public in the final form of services, such as I listed. Then we are to fear whom fear is due, and that is to fear the Lord first but we are to fear the authorities and allow that fear to be a basis for obedience. Remember, we fear not only the judicial penalties of breaking the law but we fear the loss of our Christian testimony. Then we give honor to those in public office. If the person in office is dishonest, then we give honor to the office itself. Whether it is a President, Prime Minister, Senator, or Governor, either the office or the person in the office receives the honor.

## Romans 13:8-14

### **Rom 13:8 (KJV)**

Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

We are not to be indebted to anyone if possible. If we make a commitment, then we are to fulfill that commitment. If we have a debt to the state, then we are to fulfill that debt. No matter what debt we have to any person, we must fulfill that debt as best as we can. What we are to really owe is love, in other words, we want the highest good for all those we come in contact with. That is, we give them the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ for that is the highest good that we can bestow on anyone, even if they are hostile to it. (James 2:8 KJV) If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: By loving each other, we have fulfilled the royal law.

### **Rom 13:9 (KJV)**

For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

These commandments are those which affect our horizontal relationships with each other. We are not to desire nor enact anything which may cause harm to those around us and that includes those we work with and those we live with and those we come into contact with the rest of the time. By loving our neighbor as ourselves, we are saying that we want the best for them as we want the best for ourselves. We treat them as good as we treat ourselves. When we do that in all honesty, then we are fulfilling the law of God.

### **Rom 13:10 (KJV)**

Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

ill - Evil

Jesus was asked the question in the following verse: (Luke 10:29 KJV) But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? This verse is taken from the discourse on the good Samaritan. The Samaritan came across a man who was beaten and robbed, so he took him to an inn so he could heal and paid the bill for his stay there. The Samaritan did not know who that man was but he took care of him as if he was his best friend. The answer to the question of who our neighbor is, is anyone who God brings across our path. To widen the meaning without doing harm to the interpretation, our neighbor is everybody on planet Earth. We must never desire any evil on anyone we know or that we don't know, because remember what Paul said a few verses back in Chapter 12, vengeance belongs to the Lord and if there is any repayment, He will do it according to perfect knowledge, something we do not possess.

### **Rom 13:11 (KJV)**

And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

Here we are given a stern warning here about knowing the time. What time does he speak of? He speaks of the lateness of the hour and the soon return of the Lord Jesus Christ. Instead of people attempting to fight each other, they need to start getting serious concerning the timing of the Lord's return and know that it is soon. It is about 2,000 years since Paul penned those words under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit and looking at the situation around us, we can be sure that the signs of the Lord's return are being fulfilled at a rapid rate. The word "knowing" carries with it the meaning of "understanding or recognizing." (1 Chr 12:32 KJV) And of the children of Issachar, which were men that had understanding of the times, to know what Israel ought to do; the heads of them were two hundred; and all their brethren were at their commandment. As the men of Issachar had understanding of their times, as Christians we must also have an understanding of the perilous times we live in. Every day brings us closer to the return of the Lord and that means the recompensing of judgment on those who have caused us trouble. (2 Th 1:6 KJV) Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you;

### **Rom 13:12 (KJV)**

The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

We are being told here that the night is far spent and it is almost dawn. That is how close the Lord's return is according to Scripture. (Jer 8:20 KJV) The harvest is past, the summer is ended, and we are not saved. Jeremiah made the same allusion by stating that harvest is past and summer is ended and we are not saved. Instead of us fighting among ourselves or trying to exact vengeance on those who have caused us grief, we must get busy being about the Lord's work in getting the Gospel out. Exacting vengeance in the flesh is the work of darkness plus it diverts us from the task we have at hand of evangelizing the whole world. Notice it also tells us that we need the armor of light to put off the deeds of darkness. We find the armor of God in Ephesians 6. (Eph 6:11 KJV) Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. Wiles means "schemes or methods." One of the methods that Satan uses to divert the body of Christ is to engender as much infighting as he can. If the soldiers fight among themselves, then they will not pay attention when the enemy gains more ground.

### **Rom 13:13 (KJV)**

Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

Honestly - Becomingly

Chambering - Sexual indulgence

Wantonness - Unbridled lust, lasciviousness

Here we are told that because of the lateness of the hour, we must act according to who we are, redeemed not unsaved. (1 John 2:18 KJV) Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. John tells us that it is the last hour which means the return of Christ is imminent and because of this we are to walk in the day. The Bible portrays believers as walking in light and the unbeliever walking in darkness. (1 John 1:6-7 KJV) If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: {7} But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. Instead of us partaking in the carnal pleasures of the world, we need to start acting like Christians and getting busy in the things of the Lord because of the lateness of the hour.

### **Rom 13:14 (KJV)**

But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

Putting on the Lord Jesus Christ is reference to walking in the Spirit. This began at the moment of regeneration and continues day by day through sanctification. (Rom 8:6 KJV) For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. We are not provide things for the flesh which will cause us to resurrect those lusts we had in the old days. There are many who claim that is permissible for a Christian to drink but here we are told not to provide for the flesh which could lead to a sinful life. Alcohol is one of the major doors of providing for the flesh because it ministers to the flesh and not the Spirit. Whatever causes us to sin is to be completely avoided. In verse 13 we are told that we must walk according to our regeneration and not according to the world. If we start providing things for the flesh it can lead to those sins listed in verse 13 which we are to avoid at all costs.

Romans 14:1-8

### **Rom 14:1 (KJV)**

Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations.

This verse is addressed to those who are more mature in the faith that we are to receive those who are weak or better yet, those who do not fully understand or are still on the milk of the word. We are to accept these brethren in the faith since they are also blood bought Christians and there are always going to be Christians on different spiritual levels. We are to receive these brethren so we may help mature them in the faith. The word “receive” carries with it the meaning of “take along or take aside.” We must always remember that one time we were all weak in the faith and somebody was there to help mature us. Now we are not to accept them so we may judge the thoughts and intents of their hearts since God is the only one who can know this. Therefore, it behooves us to accept them with the purpose of helping them grow in the faith and to help them avoid erroneous teaching. New Christians are always vulnerable to false teachings and that is where the maturity of seasoned believers come in to help steer them to the correct teachings.

### **Rom 14:2 (KJV)**

For one believeth that he may eat all things: another, who is weak, eateth herbs.

There are always going to be differing opinions in Christianity. Here we read that some will believe it is okay to eat any kind of foods. There were certain foods listed in the law that were considered unclean and Jews were forbidden from eating those foods. When the Lord saved some of them, they then realized that because of Grace they no longer had to keep the dietary laws and were able to eat those things which were formerly considered unclean. Then there are those who believed that God placed those unclean animals in the law for a reason and now it could be considered for our health. As we have today, some believe it is okay to eat meat while some will avoid meat and eat only vegetables and fruits. So the diets of Christians should never be a cause of contention between Christians. If one chooses to eat meats or if one chooses to eat only vegetables, each group is just as blood bought as the other.

### **Rom 14:3 (KJV)**

Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

Therefore, since the dietary laws no longer are in effect, except for health reasons, then neither group should condemn the other for their diets. God has accepted both groups based on the merits of the Lord Jesus Christ and not on the actions related to their diets. Some of the weaker Christians were probably still obeying the dietary laws in the law and this may have become a bone of contention in the Roman church. So what is being said here is that all Christians, no matter what diet they eat, are all accepted on the merit of the Lord Jesus Christ. This must have been a divisive issue in the Roman church because the word “despise” carries with it the meaning of “disdain or make of no account.” This problem may have split the Roman church if it wasn’t halted in its early stages.

### **Rom 14:4 (KJV)**

Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand.

Here a cutting question is asked about who are thou to judge another’s servant? This question was not asked for the purpose of helping the other Christian but it was asked because the contention was probably so great that severe condemnations were probably being leveled at each group by the other group. Paul is making the statement here that if God’s servants are wrong in their diets, then God will bring them the truth and will mature

them in this area. Obviously, the same situation occurred here as it did in Corinth. Christians may have been buying foods that were dedicated to false gods and since the Bible teaches that false gods are no gods, many were eating without conscience. Yet, the conscience of the opposite group was being affected which probably caused the division. Paul is stating here that God is in control and will remedy the situation with His own servants. Each servant stands before his master and before him the servant will either fall or stand. If the child of God falls, then God is able to restore him and cause him to stand once again.

#### **Rom 14:5 (KJV)**

One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind.

We see this situation in our own time. There are Christians who celebrate Christmas and Easter, and there are those Christians who will not partake in them because they deem them pagan holidays. If a person is persuaded about something in their mind properly according to the Scriptures, then unless they can be biblically refuted, then they should be left alone in their beliefs. Whether a Christian celebrates Christmas or they do not, should not be a point of contention which can lead to a major division in the church or in individual lives.

#### **Rom 14:6 (KJV)**

He that regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks.

Let us continue the thought from verse 5. A Christian who celebrates Christmas and Easter may do so for the purpose of using it as a testimony of the Gospel because these are the only two times in a year that unbelievers become a little religious and Christians can capitalize on it by using these days as evangelistic tools. The ones who do not celebrate them, may tell others that these are pagan festivals and that Christians should not celebrate anything linked to pagan festivals. Do you see how both views can be used to the glory of God? That is why there should be no divisions in the body over these matters since both sides can capitalize on them for witnessing purposes. It is the same thing with food, there are Christians who eat questionable foods yet see it as coming from the hand of the Lord and therefore they are thankful for those provisions. The one who is weak continues to eat the herbs and gives thanks for those herbs since he knows that is from the hand of God that those herbs come from. The one who does not eat certain foods, does not eat those foods unto the Lord. In other words, as the one who eats those questionable foods eats them unto the Lord, those who do not eat those questionable foods are not eating them unto the Lord. If there is a steak and a vegetable platter on the table and two Christians approach that table, one who eats steak will take the steak but the one who eats vegetables will take the vegetable platter. So if I believe that we should not be eating meat, then I would not be eating the steak unto the honor of the Lord. There is obedience in both camps in the realm of food.

#### **Rom 14:7 (KJV)**

For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

Here is a statement directed specifically at the believer. Since we are the redeemed of Christ, none of us live our lives independent of Christ and none of us die independent of Christ. Sometimes we may think we are our own entities but that does not coincide with what the Scriptures teach. We belong to Christ both in life and in death. There is no such thing as an autonomous Christian.

**Rom 14:8 (KJV)**

For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's.

If we continue to live in this world, then while we are here we belong to the Lord Jesus Christ. If we die, we die unto the Lord Jesus Christ. So no matter how you view it, we belong to Christ both in life and in death. That means we are His totally in every situation, every moment of the day.

**Romans 14:9-16****Rom 14:9 (KJV)**

For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

Revived - Live again

The thought continues from verse 8. The Lord Jesus Christ died for our salvation and by His life He rules over us. His rule is both over those believers who are still alive on earth at any given time in history and He rules over those believers who have physically died and went to be with Him in glory. (2 Cor 5:8 KJV) We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord. In the Old Testament there is a similar statement. (Gen 25:8 KJV) Then Abraham gave up the ghost, and died in a good old age, an old man, and full of years; and was gathered to his people. Abraham was gathered to his people who are the people of God in Glory.

**Rom 14:10 (KJV)**

But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

Nought - Despise

Here once again we are asked why we should judge our brother or treat our brother as nothing, denoting that he is a worthless individual. Then we are told that we shall all stand before the Judgment seat of Christ. We see this come to pass in detail on the last day when every human being will stand before the Lord. (Mat 25:32-33 KJV) And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: {33} And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. The unbeliever stands before the throne of Christ without a Savior and therefore will be cast into eternal Hell. On the other hand, the believer stands there with the Lord Jesus Christ as their Savior and they all stand on equal ground. This is why we are not to judge our brother since all believers stand on the same ground in salvation. There is no such thing as one being more redeemed than the other or one being more favored than another.

**Rom 14:11 (KJV)**

For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God.

As we saw in Matthew 25:31-46, every human being who ever lived on earth is going to

bow their knee to the Lord Jesus Christ. This includes all the enemies of Christ down through the ages which includes atheists, agnostics, religious people, evolutionists, etc. All the enemies of God who have denied Him and His existence, are going to verbally confess His existence and omnipotence. The word “confess” in this verse carries with it the meaning of “verbally expressing something.” Those who have repudiated Him will now acknowledge Him. Freedom of Belief does end on Judgment Day!

#### **Rom 14:12 (KJV)**

So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

Each of us must keep our spiritual houses in order and we are not to judge another with a scathing judgment. This verse indicates that we shall give an account of the using of the gifts which God gave us and how we spent our time on earth. We must be accountable to God for the ministry of evangelizing the world and what our part was. We must also keep in mind that this is not a judgment because the believer was already judged in Christ and found not guilty because of the sacrifice of Christ. This is not a judgment for rewards either since there is no such judgment. This verse seems to be telling us that we will give an account unto God for the ministries entrusted to us. Many lazy Christians may be embarrassed at this accounting when their lives were taken up with concerns about their children's soccer games instead of souls for Christ.

#### **Rom 14:13 (KJV)**

Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumblingblock or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.

Paul once again reverts to a past teaching. Here he is telling us that we should not judge those who are weaker in the faith and we must be careful that if we continue to judge or be critic of them, it might cause a stumblingblock to be placed in their way. They might become very despondent or discouraged if they are constantly being criticized, and that might cause them to throw their hands up and just give up and once again embrace the ways of the world. The strong in the church must nurture those who are weak in the faith. There is no need for consistent judgment but there needs to be more encouragement.

#### **Rom 14:14 (KJV)**

I know, and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

If a person believes something is unclean, then no matter how much you judge them, they will continue to believe something is unclean. The Gospel frees us from the bondage of being under the Mosaic law but we must remember that there may be some weaker believers who still believe that they must adhere to certain things in that law. It does not mean they will lose their salvation or that they are working for their salvation, but it may be for other purposes such as we saw previously concerning food.

#### **Rom 14:15 (KJV)**

But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died.

If our actions, even if biblically permitted, causes another to stumble then we are not walking with love in our hearts. A mature Christian must realize where they have come from and how long it took them to get to that point and that is why there must be patience with younger believers. Christ died for the weaker believer just the same as for the stronger believer and that means we must never look down on them for any reason.



**Rom 14:16 (KJV)**

Let not then your good be evil spoken of:

We must be careful that we do not put any stumbling blocks before any weaker Christian because then the word will spread that there is no love in that individual or that the church has no love. Whenever there is some type of disagreement, the first thing to go is the testimony of the Gospel and people will point and say those Christians just have no love for each other. We must never give the enemy an opportunity to allow any negative remarks about the Gospel. We want people to look at Christ and not us but sometimes we get in the way of that view with petty squabbles.

Romans 14:17-23

**Rom 14:17 (KJV)**

For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.

When Paul was discussing the situation concerning the eating of certain foods, he makes this statement under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. We are being told that the Kingdom of God is not found in things like food or drink, or anything external. The Kingdom of God, in this present age, is invisible to the world. The only time the world can see a glimpse of the Kingdom of God is when the church comes together on Sunday morning. The Christian is saved in their souls and the great manifestation of the Kingdom of God is not going to come until the last day when the believers receive their glorified spiritual bodies for eternity. Until then the Kingdom of God is dispersed all over the world. The Kingdom of God is not just a church or a denomination. For the Kingdom of God is made up of only the true Elect of God because it is only they which the Holy Spirit indwells. So the Kingdom of God at this time is found in the true believers who have received their resurrected souls and the present manifestation of the Kingdom is the works that the believer does motivated by their salvation.

**Rom 14:18 (KJV)**

For he that in these things serveth Christ is acceptable to God, and approved of men.

If we serve Christ in righteousness, peace, and joy, this means that we have become saved because the unsaved are still in unrighteousness and eventually their true nature will come out. If we are serving Christ, then it is acceptable to God. The word "acceptable" carries with it the meaning of "well-pleasing." (Mat 3:17 KJV) And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. God is well pleased with His Son and therefore He transfers that affection to the believer who is in Christ. The verse also states that when we serve Christ in that manner, then we are approved of men. The word "approved" carries with it the meaning of "acceptable." Now it must be understood that those in the world will never approve of Christians, unless, of course, you have done something nice or good for them. Normally, there is always hostility between the Kingdom of God and the Kingdom of Satan. So this approval is not coming from the unsaved but is coming from the saved, especially those who are weaker in the faith. As young Christians will attach themselves to older Christians in the Faith as they are disciples.

**Rom 14:19 (KJV)**

Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.

With the thoughts of the previous verse in mind, we need to follow those things which make peace and not strife. The word “follow” carries with it the meaning of “to pursue.” When somebody is pursuing somebody else, they are following close as a police officer pursues a criminal. They never give up the search until the criminal is apprehended. This is the same way that we must be. We must always diligently seek those things which make peace until we have apprehended it as a way of life. Then not only those things which make peace but we must be careful that we do not compromise to make peace. We are told to “edify” one another. The word “edify” carries with it the meaning of “building up.” Everything we do must be for the purpose of edifying or building up one another because the world is right there to throw us down. Whenever we edify or build up someone, we are also building ourselves in the Faith.

#### **Rom 14:20 (KJV)**

For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

The food that we eat must never be eaten without a knowledge of what it could be doing to other believers. We are not to destroy the work of God in the life of a weaker believer. The word “destroy” carries with it the meaning of “demolish or bring to an end.” We do not want to hurt weaker believers to the point that they will no longer involve themselves in the work of the Lord or become discouraged. Even though in our minds, what we are eating is pure, nevertheless, for the weaker Christian’s sake, if it offends them then our actions are evil. Let us widen this principle a little because it is a very important principle in the general life of a believer. How many times do believers drink alcohol? When a Christian drinks, they may be casting a stumbling block before a weaker brother or sister. Whenever we do anything in this world, we must be very careful that we are not only sinning but that we are avoiding the very appearance of sin. (1 Th 5:22 KJV) Abstain from all appearance of evil. There is a food and liquor store down the street from me where I go to buy milk on occasion. When I leave the store, I make sure that I do not place the milk in a bag. I want people to see I have purchased milk and not booze. I have the Lord’s name on my car and I don’t want to give the appearance of evil. So in all things we do in life, we must consider the possibility that we may be placing a stumbling block before a weaker Christian.

#### **Rom 14:21 (KJV)**

It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

Since we must keep in mind the possibility that we are affecting negatively a weaker brother or sister, then it is better that we do not eat, drink, or do anything which could cause them to stumble. If a Christian is saved from drunkenness and then goes to the house of a Christian for a gathering, and there, beer is being served. That beer is causing that Christian to stumble and therefore those who are drinking it in his or her presence are sinning against God and may cause that person to once again get snared into drunkenness. This goes for anything which could cause a Christian to stumble.

#### **Rom 14:22 (KJV)**

Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

Here the question is asked if you have faith? Now the subject here is not of salvation but do you have faith in what you are eating or doing? If you do, then if your brother or sister stumbles with what you are doing, then you need to keep the faith to yourself so there will be no stumbling on part of the weaker brethren. If you are doing something which does

not cause a rift in your own conscience because it is something that is not causing another to stumble, then you are happy. The word “happy” is the same word used for “blessed.” One of the great blessings of the Christian walk is the capability of helping another Christian grow. (Prov 22:6 KJV) Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it. We have seen this verse from Proverbs used many times concerning the training of children but we can widen the meaning, in that when we help train a new Christian in the proper way, then they will not depart when they are older in the faith, as many have done already. So training for a new Christian is very important and it is not only book training but practical training as well and that is why we are to never cast a stumbling block before any Christian, even those who are in the faith longer. A Christian who is saved for a long time does not necessarily mean they have matured commensurate with the years of being saved. Even a Christian who is saved for many years can be an immature believer, we never know and that is why we must walk according to the Scriptures.

#### **Rom 14:23 (KJV)**

And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

On the other hand, the person who eats something but is not fully persuaded in their mind that they are doing the right thing, then it is not of faith. The word “damned” carries with it the meaning of “being condemned.” This does not mean this person has lost their salvation but it means they are condemned in their conscience and also in their actions. Since their actions may cause another to stumble, then those actions, which are not of faith, is sin. So we find that the believer can commit sin in the matter of not having confidence in what we are partaking of. Therefore, if we are not sure about something, it is better not to partake so we don’t cast a stumbling block before other believers. We must also realize that we must maintain a proper testimony before the world or else they will say that we are just like them. No Christian would ever want to be equated with acting like the unregenerate. Let our former life remain dead and live unto the Lord and be blessed.

### Romans 15:1-11

#### **Rom 15:1 (KJV)**

We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves.

Paul continues the thread from the last chapter. He states that those who are strong in the faith must be the ones who help bear the infirmities of the weak. The word “infirmities” carries with it the meaning of “weaknesses.” The word “bear” carries with it the meaning of “sustain or lift up.” The verse goes on to say that we should not please ourselves. As mature Christians we should take on the responsibility of helping those weaker Christians for their growth in the faith, and we must never have selfish motives in doling out that help to the weaker in the Faith.

#### **Rom 15:2 (KJV)**

Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.

The word “please” carries with it the meaning of being acceptable to. Whenever we help others we are to be acceptable to them but not for selfish purposes, we need to help them to be edified which causes them to grow in the faith. The word “edification” carries with it

the meaning of “building up.” Our goal for the weaker in the faith is to help build them up so they become stronger in the faith continually.

### **Rom 15:3 (KJV)**

For even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me.

(Psa 69:9 KJV) For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me. Here we have David stating that those who reproached God have also reproached him who is the representative of God being a redeemed Christian. Then the example of the Lord Jesus Christ is given to us here. He did not please Himself since He had to leave Heaven and be separated from His Father for the first time in eternity and then to die on the cross. None of that would have pleased Him but to save the Elect, this had to happen. The word “reproaches” carries with it the meaning of “reviling or disgrace.” The word “reproached” carries with it the meaning of “scolding.” The example of the Lord Jesus Christ teaches us to set aside our own rights for the purpose of others. Christ endured the accusations and railings which the unbelievers cast at Him. When the Elect were still reprobate unbelievers, He died for us not pleasing Himself. (Heb 12:2 KJV) Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. The Lord Jesus despised or set aside the shame He suffered because He looked beyond that moment of suffering and looked to the joy the future would hold when all the Elect he died for was safe in Glory. We too, must have the same attitude in that we must concern ourselves with the evangelization of the lost and the discipling of those new and weaker believers.

### **Rom 15:4 (KJV)**

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

Here is a verse which teaches us that the body of Christ must study the Scriptures or how else are they going to know what has been written aforetime by those who faced similar circumstances in the service of the Lord. When we study these passages and the characters in those pages, we will see how God worked with them to bring them through the tough times, especially when Israel was threatened by her enemies which surrounded her. We too are surrounded by enemies. All unbelievers in this world, whether atheist or false religion, are the enemies of the saints of God. When we study the Scriptures, we will see how God protected Israel and His Elect within Israel, and by knowing how He dealt with them, we too will have hope which will manifest itself in patience and comfort through the Scriptures. The word “learning” carries with it the meaning of instruction.

### **Rom 15:5 (KJV)**

Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be likeminded one toward another according to Christ Jesus:

The word “patience” carries with it the meaning of endurance. The word “consolation” carries with it the meaning of “encouragement.” Paul is giving a short prayer in hopes that the Roman Christians will all be likeminded toward each other. He prays for harmony among the believers in the church, especially those who are more mature and those who are weak. Both groups are equal at the cross and Paul is hoping for a harmony of the two with the view that they are all blood bought and equal in the sight of God.

### **Rom 15:6 (KJV)**

That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus

Christ.

Paul wants to see the Roman Christians all have the same mind and in concert with that mind, to have the same mouth, that is, to bring glory to God by the verbal witness of the church. Paul also makes sure that we know that God is the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. This is important since there are many false gods in this world and we are being specifically told that this God we worship is God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ and of the Elect.

### **Rom 15:7 (KJV)**

Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us to the glory of God.

The words “receive” and “received” are both from the same root word which means “receive, accept, or take along.” Just as the Lord Jesus Christ accepted us to the Glory of God, then we are to accept all the true brethren in the same manner. No one is to left out who is redeemed of the Lord. By receiving each other we form a close knit brotherhood which Satan cannot tear apart.

### **Rom 15:8 (KJV)**

Now I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross, he had then fulfilled all the requirements of the law of God and now those who are in Christ, are like they have kept every tenet of the law unto salvation. Not only did Christ fulfill the righteous demands of God's Holy Law, His sacrifice also confirmed the promises made unto the fathers. The word “confirm” carries with it the meaning of “establish or guarantee.” Christ had guaranteed the fulfillment of the everlasting covenants made to Abraham and confirmed through Isaac and Jacob. Christ was also the fulfillment of the Davidic covenant where God promised that He would raise one up according to the flesh to sit on David's throne. (Acts 2:29-30 KJV) Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. {30} Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; The promises of the eternal covenants were now sealed for all the Elect of God and not one who was named before the foundation of the world would remain lost.

### **Rom 15:9 (KJV)**

And that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy; as it is written, For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name.

Not only did the Lord Jesus Christ fulfill the covenant that there would be a remnant of believers coming out of Israel but the church also contained the addition of the millions of Gentiles who would be added to it until the last day. The Lord stated that Hell will not prevail against His church. When we look at the time of Christ the Gospel was confined to only Israel but now in the twenty first century, it is all over the world. There is not one country in this world where there is no Gospel witness. (Psa 18:49 KJV) Therefore will I give thanks unto thee, O LORD, among the heathen, and sing praises unto thy name.

### **Rom 15:10 (KJV)**

And again he saith, Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people.

(Deu 32:43 KJV) Rejoice, O ye nations, with his people: for he will avenge the blood of his servants, and will render vengeance to his adversaries, and will be merciful unto his land, and to his

people. All the way back in the book of Deuteronomy we read a prophecy of the Gospel going worldwide. Why would all the nations rejoice unless there was a Gospel witness going forth in those lands. We read that God is going to be merciful to His people. The mercy of God is reserved for the Elect of God.

### **Rom 15:11 (KJV)**

And again, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles; and laud him, all ye people.

(Psa 117:1 KJV) O Praise the LORD, all ye nations: praise him, all ye people. Once again we are reminded that we are to praise the Lord. The redeemed of God are a joyful, singing people. The word "laud" carries with it the meaning of "to praise, approve, or to applaud."

## Romans 15:12-22

### **Rom 15:12 (KJV)**

And again, Esaias saith, There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles trust.

(Isa 11:10 KJV) And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. Here we have another passage of prophecy from Isaiah. The idea of God building His church is not only a New Testament truth but it is also seeded throughout the Old Testament. The root of Jesse is the Lord Jesus Christ. Jesse was the father of King David and David was a picture of the Lord Jesus Christ in the Old Testament. So we see that back in Isaiah God had already planned to include the Gentiles in the eternal church. Notice in Isaiah 11:10 it speaks about the rest the Lord will give shall be glorious. This refers to the believers resting in the finished work of the Lord Jesus Christ and the eternal rest which He gives to all His children.

### **Rom 15:13 (KJV)**

Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

Paul here gives a kind word to the Romans. He prays that the God of Hope fills them with joy and peace as they continue to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ. Without believing in the Lord Jesus Christ, there can be no true peace and joy. If one is believing in their theology systems or some religion, their joy will be superficial plus they will never enjoy the true peace that the Lord Jesus gives to His redeemed children. The word "abound" carries with it the meaning of "to prosper." The true believer will always prosper in the Christian walk because they have the indwelling of the Holy Spirit who fills us with hope, even during the darkest times. The Christian lives the present life in hope. We hope in the resurrection of our bodies. We hope in the promise of heaven. We hope in the soon return of the Lord Jesus Christ. We also hope in God in the present times we live in.

### **Rom 15:14 (KJV)**

And I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

Paul is convinced of the true nature of these Roman Christians. Despite the problems they had, they were able to overcome through the power of the Holy Spirit. He believes they are definitely full of goodness and filled with the spiritual knowledge of Christ and because

they have the proper knowledge, they will be able to warn or instruct one another, especially in light of the problems that the Roman church had faced. Paul knew that if they just looked to the Lord for guidance, that they would be able to work out all the problems which had plagued the church. Admonishment should come from the brethren and not from outsiders since the brethren in the church would have the knowledge of certain situations.

### **Rom 15:15 (KJV)**

Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

Boldly - Daring or rash

Sort - Part

Putting you in mind - Reminding them

Paul tells them that he has written to them in a more daring manner than he has to others, at least in parts of the letter. Paul knew the problems of the churches but he was also mindful of the fact that there were many in this church who were more mature so they were able to handle a more firm letter. We can deduce this by reading the passages concerning the treatment of the weaker brethren by those who were the stronger brethren. Paul reminds them that he too is a recipient of the grace of God and that he does not make these assertions in this letter on his own but under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. So the Holy Spirit would definitely know how tough he needed to get with these Christians so no line would be crossed which would hurt them.

### **Rom 15:16 (KJV)**

That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost.

Paul continues his thread from verse 15 that it is by the grace of God that he was made a minister of the Lord Jesus Christ to the Gentiles. He was a minister of God to the Gentiles that he would offer them up. This means that he would help them become a sacrifice for the kingdom of God but not the type of sacrifice which was found in the Old Testament. Remember in chapter 12, we read that we need to be a living sacrifice and that is what Paul was equipping the Gentile Christians to be. Since these Gentiles had become saved and indwelt by the Holy Spirit, he was helping to make them acceptable. The word "acceptable" carries with it the meaning of "well-received or approved." (2 Tim 2:15 KJV) Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. Do you remember in Chapter 15:4, how we are to study those Scriptures so we are to know what we are to do? Well the 2 Timothy passage confirms that teaching in Romans here that we must study to also become the workman of God that will not be ashamed. We can be ashamed when we walk around with a big Bible under our arms and not know the contents of it. Unfortunately, that is the major situation in today's churches.

### **Rom 15:17 (KJV)**

I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ in those things which pertain to God.

Paul knew that he could glory, but only in the Lord Jesus Christ. Galatians 6:14 teaches us that we are to glory in the cross of Christ. In of ourselves we do not have anything to glory about. The cross of Christ definitely pertains to the things of God because it was God who engineered the sacrifice of Christ to save the Elect which He named before the

foundation of the world. We can also glory in the things which God has done for us in this life and the hope He offers for the next life. Any Christian who glories in themselves is a self-worshipper and has an arrogant spirit and can expect God to chastise them to bring them back to reality.

### **Rom 15:18 (KJV)**

For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,

Paul knew that he was a person in the hands of Christ and he would not bring into any situation the things which he had done, instead he always exalted Christ and what Christ had done. You never hear Paul speaking as we hear so many today brag that Christ used me to do this or I did that or this. We see in the life of the Apostle Paul that he always set about to glorify the Lord Jesus Christ. Anything which Paul accomplished, whether in word or deed, he attributed it to the Lord Jesus Christ. By speaking in those terms, the Gentiles learned the truth about Christ. People will never learn the truth about Christ when the one preaching is always talking about themselves. The people will learn about the preacher and will remain ignorant about the Lord Jesus. Unfortunately, this seems to be the overriding situation in the churches and in ministry today.

### **Rom 15:19 (KJV)**

Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

The same God who parted the Red Sea and performed the ten plagues on the Egyptians had uses signs in the early church to confirm the word that the Apostles were teaching were from God. (Mark 16:20 KJV) And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen. The reason that miracles were performed in the early church were to confirm the word which was being preached. The miracles had waned by the end of the first century with the completion of the Bible in 95 AD. Paul makes sure that his readers know that it was not him performing the miracles but it was the power of the Spirit of God who did it. Paul also tells them that he had preached the Gospel in Jerusalem and even to the place of Illyricum. Illyricum was about 1,000 miles from Jerusalem and was situated northwest of Macedonia and directly east of Italy. He states that he has fully proclaimed the Gospel of Christ to all these areas and in between.

### **Rom 15:20 (KJV)**

Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another man's foundation:

Paul's desire was to preach in virgin territory where the Gospel was never preached before. His desire was to reach the areas which were not yet reached with the Gospel. This is the true missionary spirit in that he wanted to bring the Gospel to the Gentiles in different parts of the world, this way centers of evangelism could be formed and then the Gospel sent out from there by other brethren whom the Lord saved. Paul did not want to bring the Gospel in an area where there was already a Gospel work going on because he did not want it to seem he was trying to build on another's work. He wanted to see the widest distribution of the Gospel as possible which meant that he was going to different places where the Gospel was not yet proclaimed. This is why God gives us different ministries because one person may be able to reach a group that another person cannot.

### **Rom 15:21 (KJV)**

But as it is written, To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not



heard shall understand.

(Isa 52:15 KJV) So shall he sprinkle many nations; the kings shall shut their mouths at him: for that which had not been told them shall they see; and that which they had not heard shall they consider. Paul uses this verse from Isaiah to give understanding why he was preaching the Gospel in the places where no one had ever preached the Gospel before. This verse teaches us that there will be Elect in all those different places and that is why the Gospel must go out throughout the whole world and not just in populated places. When the Gospel is proclaimed, those who never heard, who are the Elect of God, will understand once they have become saved. It will be fulfillment of the prophecy from Isaiah.

#### **Rom 15:22 (KJV)**

For which cause also I have been much hindered from coming to you.

It was for the reason of Paul spending much time preaching the Gospel which has hindered him from paying a personal visit to the Roman Christians. Paul was like Nehemiah, he knew the task he had at hand at that time which had to be completed and nothing was to divert him from the goal of preaching the Gospel to those who never heard it. The true preacher of the Gospel is sold out to the preaching of the Gospel and that is the attitude which we must take in these last days. The things of the world need to take a back seat to the proclamation of the Gospel.

### Romans 15:23-33

#### **Rom 15:23 (KJV)**

But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many years to come unto you;

Now Paul is stating that he has now completed his task in the area which he was now in. Probably he had finished the circuit from Jerusalem to Illyricum and since he has had a great desire to visit the Roman Christians, now may be the proper time since he is in the area.

#### **Rom 15:24 (KJV)**

Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with your company.

Spain was obviously another place where the Gospel had not been preached so on his way to Spain, he would be able to stop and visit the Roman Church. It is important to note here that it was Paul who had dealings with the Roman Church and not Peter as the Roman Catholic Church has erroneously proclaimed throughout history. There is no evidence that Peter was ever in Rome. Paul was hoping that when he came to Rome that he would be filled or satisfied with the fellowship of these Christians. Whenever Paul visited the churches, he would always be refreshed by the groups in those churches and he was hoping for the same refreshment when he visited them.

#### **Rom 15:25 (KJV)**

But now I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the saints.

Here is tremendous insight into the mindset of the Apostle Paul. He was probably about

1,000 miles (1609 KM) from Jerusalem, yet instead of going into Italy for a short visit, which was closer, with the Roman Christians, he instead, backtracked and went back to Jerusalem to minister unto those saints. How many of us would make a plan and then reroute ourselves way out of the way to meet the needs of Christians?

### **Rom 15:26 (KJV)**

For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem.

The Christians in the regions of Macedonia and Achaia, which were both south of Illyricum. There was tremendous need at the church in Jerusalem, so Paul rather would make the journey to Jerusalem to bring some relief before he continued on his journey. I wonder how many of us would divert funds from ourselves to those who have bigger needs than we do? This is a great Christian principle. Paul was willing to back track hundreds of miles to help others instead of going on with his trip. He took care of the more urgent needs at the moment. We can all learn from this.

### **Rom 15:27 (KJV)**

It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things.

The church was birthed at Jerusalem and here Paul is making sure that these Roman Christians know that it was from Jerusalem the Gospel first went forth and the churches in Macedonia and Achaia were indebted to them since the first missionaries went out from Jerusalem to the Roman Empire. Since these Greek churches were now sharing in the spiritual blessings which at one time were strictly in Israel, now the church at Jerusalem is in need of finances and those who are benefiting from the spiritual blessings should help bear the blessings of their carnal needs. Paul tells them that it was their duty to help these brethren who were in need. Some of the churches in that area were Thessalonica, Corinth, and Philippi. Paul does not hesitate to tell these Christians that they have a responsibility to share their carnal things with those who minister the Gospel to them. (Gal 6:6 KJV) Let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things. The word "communicate" carries with it the meaning of "having a thing in common or having a share." Is there someone in your church who has ministered to you and has some physical needs at this time? Then it is your duty to help that person or persons to give them some relief.

### **Rom 15:28 (KJV)**

When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

Once Paul has fulfilled this mission, then he will attempt to go to Spain and he will stop by and visit the Roman Christians, but the work of the Gospel must come first before a time of fellowship can take place. Paul did not waste any time in his journeys as we see that his plans to visit Rome are in concert with his plans to preach the Gospel in Spain.

### **Rom 15:29 (KJV)**

And I am sure that, when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

Paul was very sure that when he finally came to Rome it would be with the full blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ. Paul never planned any missionary trips out of his own desire to visit a place but took direction from the Lord Jesus Christ. Paul was strictly sold out for the sake of the Gospel and knew that his foremost reason of existence in this life was the

proclamation of the Gospel of Christ. He never looked that that as a secondary reason for living but his primary reason of existence.

### **Rom 15:30 (KJV)**

Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me;

Here Paul asks the Roman Christians to help pray with him to God for the safe deliverance of the funds to the church at Jerusalem. By praying for someone, we are sharing in their ministry, so when you pray for someone you are having an active part in their life. This is why it is very important to pray for those in ministry, particularly those on the mission field because you are partaking of their ministry and the struggles that go with that ministry. Never concern yourself that you do not know exactly what to pray for, all you need do is lift that person up before the throne of grace and the Holy Spirit will interpret those prayers for you.

### **Rom 15:31 (KJV)**

That I may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judaea; and that my service which I have for Jerusalem may be accepted of the saints;

Paul has a two-fold prayer request. First, he prays that he would be delivered or rescued from those who did not believe in Judaea. The Judaizers had plagued Paul throughout his ministry always trying to get the Christians to believe that it was necessary for one to keep the Mosaic law as an addition to grace. He also prays for deliverance so he will not be attacked while on the road so he could safely deliver the donations to the Jerusalem Church. He also asks prayer that his service to the Jerusalem Christians would be acceptable unto them meeting their needs to the fullest.

### **Rom 15:32 (KJV)**

That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

He also asks prayer that he could come to visit the Roman Christians joyfully but he also asks that if it would be the will of God. It is necessary for Christians to realize that even though we may make plans which are proper, God has the right to change those plans according to His will. Paul also seeks prayer in that when he comes to visit them, he would be refreshed. (2 Tim 1:16 KJV) The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain: The word "refreshed" carries with it the meaning of "resting together." After a long missionary journey, Paul would have coveted a time of refreshing.

### **Rom 15:33 (KJV)**

Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

It seems like Paul has ended his letter here with his closing but he just desires that the God of Peace be with them. The peace that he has in mind is the peace which God creates between Himself and the saved through the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. (Rom 5:1 KJV) Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: Paul has already mentioned the peace that salvation brings between God and the redeemed. May God rule in their church and that truth will always be present.

### **Rom 16:1 (KJV)**

I commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea:

This verse is one of the most misused verses in Scripture by those who believe in the ordination of women. First of all, the word “servant” is the word “διακονον\_\_diakonon”. This word is in the masculine gender and means a servant. It has been mistranslated to be used by those who believe that women can be ordained as deacons in the church. (1 Tim 3:11-12 KJV) Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. {12} Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. In these two verses from 1 Timothy, they speak of the qualifications of Deacons. Notice that they are to be the husband of one wife and that their wives must be “grave” which carries with it the meaning of “dignified, honorable, and sincere.” How then can a woman be the husband of one wife and their wives must be grave? So those who twist this Scripture because of their failure to interpret it correctly have led many astray believing that women can be ordained to church office. Paul is simply stating that Phebe was a sister who was also a servant at the church at Cenchrea. There is absolutely no indicators that she held any office in the church. Paul was just giving her a commendation to the Roman Christians.

### **Rom 16:2 (KJV)**

That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of myself also.

Paul is asking that the Roman Christians receive her in the faith and that they assist her in the matters she has to do with. Paul then states that she has been a “succourer” for many, that is, she had been a helper in their church. Paul also tells them that she had also helped him when he needed it. It was Phebe who carried the letter to the Roman church for Paul.

### **Rom 16:3 (KJV)**

Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:

Priscilla and Aquila were the couple which had helped counsel Apollos in his understanding of the gospel. Paul referred to them as his helpers. The word “helpers” carries with it the meaning of “fellow workers.”

### **Rom 16:4 (KJV)**

Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.

It is not known how this couple had helped save Paul’s life but he mentions their heroism in that area. He not only thanks them but he also thanks all the churches of the Gentiles. As we read in many of Paul’s letters how the churches that he helped, had also helped him greatly in his mission work.

### **Rom 16:5 (KJV)**

Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my wellbeloved Epaphroditus, who is the firstfruits of Achaia unto Christ.

Paul also sends greetings to the church which met in the house of Priscilla and Aquila. Here is good principle that if you do not have a church in your area, then open up your

house for a meeting place and the Lord will supply the teacher if you are not one yourself. Paul also greets Epaenetus who according to this Scripture was the first one saved in Achaia. His name means "laudable or worthy of praise."

**Rom 16:6 (KJV)**

Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

This Mary is one of the six named Mary in the New Testament and we do not know who she was but we do know that she labored for the purpose of the Gospel and for Paul's missionary journeys, and for that she has her name in the eternal word of the Lord.

**Rom 16:7 (KJV)**

Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellowprisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

Paul greets Andronicus and Junia, both of these must have spent time in prison with the Apostle Paul or either they were in prison prior to meeting Paul since he states that they were Christians before he became one. They must have also met some of the Apostles since they were of note. The word "note" carries with it the meaning of "outstanding or notable." It is not known what they did but they apparently had a good report by some of the Apostles of Christ.

**Rom 16:8 (KJV)**

Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

Amplias may have been a slave in a high ranking family in Rome and it was believed that he also held some type of position in the church.

**Rom 16:9 (KJV)**

Salute Urbane, our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

There is not much known about these two men but we can tell from this verse that they held a place in Paul's heart by helping him in his ministry.

Romans 16:10-18

**Rom 16:10 (KJV)**

Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus' household.

It is believed that Apelles was approved in Christ by being tried for his faith. He also greets those who are of the house of Aristobulus. He is believed to have been a slave.

**Rom 16:11 (KJV)**

Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the household of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

The name Herodion might possibly be a link to the household of Herod. It is believed that Narcissus was also a slave in Rome. Educated slaves in Rome were valuable and were used by wealthy people to educate and train their children. They even disciplined the children without fear of themselves facing torture.

**Rom 16:12 (KJV)**

Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

Tryphena and Tryphosa were possibly twin sisters since their names were taken from the same root word which was common in ancient times. Persis was a woman who labored much in the Lord for the Gospel.

**Rom 16:13 (KJV)**

Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

Rufus must have been very close to Paul as he refers to the mother of Rufus as his mother also which would mean that she was very dear to Paul. (Mark 15:21 KJV) And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross. It is a possibility that the Rufus mentioned in Romans is the same one who was the son of Simon of Cyrene. Cyrene was a town in Northeast Libya. It was a Greek colony founded in 630 BC and in Roman times it was a civilized area.

**Rom 16:14 (KJV)**

Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

Paul greets these Christians known only to the Lord for their part in the ministry of the Gospel.

**Rom 16:15 (KJV)**

Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

Paul also mentions these Christian workers and all the Saints who were with them also.

**Rom 16:16 (KJV)**

Salute one another with an holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you.

The greeting with a kiss is still practiced in many parts of the world. Notice that Paul states it should be a holy kiss and not a sensual one. The kiss was practiced as a token of Christian love. (Psa 2:12 KJV) Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him. We see that principle in Psalm 2 concerning the Lord Jesus Christ. We spiritually kiss Him as a token of Christian love.

**Rom 16:17 (KJV)**

Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

Divisions - Dissension

Offences - Scandals

Paul here gives us a major principle in keeping the churches pure in doctrine. Notice he does not say, mark their doctrine! He tells us to mark them which cause divisions and offences. Those who cause dissension and scandals in the church must be avoided. The word "avoid" carries with it the meaning of "turn away." This is hardly done today as so many unlearned Christians instantly claim that you are judging someone if you turn away from them. The truth is that God wants us turn away from these people because they are

injurious to proper Biblical teachings and they can spiritually injure a Christian into disobeying the Lord. It is not wrong to name names, since we need to know who are the ones who are causing the divisions in the churches so we will not support them. (2 Th 3:6 KJV) Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

#### **Rom 16:18 (KJV)**

For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

These people who come into churches and bring false doctrines are never serving the Lord Jesus Christ but are serving themselves and their own agendas. They use good words (kind words) and fair speeches (praise) and by using these two methods, they deceive the hearts of the simple. The word "simple carries with it the meaning of "innocent or lack of evil." This means that those who are weaker in the faith, will not really know that they are being deceived and that is why these people must be removed from the assembly of believers. It would be for the protection of the weaker brethren. (Prov 27:12 KJV) A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself; but the simple pass on, and are punished.

#### **Romans 16:19-27**

#### **Rom 16:19 (KJV)**

For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

Paul commends the Romans that their obedience in the Gospel has become a good testimony outside their territory. Probably when these testimonies spread like that, it made it easy for the Roman authorities to find them when the persecutions began. Paul is counseling the Roman Christians that they are to be wise concerning the good and simple concerning evil. Paul was desiring them to stay strong in the Faith but to remain innocent (simple) concerning evil or sin.

#### **Rom 16:20 (KJV)**

And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

Paul gives them encouragement that soon Satan will meet his doom for all false doctrines and troublemakers in the church are ruled by Satan. The word "bruise" carries with it the meaning of "shatter, break, or beat." Satan will never have absolute dominion over the people of God. He may harass them but he can never rule them. Then Paul bids them the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ which is sufficient to keep these Christians strong. (2 Cor 12:9 KJV) And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. When Paul was being harassed by the Judaizers, he asked the Lord to remove them but the Lord said that His grace was sufficient for the tasks at hand and the persecution to come.

#### **Rom 16:21 (KJV)**

Timotheus my workfellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you.

Paul had sent greetings to those in Rome but now those who were with Paul also send them greetings. Timothy was Paul's son in the Faith.

**Lucius** - (Acts 13:1 KJV) Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

**Jason** - (Acts 17:5 KJV) But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

#### **Rom 16:22 (KJV)**

I Tertius, who wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lord.

Paul used Tertius as his amanuensis and he also sends greetings to the Roman Church.

#### **Rom 16:23 (KJV)**

Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

Gaius was hosting Paul in his home and he was one of the first converts in the church at Corinth. (1 Cor 1:14 KJV) I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; Erastus was the treasurer of the city which means that God was not only saving slaves but He was saving some in high office. The name "Quartus" means four and possibly he was a slave as many slaves in Rome only had numbers instead of official names.

#### **Rom 16:24 (KJV)**

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

This verse is omitted in the modern versions for reasons unknown. This is what makes them unreliable and wrong. In this closing, Paul desires the same grace which has saved and kept him over the years on the Roman Christians which is able to save and keep them.

#### **Rom 16:25 (KJV)**

Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began,

This is one of the nicest benedictions in the Bible. First, Paul tells them that God has the power and can establish them according to the Gospel. The word "stablish" carries with it the meaning of "set firmly, fix, or confirm." Then Paul tells them about the proclamation of the Lord Jesus Christ which was a revelation of the mystery which was kept hidden from the foundation of the world. We know that much about the Lord Jesus Christ was written in the Old Testament but it was written in shadows and types. Israel would never have dreamed that the Temple was a foreshadow of the Lord Jesus Christ who would also fulfill the entire law of God. The word "secret" carries with it the meaning of "conceal, be silent and say nothing." The Gospel is the revelation of the Lord Jesus Christ and is no more a mystery.

#### **Rom 16:26 (KJV)**

But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of



faith:

With the completion of the Scriptures, the mystery of Christ and the Gospel has been made manifest to the whole world. The word “manifest” carries with it the meaning of “reveal or disclose.” Now we can see clearly what or better yet, who the prophets of Israel were speaking about, when they themselves did not know some of what they were prophesying. The disclosure of the true Gospel of Christ, has, by commandment from God, been made known to all nations of the world and those who are the Elect will be obedient to that gospel and will become saved through it. The Gospel will go out throughout the entire world until the last one becomes saved.

**Rom 16:27 (KJV)**

To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

Paul concludes the doxology with praise to God that He is a wise God. The word “wise” carries with it the meaning of “clever or skillful.” God was the one who planned and executed Grace through the Lord Jesus Christ and His sacrifice. God will gain the glory through the Lord Jesus Christ for ever and ever. Amen!

(Jude 1:24-25 KJV) Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, {25} To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and for ever. Amen.

# Revelation Commentary

## Ken Matto

### Introduction

The book of Revelation has been the most neglected book in the Bible, probably next to Leviticus. It has been used as a manuscript for Hollywood for many satanic movies like the Exorcist. This is based on the pre-tribulation view which takes the book of Revelation and makes it a chronological book. This is a very erroneous view since the book of Revelation is anything but chronological. They also tend to make the modern nation of Israel the center of Revelation but that is also very erroneous and is cultic. The Bible, from cover to cover, is about the Lord Jesus Christ and the redemptive history of man.

(Psa 40:7 KJV) Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me,

(Heb 10:7 KJV) Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God.

The book of Revelation is given in the Bible by God to be understood and not to be some type of esoteric mystery. Revelation is the culmination of the entire Bible and has to do with the time period from the first coming of Christ to the return of Christ. We will see that much of Revelation uses parallel imagery to bring the Gospel message and a scenario of the end time. Satan has always been the sworn enemy of the church and of every individual Christian. We will see in Revelation, many parallelisms which represent Satan's attack on the church and also the second coming as He overtakes the church. We will also see how the "Abomination of Desolation" appears in the churches right before the end of time, when the Holy Spirit is taken out of the way because the day of salvation has come to an end. The time that Satan has victory in the churches is but a small time and that happens right before the Lord Jesus Christ returns in great glory as we shall see in quite a number of passages. No one is saying that Revelation is an easy book to understand but when approached in the correct manner, we will see plainly how many of these "hard sayings" become clear and delivers a message.

Revelation uses massive imagery and symbolism. We will see that the 144,000 in Revelation 7 & 14 are totally symbolic. We will also see that the number of the beast 666 is also symbolic. 666 has been taught that an Antichrist is going to rise and will be identified with 666 on his forehead or arms. However, the Greek teaches that 666 is the number of man and not "a" man as so many prophecy moguls have led us to believe.

As long as we put out of our minds these wild prophecy books we have all read, we will approach Revelation with a clear mind and allow the Holy Spirit to teach us, we will see Revelation in a manner as we never have before and we will not run from it. The same God who gave us Colossians and Philipians also gave us Revelation. Revelation was written about 95 AD during the reign of Emperor Domitian. John was exiled to Patmos which was a slave colony, so it was anything but a country club. It is here where John experienced the vision of Revelation as given to him by the Lord Jesus Christ through an angel showing John, and us, "the things which must shortly come to pass."

One of the main characteristics of the book of Revelation is that it is a book built upon parallel visions with each subsequent one more intense and progressively revealing more information.

They are as follows:

John's first vision was Chapters 4-7 - We read that the judgments affect one fourth of the earth.

The second parallel vision is Chapters 8-11 - There we read about one third of the earth being affected. This means that the second vision is parallel to the first but it showing an intensifying of the judgments.

The third parallel vision is chapters 12-14 - ends in the reaping of the earth

The fourth vision is chapters 15-16 which contains the vial judgments which affect the whole earth ( $1/4 > 1/3 >$  to whole earth) and ends with Armageddon which is the final battle between Christ and Satan.

The fifth vision is chapters 17-18 which is the destruction of the kingdom of Satan.

The sixth vision is chapters 19-20 which details the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ and the final judgment of the unsaved.

The seventh vision is chapters 21-22 which is the New Heaven and the New Earth.

Each vision is complete in itself as we progress in the book of Revelation we are seeing that the judgments become more surgical and intense until we come to the last day. The book of Revelation, teaches in apocalyptic imagery, the time between the first and second coming of Christ. It details the intensification of the judgments on the unsaved while the Gospel continues to go forth as it is being darkened by false gospels (Rev. 8:8-13). We must be very careful when dealing with apocalyptic imagery because it requires much more than a cursory reading, as each verse in Revelation is part of a vision and isolating verses from those visions to attempt to prove some type of pet doctrine does damage to the understanding of the book of Revelation.

#### Revelation 1:1-7

##### **(Rev 1:1 KJV)**

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to show unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John:

The word "Revelation" carries with it the meaning of "disclosure or manifestation." This means that the book of Revelation is meant to be disclosed and not hidden. God did not include it in the holy canon for it to remain a closed book. The book of Revelation of Jesus Christ has been given to the servants of God, that is, all the redeemed may know what will shortly come to pass. The word "shortly" carries with it the meaning of "speedily or quickly." The book of Revelation covers the time of the first coming of Christ to the second coming of Christ. According to the time of Earth, it seems like a long time has gone by but when we look at eternity, two thousand years is a mere second in time. The things which are to quickly come to pass has been given to John by an angel of the Lord. As we go through the book of Revelation, we will see that the central theme is the Lord Jesus Christ and not Israel or Satan. This is why it is called the "Revelation of Jesus Christ." It is a revealing of Christ presently in Heaven and His dealings with the church on earth as it faces persecution throughout the entire period between the two advents. It is also interesting to see that God used the word "signified" in this verse. The word "signified" carries with it the meaning of "to give a sign, implied, or suggested." This means that Revelation is going to contain much that is not literal and God is making that very plain at

the outset of the book of Revelation. There is much symbolism in the book of Revelation and one must be very careful not to apply a literal meaning to a symbol because it will cause much confusion and create scenarios which do not exist and we see those heresies in any dispensational prophecy book.

### **(Rev 1:2 KJV)**

Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

John was the one who bore record of the Word of God by being present with the Lord Jesus Christ in many different situations. In fact John is the only one who records the heavenly and earthly witness of the Lord Jesus Christ.

(1 John 5:7-8 KJV) For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. {8} And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

Don't look for these verses in your modern version because Satan does not want you to know of the Earthly and Heavenly testimony of the Lord Jesus Christ. The words "bare record" carry with it the meaning of "testifying" as one who testifies in court. The word roots back to the word "martyr" which is the root word meaning of "testimony."

John had also bore record of the baptism of Jesus Christ, when Christ raised Lazarus from the tomb, and when the soldier had pierced the Lord Jesus Christ and found him to be dead already and did not need to have his legs broken to speed up death.

(John 1:32-34 KJV) And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. {33} And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. {34} And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

(John 12:17 KJV) The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

(John 19:34-36 KJV) But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. {35} And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. {36} For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.

### **(Rev 1:3 KJV)**

Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

The book of Revelation is a prophecy and a blessing is promised to those who read this book and hear the words of this prophecy. Now the word "hear" does not mean only to audibly hear the words but it is the Greek word "ακουω\_ (akouoo) which carries with it the meaning of \_hearing with understanding.\_ How can one gain a blessing if they hear what is being spoken but they do not understand. This is why God had given this book to His servants, the believers, because being indwelt with the Holy Spirit, they will be able to understand this book. Then those who hear and understand these words will \_keep\_ those things written. The word \_keep\_ carries with it the meaning of \_watch carefully, pay attention to, or observe.\_ Then we are told why we are to observe those sayings because the time is at hand. It is interesting to note that this is a book of prophecy yet we are told

that the time is at hand.

In Daniel's prophecy, he was told to shut the prophecy for the time of the end. (Dan 12:4 KJV) But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased. Here in the book of Revelation, we are told that the time is at hand. The words "at hand" carry with it the meaning of "near or close to." Let us jump ahead for a moment to the end of the book of Revelation. (Rev 22:10 KJV) And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. We read in both Revelation 1:3 and 22:10, the beginning and the end of this book, that the time is at hand or very near. This is why it is important for us to understand the book of Revelation which will prepare us for the times of tribulation we as the church and Christian individuals will face. The word "time" in this verse carries with it the meaning of "a fixed time" which means that the Lord has already fixed the times for the things which are to happen. What has happened is that the Lord has fixed these times and now through the Book of Revelation, He is now revealing them to us.

#### **(Rev 1:4 KJV)**

John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven Spirits which are before his throne;

John, along with the letter of Revelation, sends greetings to the seven churches. Now it must be understood that there were many more churches in that area and scattered throughout the Roman Empire. These seven churches were chosen because they were principle cities but the admonishment and encouragement which comes to the seven churches in Chapters 2 and 3, are representative of all the churches. Grace and peace is a combination of two greetings. Grace was to the Gentile believers and peace was to the Jewish believers since they would understand the greeting of "shalom."

This Grace and Peace comes to them from Him which is, that means the one true and eternal God who is presently reigning on His throne. Which was, who is from eternity past and which is to come, which means that at the appointed time, He will send the Lord Jesus Christ who would return to earth to bring home His Elect, destroy Satan, and create the New Heavens and the New Earth. We also read that the greeting comes from the seven Spirits which are before throne of the Lord Jesus Christ. Seven is the number of completeness and this number seven will represent the completeness of the Holy Spirit being given to all the churches being represented by the seven churches of Asia. Seven may also be considered the number of divine perfection or completeness.

#### **(Rev 1:5 KJV)**

And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

This Grace and peace comes through the Lord Jesus Christ who was the faithful witness. It was Christ who came to earth and fulfilled His Father's will in dying for the Elect. The word "witness" means "martyr" in its ultimate sense. Christ was faithful in going to the cross. (Phil 2:8 KJV) And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. His obedience was so strong that it would not allow Him to do anything else but what the Father's will was. Then He is called "the first begotten of the dead." This means that Christ was the first to rise from the dead to never die again. Those He raised from the dead while on Earth had to die again. The words "first begotten" carries with it the meaning of "firstborn." (Col 1:18 KJV) And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have

the preeminence. The word used in Colossians 1:18 is the same one used in Revelation 1:5. Christ is also called the "prince of the kings of the earth." This goes back to a promise made to Abraham, and Sarah.

(Gen 17:6 KJV) And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee.

(Gen 17:15-16 KJV) And God said unto Abraham, As for Sarai thy wife, thou shalt not call her name Sarai, but Sarah shall her name be. {16} And I will bless her, and give thee a son also of her: yea, I will bless her, and she shall be a mother of nations; kings of people shall be of her.

Not only is Christ the king of all the believers on earth, He also rules over the political kings of the world too. (Dan 2:21 KJV) And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: Christ will always be the prince of the Kings, who are the true believers. Then we are told that Christ loved us and washed us from our sins by His own blood. (Heb 1:3 KJV) Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Christ being God was the only suitable one who would be able to die effectively for His Elect. A righteous man would still have sin but Christ was sinless and the pure, perfect Lamb.

#### **(Rev 1:6 KJV)**

And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

Christ had made the believers Kings and Priests unto God. (1 Pet 2:9 KJV) But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: Notice we are a royal priesthood. This royalty stems from God imputing His royalty on us as being the redeemed in Christ. As Kings we will have some type of rule in the new Heaven or in the new Earth. What we will be ruling over is not yet clear but will be someday when we are in glory. The promise is that if we suffer with Christ here, then we will reign with Him for eternity. (2 Tim 2:12 KJV) If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us: Then we have an eternal statement that Christ will have all the glory and dominion for eternity. (Dan 7:14 KJV) And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

#### **(Rev 1:7 KJV)**

Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.

In the first part of this verse we are given another view of the second coming of Christ. Daniel was given this picture in his night vision. (Dan 7:13 KJV) I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. When the Lord Jesus Christ returns, He is going to return on the clouds of glory. This may have allusion to the Shekinah glory cloud which followed the Israelites in the desert wanderings. Some even believe that when the Lord returns, He will be returning with clouds of believers. Revelation 19 shows us that when the Lord returns that the army of believers will be following Him. We are assured in this verse that when He does return, that the entire world is going to see it. Since the world is round and there are 24 time zones, this second coming is going to be a miracle so everyone in the world is going to behold it.

It is also told us that those who pierced Him would see Him, along with all the kindreds of the earth shall wail. The word “kindreds” carries with it the meaning of “peoples or nations.” The second part of this verse has language similar to Zechariah 12:10 which speaks about the nation mourning for Christ. (Zec 12:10 KJV) And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn. However, in the Revelation passage, all the nations of the earth are wailing because of Him. The reason they are wailing is because the day of Judgment has arrived and Him who the unbelievers have scorned realize that they must now stand for Judgment. When Christ opens the sixth seal in Revelation 6:12, the people of the earth are looking for the rocks to hide them but that will be to no avail. This is why the world is wailing or lamenting, because they know the end has come.

#### Revelation 1:8-14

##### **(Rev 1:8 KJV)**

I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

Alpha and Omega are the beginning and end of the Greek Alphabet. The Lord is telling us that He is King, He was in the beginning and He will be in the End. He is the creator of the earth and all mankind, and He will be the terminator of this present Earth. He rules at present from His throne in heaven. He was in eternity past and also history past as he was the creator of Adam and Eve. Then He shall be in eternity future and also in all the events which will unravel during the period from the first coming of Christ to the second coming of Christ. He will be totally in charge and no matter how bad it looks, Christ will always be victorious and will make His people victorious. God's three-fold eternal testimony is repeated here from verse 4 for the reassurance of all His children. The Alpha and Omega is called a merism, in which something in totality is expressed by two contrasting parts, such as old and new. What we have here is beginning and ending. In other words, God is the God of every moment of history, from beginning to end.

##### **(Rev 1:9 KJV)**

I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

Here John identifies himself with all the brethren who are experiencing tribulation. He tells them that he is their companion in tribulation. The word “companion” carries with it the meaning of “fellow partaker.” Actually John is stating here that he is a fellow partaker in “the tribulation” as the definite article is found in the Greek. What tribulation would John be talking about? The fact that the entire Christian life is tribulation because it goes from one test to another. The word “tribulation” carries with it the meaning of “affliction or oppression.” Tribulation of the saints is a major theme in the book of Revelation. Tribulation is something that the churches will also suffer from the time of the writing of Revelation to the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, so individual persecution was just a precursor to the persecution and tribulation the churches would face. When John received this vision of Revelation, he was exiled to Patmos which is where prisoners were sent as this was a penal colony. Life on Patmos was not a Mediterranean paradise, it was

anything but that. Domitian was the emperor of Rome at that time and he was one of the very few that banished Christians from the Empire rather than just kill them. John was there to receive the word of God and at the same time to be a testimony for the Lord Jesus Christ, having held to the true Gospel and remaining uncompromising in his testimony. For if he was compromising, he would never have been exiled to Patmos. This is why he claimed he was in the patience (endurance) of the Lord Jesus Christ for it was only through Christ that one could endure the Roman persecution. It is the same today as one can only endure persecution in the strength of Christ. (Mat 10:22 KJV) And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

### **(Rev 1:10 KJV)**

I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

Here John begins the vision which he is about to give the churches. He stated that he was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day. This vision could have come to John while he was worshipping on Sunday or the vision could have projected him into the future when the day of the Lord will become a reality on earth. Nevertheless, John was now in the vision and was starting to receive the Revelation of the Lord Jesus Christ. John hears behind him a great voice. The word "great" carries with it the meaning of "large or loud." He likens that voice to that of a trumpet. The trumpet was one which gave the sound to battle. (1 Cor 14:8 KJV) For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle? What was about to be unfolded in the book of Revelation is a great battle between Satan and his forces and the Kingdom of God and the Lord Jesus Christ culminating in the final defeat of Satan. Zephaniah speaks of the day of the Lord with the sound of the trumpet.

(Zep 1:14-16 KJV) The great day of the LORD is near, it is near, and hasteth greatly, even the voice of the day of the LORD: the mighty man shall cry there bitterly. {15} That day is a day of wrath, a day of trouble and distress, a day of wasteness and desolation, a day of darkness and gloominess, a day of clouds and thick darkness, {16} A day of the trumpet and alarm against the fenced cities, and against the high towers.

The trumpet sounds a warning that there is going to be an impending battle and we see that battle raging in full in the book of Revelation. Zephaniah calls it the day of the trumpet which we can see is a day of battle. Zephaniah calls it a day of clouds, gloom, wasteness, desolation, weeping, and thick darkness. It is a grim description given by Zephaniah but it is one which is perfectly synonymous with the book of Revelation as we will see. (Exo 19:16 KJV) And it came to pass on the third day in the morning, that there were thunders and lightnings, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud; so that all the people that was in the camp trembled. Moses also heard the voice of God which sounded like that of a trumpet.

### **Rev 1:11 KJV)**

Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

Here we have the identity of the one whose voice is like a trumpet. It is the Lord Jesus Christ who is now commanding John to write this vision in a book and then he is to send it to the seven churches. In Revelation 1:4 we saw that seven is a number which denotes completeness. So although the Lord Jesus Christ gives the following to these seven churches, it is meant to go to all the churches. There were churches in Illyricum and Jerusalem and other places which would also have access to these writings and we see



that every church in existence today which has a Bible, will have the seven letters to the seven churches. So Jesus uses the seven churches of Asia as representative of all the churches which will come into existence until the last day.

**(Rev 1:12 KJV)**

And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks;

John now turns around and sees the voice which was speaking to him and when he turned he saw seven golden candlesticks. The seven golden candlesticks are the seven churches which he just named. (Rev 1:20 KJV) The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches. Within the context of the seven churches, we need to realize that they represent all the churches down through history. When a local church goes apostate, the candlestick is removed and they plunge fully into apostasy.

**(Rev 1:13 KJV)**

And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

Then John sees in the midst of these seven churches, the Son of Man, the Lord Jesus Christ. Daniel had a similar vision of the Son of man. (Dan 7:13 KJV) I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. This vision of Jesus standing in the midst of the churches gives hope and encouragement to those churches that are suffering persecution. It also tells us that the Lord Jesus Christ must always be the center of any true church. Then John goes on to try and describe what he saw. The Lord Jesus was clothed with a garment to the foot and he had on a golden girdle around his chest. These clothes represent the Lord Jesus in a priestly and kingly garment. The present ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ, as stated in the book of Hebrews, is one of intercessory ministry which would make Him our High Priest. When the Lord Jesus was here on Earth and he suffered on the cross, he was stripped naked before being placed on that cross. Here we have a picture of Him as being fully clothed in royal apparel commensurate with the offices He holds.

**(Rev 1:14 KJV)**

His head and his hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire;

The head and hairs of the Lord Jesus Christ are white as wool. The color white is denoting absolute purity. (Exo 16:31 KJV) And the house of Israel called the name thereof Manna: and it was like coriander seed, white; and the taste of it was like wafers made with honey. If you notice that the Manna which came down from heaven was also white. The Manna represented the bread of life Himself. (John 6:35 KJV) And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. Then we are told that not only white like wool but white as snow. We have all seen snow when it first falls, it is pure white. (Dan 7:9 KJV) I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire. Daniel had also had the same vision of the Lord Jesus Christ and saw him in the same manner that John saw Him, as pure as pure can be.

Then John sees the eyes of the Lord Jesus as a flame of fire. (Dan 10:5-6 KJV) Then I lifted

up mine eyes, and looked, and behold a certain man clothed in linen, whose loins were girded with fine gold of Uphaz: {6} His body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in colour to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude. Daniel also sees the eyes of the Lord Jesus Christ that they were like lamps of fire. The eyes of the Lord Jesus as a flame of fire would represent someone who was ready to pronounce judgment because in the Bible fire represents judgment. His eyes are able to see through into the inner man as fire burns away dross, the eyes of the Lord Jesus can penetrate through and see inside the real man. This means nothing can ever escape the eyes of the Lord Jesus. He knows who His enemies are and He knows who His children are. Nothing can escape the eyes of the Lord Jesus Christ.

### Revelation 1:15-20

#### **(Rev 1:15 KJV)**

And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters.

John continues his description of the Lord Jesus Christ. He now focuses on the feet. If you notice the feet are as brass. Brass is normally an alloy made of copper and tin. Here it is believed that the alloy was akin to that of copper and gold. This description of the feet of Jesus gives us an indication that He had gone through the fires of judgment. Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego also went through the fire of affliction and because of the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ, they came through victorious.

(Dan 3:25-27 KJV) He answered and said, Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God. {26} Then Nebuchadnezzar came near to the mouth of the burning fiery furnace, and spake, and said, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, ye servants of the most high God, come forth, and come hither. Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, came forth of the midst of the fire. {27} And the princes, governors, and captains, and the king's counsellors, being gathered together, saw these men, upon whose bodies the fire had no power, nor was an hair of their head singed, neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them.

When we read about the brass feet of the Lord Jesus, He too, came through the fires of Judgment on behalf of His Elect. He suffered the wrath of God for the sake of His people and this is what the metaphor of the brass feet were. The word for "brass" in the Greek carries with it the possibility that it is bronze. Then we are told that His voice was that of many waters.

(Ezek 1:24 KJV) And when they went, I heard the noise of their wings, like the noise of great waters, as the voice of the Almighty, the voice of speech, as the noise of an host: when they stood, they let down their wings.

(Ezek 43:2 KJV) And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east: and his voice was like a noise of many waters: and the earth shined with his glory.

God's voice in Ezekiel is coming from the temple scene within Ezekiel 40-48 and the voice of the Lord Jesus Christ also comes out from the Temple of Heaven.

(Psa 29:3 KJV) The voice of the LORD is upon the waters: the God of glory thundereth: the LORD is upon many waters.

The Lord's voice is very mighty and authoritative as one looks at a great waterfall and is awed by its power and the sound that it makes as the waters go over the edge. The Lord's voice is like that, He speaks with authority and power. No longer is He the humble man who walked the streets of Palestine but is now speaking as the Great I Am in declaring what is to come.

**(Rev 1:16 KJV)**

And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp twoedged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

We are told that the Lord has in His right hand seven stars. In Verse 20, we are told that the stars represent the angels of the seven churches. The word "angel" carries with it the meaning of "messenger" and in this context it may be referring to the church leaders in each congregation. Seven is the number of completeness and although the Lord is sending this letter to the seven churches, it must be understood that it applies to every church assembly which will come into existence until the last day. (Dan 12:3 KJV) And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever. The responsibility of the church and of the individual Christian is to send forth the Gospel and those whom God uses to bring them into the Kingdom will be as stars for eternity.

Then we are told of a two-edged sword.

(Heb 4:12 KJV) For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

The two-edged sword is the Word of God. The Lord Jesus Christ being God, whatever He says is the word of God. The two-edged sword of the Word of God is that on one side there is judgment and on the other side is the mercy of salvation. The word "sharp" in describing this two-edged sword carries with it the meaning of "swift or hasty." This is important because the Lord states that if a church goes apostate, He will remove their candlestick. This warning He gave to the church at Ephesus. (Rev 2:5 KJV) Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent. He also gave a similar warning to the church at Sardis. (Rev 3:3 KJV) Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee. He will visit Sardis and remove their candlestick too, which will cause them to go into full apostasy and no longer be a local church in the world wide church.

Then we are told that the countenance of Christ was that of the sun when it shines in its strength. As human beings, we can never look directly at the sun because it will blind us and this is why Christians will have to be qualified with the new resurrected bodies to be able to look upon God. The word "strength" in the Greek is the word for "power." (Exo 33:20 KJV) And he said, Thou canst not see my face: for there shall no man see me, and live. Moses wanted to see the glory of God but God told him that no one can look upon Him and live because His glory would consume the sin-filled human body. The word "countenance" carries with it the meaning of "face or outward appearance." This means that not only was Christ's face glorious but his entire appearance.

### **(Rev 1:17 KJV)**

And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last:

Here was John who walked with the Lord on earth who now sees Him in all His heavenly glory. When John sees Him, he falls at His feet as if he was dead. The word “dead” is the word which means “lifeless.” Now a point needs to be made here. In the Charismatic movement, there are many who claim to have been in heaven and seen Jesus and talked with Him. These people are deceived by Satan or they are just plain liars. In all the accounts of these so-called heavenly visits, nothing was ever said about the glory of Christ causing them to fall at His feet. One such account given by Jesse Duplantis who claims he was in heaven for five hours and yet not a thing in that account speaks of the glory of Christ or him falling before the Lord Jesus Christ. John knew Jesus on Earth and yet fell down before Him as dead. Who then can honestly believe these people who claim to have been in heaven and have not experienced what John did? They have been satanically deceived and in turn are deceiving others.

Then the Lord Jesus takes hold of John by His right hand. (Isa 41:10 KJV) Fear thou not; for I am with thee; be not dismayed; for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of my righteousness. The right hand of the Lord is associated with power. Here Jesus was strengthening John and assuring him that he does not need to fear. Once again we are given the eternal moniker of the Lord Jesus as the one who was in the beginning and the end, the first and the last. This description is also given in the Old Testament.

(Isa 41:4 KJV) Who hath wrought and done it, calling the generations from the beginning? I the LORD, the first, and with the last; I am he.

(Isa 44:6 KJV) Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God.

(Isa 48:12 KJV) Hearken unto me, O Jacob and Israel, my called; I am he; I am the first, I also am the last.

### **Rev 1:18 KJV)**

I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

Here the Lord Jesus Christ confirms to John that He was dead and now is alive. John was at the crucifixion of Christ but here Christ is reaffirming to him that He is the same one who physically died and was resurrected from the dead and never to die again, as He states that He is alive for evermore. The debt for the sins of the Elect has been paid in full. “I am he that liveth” is also a title for God.

(Josh 3:10 KJV) And Joshua said, Hereby ye shall know that the living God is among you, and that he will without fail drive out from before you the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Hivites, and the Perizzites, and the Girgashites, and the Amorites, and the Jebusites.

(Isa 37:4 KJV) It may be the LORD thy God will hear the words of Rabshakeh, whom the king of Assyria his master hath sent to reproach the living God, and will reprove the words which the LORD thy God hath heard: wherefore lift up thy prayer for the remnant that is left.

Then we are told that Jesus has the keys of hell and of death. This means that Christ has

full authority over this realm. (Isa 22:22 KJV) And the key of the house of David will I lay upon his shoulder; so he shall open, and none shall shut; and he shall shut, and none shall open. We read from Isaiah that the Lord Jesus will have supreme authority and that no one will be able to reverse anything He does. (Isa 43:13 KJV) Yea, before the day was I am he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand: I will work, and who shall let it? This is a very interesting revelation because we will see that in the book of Revelation there are going to be times when Satan and his demons will be released from Hell to make assault on the church. This means that Christ has complete control over the events which will take place between His first and second comings. The Lord also has reign over death. When a believer dies, He gives them the key to the Kingdom of Heaven so they may enter. The believer need not fear the portals of death since Christ has already gone before them and has opened the kingdom by the key of His death. (Luke 12:32 KJV) Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

#### **(Rev 1:19 KJV)**

Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter;

Now that John understands that Jesus is now in His kingly glory and rightful estate, John can now wipe away the understanding he had of Jesus when He was a humble man walking the dusty streets of Palestine. Now he sees Jesus as He was before He came to earth to die for the Elect. Now John is told to write. The word "write" is in the imperative mood which means that it is a command given him by King Jesus. John is given a four-fold division to record. He first records what he saw which is in the present chapter. Then He is to write the things which are at present which we will read about in the letters to the seven churches in chapters two and three. Then he is told to write the vision which will encompass the time from the first coming of Christ to the second coming of Christ, which is found in chapters four to twenty. Then he is also given a vision of the New Heavens and the New Earth in chapters twenty one and twenty two.

#### **(Rev 1:20 KJV)**

The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches.

Here Jesus is giving John the meaning of two of the mysteries. The seven stars are the angels or messengers of the seven churches which are probably the church leaders, the Pastor in particular because why would the Lord write a letter to an angel? He would just command him. We see that the seven letters to the seven churches are addressed to the angels of these churches. The seven golden candlesticks are the churches themselves. The candlestick is something which provides light to surrounding areas. When a local church becomes apostate, their candlestick is removed which means that Jesus removes that particular assembly from being part of the worldwide church. If the true Gospel is not being preached, then it is no longer a church where Christ is glorified, so it is removed as a surgeon removes a cancerous tumor. The rest of the body is still there but that particular assembly is no longer a part. That local church assembly may still exist but they will no longer be a true Gospel church. We see them today as many of these churches are more concerned about poverty and environmental issues rather than the Gospel. (Isa 8:20 KJV) To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them. Isaiah straightly states that if they do not speak of the word of God, then there is no light in them which shows that their candlestick or assembly has been severed from the true churches.

Revelation 2:1-7  
The Church at Ephesus

**(Rev 2:1 KJV)**

Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks;

Now John begins to write the letters to the seven churches. All the information written to the seven churches can be applied to every church congregation which will come on the scene until the last day. While Christ focused His attention on these seven churches, it must be noted that all the churches must heed the admonition given in these verses. We read that Christ holds the seven stars in his right hand. (Isa 41:10 KJV) Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of my righteousness. The right hand is always associated with the power of God and it is Christ who upholds those who are placed into church leadership, primarily the Pastor, since it is they that bring the message to the congregations. When the Pastor is a student of the Bible, his messages will be biblically correct but if he begins to combine worldly beliefs with the word of God, then the message becomes adulterated and there is danger of being removed from the true churches of Christ unless they repent. The word “walketh” in the Greek is in the present tense and active voice. This means that Christ is in the midst of the churches till the end of time. The active voice means that the subject is doing the action of the verb. The subject being Christ who is walking among His churches. Notice that He does not dispatch an angel to do the work but He Himself, since he paid the eternal price for the Elect within those congregations, is intimately involved with every congregation and this is why we see so much detail in the seven letters resulting in encouragements and warnings.

**(Rev 2:2 KJV)**

I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars:

Here the Lord is stating that He knows the works of this church. The words “I know” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “understand or know fully.” The Lord Jesus is fully cognizant of the conditions which prevail in every church. He also knows the labor which this church has done. The word “labour” carries with it the meaning of “toil, weariness, or trouble.” So the Lord is fully aware of all the troubles and toils this church has gone through. He is also aware of their patience which carries with it the meaning of “endurance.” He also knows how this church cannot bear those that are evil. We are told that the evil they are experiencing are those who claim to be apostles and are false. These apostles were nothing but liars. Christ had commended this church for realizing that these false apostles were nothing but liars. Jude speaks much of the false teachers who come into an assembly to try and seduce the people with their false teachings. It is interesting that this church did not just accept these people but tried them to see if they were real apostles. The modern church can learn from this especially when someone comes into the church and claims to be a prophet or apostle. They need to be tried as in a court of law.

**(Rev 2:3 KJV)**

And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

The commendation continues with the Lord knowing that they have borne or sustained

during this time and did endure the false teachings which would have destroyed the church. The Lord commend them for laboring in His name during this time. (Heb 6:10 KJV) For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have showed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister. He commends them that even during the time when false teachers were attempting to divide the church that they did not faint. The word "faint" carries with it the meaning of "becoming weary or fatigued." The church at Ephesus had continued to remain strong even though there were false teachers among them. They had kept their testimony and the true teachings which sustained them during these satanic attacks.

**(Rev 2:4 KJV)**

Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

Even though the Ephesian church had such great zeal for the work of the Lord, they had fallen prey to giving themselves to the work of the Lord without giving themselves to the Lord. This is a common occurrence with many Christians. They will have time for the Lord's work but never have time for the Lord. They may neglect their prayer time or devotional time because they are too busy in the work. The word "left" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "willful abandonment or neglecting for a long time." How many Christians in their personal lives fail because they work voraciously for the Lord? Many times the victims includes others like their families. There have been many in the ministry who have neglected their families for the work of the ministry. Our first love must be the Lord Jesus Christ and the work must become second to that.

**(Rev 2:5 KJV)**

Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

Christ now commands them to remember the past when there was love in the church and when people were more apt to be concerned about each other. The word "remember" is in the imperative mood which makes it a command. The words "thou art fallen" carry with it the meaning of "fall off or from, drop away." He is telling them to remember those early days of the church and also of their own conversion. It is a shame that when Christians first become saved, they have great love and zeal for the Lord but after a while, they begin to lose that initial love and then fall into a routine which may lead them away from the Lord while being in the work of the Lord. The Lord now tells them to repent which is also a command. That word "repent" means "a change of mind." The first works they are to do would have been the works of love when they were first saved and working for the Lord was motivated by loving the Lord. Notice that if they do not repent, then the Lord stated that He would come quickly and remove their candlestick. The word "quickly" carries with it the meaning of "speed or shortness." So the Lord does not expect His commands to be voted on as the modern church does, His commands are to be obeyed posthaste. He commands this church to return to their Christian roots immediately or else they will be removed from the living churches of Christ and then the false teachers will take over completely.

**(Rev 2:6 KJV)**

But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

The Lord now commends them again that they hate the deeds (works) of the Nicolaitanes, which He also hates. The word "hate" means to "detest or abhor." The word "Nicolaitanes" is a compound of two Greek words "nikos and laos" which together means "conqueror of the people." Now this name is very similar to the Hebrew meaning of "Balaam" which

means "lord of the people." If you remember that Balaam had tried to curse the Israelites for Balak, king of Moab, but could not. Balaam was an apostate false prophet. Ephesus was the headquarters of the cult of Diana, also called Artemis. Now the Nicolaitanes may have attempted to bring the pagan teachings and works of Diana into the church and the true Christians knew that it was false and abhorred that teaching. Although not much is known about the Nicolaitanes, yet, if the Lord and true Christians hated their deeds or works, then it is probably associated with idolatry which the Lord has hated since the time of Babylon. The cult of Diana pervaded the city of Ephesus and no doubt tried to destroy the Ephesian church with its teachings.

**(Rev 2:7 KJV)**

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

Here the Lord states that only those who have spiritual ears will be able to hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches. Those who are unsaved will be unable to understand the spiritual commands of the Lord. If you notice that the Spirit is not just speaking unto the church at Ephesus, but He is speaking to churches, which means that this letter with its warnings are not just directed at Ephesus but at all the churches. This letter is a warning to all the churches that they are to beware of false teachings and false prophets who would desire to destroy the church. (Acts 20:29 KJV) For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Paul knew that after his home going that false prophets would descend upon the church. Ephesus was one of the churches founded by Paul and he projected correctly as within 30 years the Ephesus church was attacked by false teachers.

Then we are told that those who overcome will be allowed to eat of the tree of life. The only ones who overcome are those who overcome in Christ. (Rev 22:14 KJV) Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. Eating of the tree of life means to be partakers of eternal life with the Lord Jesus Christ who is the tree of life. This tree of life is in the paradise of God also known as Heaven.

(Luke 23:43 KJV) And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

(2 Cor 12:4 KJV) How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

Both Paul and the thief on the cross had experience with paradise. Paul was caught up into paradise, the third Heaven and the thief on the cross went to paradise upon his physical death. The Paradise of God is an eternal return to that relationship God had with people before sin had entered the world.

Revelation 2:8-11  
The Church at Smyrna

**(Rev 2:8 KJV)**

And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive;



Now John begins the letter to the second church at Smyrna. John again uses the eternal moniker of Christ that he is the first and last, and that He was the same one who came to earth and died and was resurrected never to die again but to reign eternally in heaven. The church at Smyrna was a persecuted church. The city of Smyrna was a city which was tied closely with Rome. It is not known exactly when the church at Smyrna was founded but it may have been when Paul was in Ephesus on his third missionary journey.

**(Rev 2:9 KJV)**

I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

Here the Lord is assuring these Christians that He is fully aware of their situation. He knows the works which they have been doing in His name and along with those works comes the tribulation associated with holding up the name of Christ in a pagan society. These Christians were undergoing some grave persecution and that is why so many of them were in poverty because they were probably being fired from their jobs and had lost their means of support. The word "poverty" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "being destitute." However, the Lord sees them as being rich. (Prov 13:7 KJV) There is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches. The Proverbs verse teaches that there are some who are rich, yet they are the ones in true poverty because worldly possessions are not something to build a life on because they can change in a moment. Then there are those who are poor in this life, yet they are rich, rich in the things of the Lord as the church at Smyrna was.

The Lord was also well aware of those who were blaspheming in the church claiming to be Jews but were really of Satan's people. These people were not claiming to be the physical Jews but were claiming to be Christians. Now they may have been Jews who were making believe they were saved and joined the church. The Bible gives us a definition of what a true Jew is:

(Rom 2:28-29 KJV) For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

The true Jew is the one who is saved and not one who just joins a synagogue or one that is born of the lineage of the physical Jews. God is speaking of the redeemed as the Israel of God, His true redeemed nation. In Smyrna there was an alliance between the Romans and the Jews to persecute the Christians. In fact, Polycarp was martyred in Smyrna by a consortium of both Jews and Romans. There was major hatred in Smyrna for the Christians by both Jews and Romans. The Jews did not have much trouble in accepting the deity of the Emperor of Rome along side the worship of the true God. Their history will attest to how easily they accepted idolatry and here would be no difference because an alliance with Rome would divert any persecution away from them. They also considered the Christians to be committing blasphemy by worshipping Christ, whom they considered to be just a dead criminal.

**(Rev 2:10 KJV)**

Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

Christ assures them that they should not fear those things which they would suffer as there were probably many who feared these persecutions. Maybe some had thought that God was allowing this to happen because He was angry with them but the Lord comforts them

by saying not to fear. He tells them that Satan is definitely behind the persecutions and this will be seen in subsequent chapters of Revelation as he is the archenemy of Christ and Christians. In Rome, when someone was placed in prison, it was a place of detention which was the prelude to some kind of sentence being handed out. Here we see that the Lord is allowing the testing of these Christians and He is telling them to be faithful unto death. The crown of life which those martyred believers will receive is the crown of the king. (Rev 1:6 KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. We are told that the believers are kings and kings wear crowns but this is not speaking of a physical crown, it is a crown of life that each believer receives which is eternal life. (Mat 10:22 KJV) And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. One of the key traits of the true Christian is that they will remain faithful unto the end of their life. The false Christian will run away from the Lord sometime during their life and that will give evidence that they were never saved. (John 10:13 KJV) The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

Then in this verse we are told that the Christians at Smyrna will suffer persecution for the purpose of trying their faith. (James 1:12 KJV) Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. James also speaks of the crown of life being given to those Christians who endure trials in their life. One thing that sticks out in this verse is the time frame of the trials. We are told that they will last ten days. The number ten is basically representative of the fullness of what is in view when the number is being used in that context. Here these Christians were facing persecution for ten days. It could have been a literal ten days denoting that the persecution would be of short duration.

(Dan 1:11-15 KJV) Then said Daniel to Melzar, whom the prince of the eunuchs had set over Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, {12} Prove thy servants, I beseech thee, ten days; and let them give us pulse to eat, and water to drink. {13} Then let our countenances be looked upon before thee, and the countenance of the children that eat of the portion of the king's meat: and as thou seest, deal with thy servants. {14} So he consented to them in this matter, and proved them ten days. {15} And at the end of ten days their countenances appeared fairer and fatter in flesh than all the children which did eat the portion of the king's meat.

Daniel had asked the King's servant to give them vegetables to eat instead of the King's diet. Well in the above account we read that that the four men were given vegetables for ten days and the time of testing had ended and Daniel and his friends had looked better than those who ate the King's menu. Here then the number ten is both literal and figurative because it encompassed the full time of the testing. It may be the same with the testing of the Christians in Smyrna. However, I would lean more toward the figurative since not every Christian who would face persecution would be thrown into prison and tried at the same time. I am sure this persecution had taken time because they had to find out the names of all the Christians and then take time to round them up. The ten days probably represented a short duration of persecution and the fullness of the time of persecution as it was in Daniel's case.

#### **(Rev 2:11 KJV)**

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.

Those who have the spiritual ears are those ears that are attuned to spiritual things by reason of salvation will be able to hear and understand what the Spirit is saying unto the churches. Keep in mind that these letters apply to all the churches, not just the one in Smyrna. The word "hear" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "hearing with

understanding.” This is something that the unbeliever is unable to do. Those that overcome, and the word is in the present tense, will not be hurt or affected by the second death. The word “overcome” carries with it the meaning of “prevail or be victorious.” We saw that the Lord said those who endure to the end shall be saved. The only ones who can endure and overcome persecution are those who are truly saved. The second death has no effect on the true believer because Christ has saved them from the second death which is Hell. Until the Lord returns, believers will only be subject unto the first death, which is physical.

### Revelation 2:12-17 The Church at Pergamos

#### **(Rev 2:12 KJV)**

And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges;

The next letter is to the church at Pergamos. This letter begins with the description of Christ who has the sharp sword with two edges. The two edges are mercy and judgment. Christ has the authority to bring both testing upon the churches and blessings. In the book of Revelation we will see how Satan brings persecution to the church but all the while he is under the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ and can progress no further than he is allowed to.

#### **(Rev 2:13 KJV)**

I know thy works and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

Here the Lord Jesus Christ commends the church at Pergamos by assuring them that he is fully aware of their works. He makes a distinction in this statement that He knows where the Christians dwell and where Satan's seat is. By making this distinction, He is stating that light and darkness do not dwell in the same place. In the light of the heavy pagan surroundings, Christ commends them for holding fast His name. The words “holdest fast” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “to have power or rule over, and hold.” So these Christians held the name of the Lord Jesus in power in the Spirit. They also held on to the Faith of the Lord Jesus Christ. They did not deny it. The word “deny” carries with it the meaning of “renounce or disown.” In spite of satanic opposition, the church held on to the testimony and name of Christ, bearing witness to Him in a very pagan area. Antipas was a member of the church at Pergamos and not too much is known of him except for the reference here. The Lord gives him the title of “my faithful martyr.” Notice the Lord does not say “a” but states that he was “my” faithful martyr. This shows the care and knowledge of His children the Lord Jesus possesses.

A little more about Satan's seat. Some have concluded that Satan's seat was in the church of Pergamos at that time. There is no doubt that Satan had tried to influence and destroy all the churches but that would not happen because the Lord stated that the gates of hell would not prevail against it. This speaks of Satan and his leaders because in Old Testament times, the rulers of the city would sit by the gates of the city. This is why the Lord stated that the gates of Hell or all the power of evil from Satan himself down to the lowest demon could not stop the growth of the church. So therefore, Satan would not have

a seat in this church which means that he would not be ruling in that church.

Pergamos was a center of paganism. In that city was a temple which was made to Zeus. However, Pergamos is best remembered as the official cult center of emperor worship in Asia. In 29 B.C. a temple was raised in honor of Augustus Caesar. Then another temple was raised to Trajan who lived from 53-117 A.D. but became emperor from 98-117 A.D. His lifespan would have fallen into the time frame of Revelation. The city was called "the temple warden." Rome became the center of Satan's activity in the west and Pergamos became the center of satanic activity in the east. This is why the Lord made a distinction between knowing where His children live and where Satan's seat is. The word "seat" is actually the word "throne." So Satan would have had rule over the pagans in Pergamos but he would have no rule in the church.

**(Rev 2:14 KJV)**

But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

Nevertheless, although this church had held up the name of Christ and did not abandon the true faith, there were still a few in this church who had held on to the teachings of Balaam. In Numbers 25:1-5, we see the result of the teachings of Baalam. Baalam told the king of Moab to entice the men of Israel with the women of Moab. In Numbers 25:1-5, we see this taking place as God stated they were whoring with these women. The result was that many of the men of Israel had begun to worship the false gods of Moab. What we have here is that some in this church were compromising the true Gospel and began to go after other teachings. The other teachings may have been taken from the surrounding pagan temples and their false ways. We can see this that some of the people in the church were eating things sacrificed to idols. It was probable that some were attending pagan feasts and trying to bring the false ways into the church. Attendance of these pagan feasts were probably done under the idea of social or political atmosphere which can have a devastating effect on someone and can lead them astray. The fornication in view could be those who went to the pagan temples and engaged the services of a temple prostitute or it can simply mean that they were committing spiritual fornication by trying to amalgamate the true Gospel with pagan religion.

**(Rev 2:15 KJV)**

So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

The church at Pergamos like the church at Ephesus also had those who held to the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes. For a full explanation see the commentary on 2:6.

**(Rev 2:16 KJV)**

Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

The Lord Jesus is warning them with a commandment to repent. The word "repent" is in the imperative mood which makes it a command. If repentance does not take place quickly, Christ is going to visit that church and will fight against them who hold to these pernicious doctrines. The words "fight against them" in the Greek means "will make war." The sword of His mouth will be the word of judgment coming from Him. Only a few held this doctrine but it is the responsibility of all believers to keep apostasy out of their church assembly. If false teachings are not stopped with the few who adhere to them, then it is only a matter of time before the entire church will be affected by them. In the modern church we have seen many times over the devastating effects of allowing false teachings

in the church which has resulted in the demise of many individual congregations. Real partaking of the false religions was a serious problem at Pergamos and had to be dealt with swiftly or else Christ would come and make war with the guilty ones which could result in the other Christians suffering as well.

**(Rev 2:17 KJV)**

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

Here again the Lord is speaking to those who are saved because they are the only ones who have spiritual ears to hear what the Spirit is saying to all the churches. Christ promises that those who overcome or are victorious in this matter will be given to eat of the hidden manna. The hidden manna is the word of God as God opens our eyes to truth and the manna also represented the Lord Jesus Christ. Remember the white appearance of it on the ground? Then we have read that white signified the purity of the Lord Jesus Christ. The manna was heavenly food and both the word of God and the Lord Jesus Christ would be the spiritual food of the Christian who is walking in the Spirit. The white stone also symbolizes the Lord Jesus Christ because he was the corner stone. (1 Pet 2:6-7 KJV) Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. {7} Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, In that white stone, the person will be given a new name. A new name is also associated with a new life.

(Isa 62:2 KJV) And the Gentiles shall see thy righteousness, and all kings thy glory: and thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD shall name.

Isaiah 62:2 states that the Gentiles shall see the Lord's righteousness which means this is a prophecy of the coming of the salvation of the Gentiles. The Gentile believers will be given a new name.

(Isa 62:4 KJV) Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.

The Gentiles were a forsaken people because they were normally associated with idolatry as we saw those nations which surrounded Israel. No longer will the saved Gentiles be forsaken or desolate. We will be called "Hephzibah" which means "my delight is in her" and "Beulah" which means "married." From these terms we can see that two of the new names the saved will be called will be the "bride of Christ and the New Jerusalem." In Revelation 3:12 we are told that the new name will be the name of God the Father. (Rev 3:12 KJV) Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name. Only those who have become saved are going to know what the name is because those who are unsaved will not have spiritual knowledge of the intimate relationship between God and His redeemed children.

## The Church at Thyatira

### **(Rev 2:18 KJV)**

And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass;

Here John begins the letter to Thyatira by stating that Jesus is the Son of God and brings in the description of one who is the judge. The eyes of flaming fire are eyes which have the ability to judge. (1 Cor 3:13 KJV) Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. The Lord Jesus will be the Judge at the last day and each person's works will be tested through the fires of judgment which are represented by the flaming eyes of the Lord Jesus. John also reminds the Thyatira church that the Lord's feet are like fine brass which represents Him going through the fires of Judgment on Calvary for His Elect.

### **(Rev 2:19 KJV)**

I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first.

Here the Lord Jesus assures these Christians that He is fully aware of the works which they are doing in His name. He also assures them that he is fully cognizant of their charity. The word "charity" in the Greek is the word for "love." Then He tells them He knows of their service. The word "service" carries with it the meaning of "ministering." They also ministered and loved in the faith of the Lord Jesus Christ. These Christians were showing much faith in their lives and work. Then He tells them He fully knows of their patience. The word "patience" carries with it the meaning of "endurance." Their witness for the Lord Jesus Christ would bring persecution but they have endured well. Then the Lord mentions works again but this time in a different context. He mentions that their works have become increased in contrast to the Ephesian church whose works waned from the beginning (Rev. 2:5). He commends them for their works of love increasing instead of decreasing which happens to the majority of churches. The church at Thyatira increased in their faithful witness.

### **(Rev 2:20 KJV)**

Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

Now the Lord Jesus Christ brings to their attention the things which are causing the church to become weak. Then the name Jezebel is introduced into the text as one who was causing the people of God to seduce the Christians and compromise their church by mixing the true Christianity with false religion.

(1 Ki 16:31-33 KJV) And it came to pass, as if it had been a light thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took to wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal king of the Zidonians, and went and served Baal, and worshipped him. {32} And he reared up an altar for Baal in the house of Baal, which he had built in Samaria. {33} And Ahab made a grove; and Ahab did more to provoke the LORD God of Israel to anger than all the kings of Israel that were before him.

In 1 Kings 16:31 and following we are introduced to King Ahab and his wife Jezebel. Jezebel was the daughter of Ethbaal II who was king of the Sidonians. When she came into power, her husband had made an altar to Baal and worshipped that false god. The allusion in Revelation 2:20 to the Jezebel of Israel tells us that they were permitting an unsaved woman to teach and that teaching had seduced many in that church. The word

“seduced” carries with it the meaning of “lead astray, delude, or mislead.” Whatever this woman was teaching was misleading the Christians to commit spiritual fornication and maybe sexual fornication too. Whatever her teachings were, they were definitely of a false religion and had no business inside of the church. She was also in violation of God’s rules about women teaching in a church. (1 Tim 2:11-12 KJV) Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. {12} But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence. We see the same thing in modern churches where women are now teaching in churches and even large crowds. Women like Joyce Meyer, Marilyn Hickey, Gloria Copeland and others in the charismatic movement are teaching and leading people astray with their emotion and prosperity based gospels. These would not exist if men would not attend their meetings in droves. (Isa 3:12 KJV) As for my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths. The problem in Thyatira was the church was permitting this woman to teach and obviously no one had opposed her teachings.

**(Rev 2:21 KJV)**

And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.

The word “space” carries with it the meaning of “time.” The Lord had given this woman time to repent of her pernicious teachings. The word “fornication” is the Greek word “porneia” where we get the English word “pornography.” However, with all false teachers they refuse to repent of their evil teachings as was the case with this woman. The church could have stopped her but they did not. She was probably titillating the flesh of her hearers with her false teaching. The word titillate carries with it the meaning of “to stimulate by means of tickling.” (2 Tim 4:3 KJV) For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; False teachers always speak with authority and this is how they always gain a following.

**(Rev 2:22 KJV)**

Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

(Ezek 23:11 KJV) And when her sister Aholibah saw this, she was more corrupt in her inordinate love than she, and in her whoredoms more than her sister in her whoredoms. (Ezek 23:17 KJV) And the Babylonians came to her into the bed of love, and they defiled her with their whoredom, and she was polluted with them, and her mind was alienated from them.

In Ezekiel 23:11-17, we read that Aholibah (Judah and Benjamin) had seen the wickedness which the northern ten tribes had partaken in plus they also saw that the Lord had punished them by sending them into the Assyrians as punishment for their idolatry. This punishment did not even phase Judah and Benjamin because they did not mend their ways. So the Lord had sent the Babylonians to take Judah captive for seventy years. In Ezekiel 23:17, the Bible tells us that the Babylonians came to Judah in the bed of love. In other words, they came to them as a husband comes to a wife or a wife comes to a husband in the bedroom. It is the height of intimacy but the Babylonians were not showing real love but had seduced Judah with their false religion and caused them to commit whoredom which resulted in their punishment.

God is basically saying the same thing to the Thyatira church that He is going to cast her into a bed and those who commit spiritual fornication with her will go into great tribulation. Those who followed her pernicious teachings would suffer great affliction and distress in their lives. It is like Christians today who follow the false teachings of any false teacher. They become very spiritually dry and their spiritual life comes apart by being in great

affliction. It is not beyond the means of God to remove a person's material goods or even loved ones to get the attention of the one who has delved into spiritual fornication. However, God is also telling them that they could avoid this if they repent and turn from those false teachings. This is why He sent the Prophets to Judah to try and get them to turn from their spiritual harlotry. This is why He sent this letter to Thyatira to get them to repent of the same type of evil.

**(Rev 2:23 KJV)**

And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

Those who continue to follow the false teachings of Jezebel are like children following their parents. Here God warns that those who are following false doctrines are giving evidence that they are unsaved and they will face judgment at the last day and will be sent to hell in the second death. This admonition that God will kill the false followers will give evidence to all the churches that He knows the innermost beliefs of all people. The reins and heart is a figure of speech which represent the innermost being of a person. This means that no one can escape the knowledge of God concerning them. God knows who His true children are and also who the false Christians are. The result is that God is going to recompense to everyone according to their works. Those who followed the works of spiritual fornication will be judged and sent to hell. Those who are saved will go immediately into the presence of the Lord.

**(Rev 2:24 KJV)**

But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden.

Now the Lord turns to the rest of the true Christians in the church who have not followed the teachings of Jezebel. (Rom 11:33 KJV) O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! The true believers have experienced the wisdom and knowledge of God which are so deep that they are unsearchable. The true Christian will not experience those deep things of Satan which are those false teachings and false religions which cause people to descend into the deep things of Satan. The deep things of Satan consist of hatred, lies, deceit, and finally judgment and a casting into the lake of fire. This is why the true Christian does not experience these deep things of Satan because of their salvation. The shallow things of Satan are the lies that sin and false teachings are fine but underneath those lies is the reality of eternal damnation. Then the Lord Jesus states that He is not going to place any other burdens on them. The ridding of these false teachers must come first to clean out the church and return it fully to the teachings of Christ.

**(Rev 2:25 KJV)**

But that which ye have already hold fast till I come.

In the commendation of this church the Lord Jesus Christ had assured them He knew of their works, charity, patience, and service. Here He is telling them that they need to cling to what they are doing. Christ knows that this church still has much life and He is telling them to deny the false teachings and even expel them and to hold on to the teachings which build up the church. He tells them to continue to be faithful until He returns. For a church to remain faithful in subsequent generations, it is necessary for each generation to choose faithful men to carry on the teachings to the next generation. Paul taught this principle to Timothy. (2 Tim 2:2 KJV) And the things that thou hast heard of me among many



witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also. It is a principle which must be instilled in every church or that church will cease to exist as a faithful church. It only takes one generation for a church to go apostate and to be removed from the living churches of Christ.

**(Rev 2:26 KJV)**

And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

The word “overcometh” is in the present tense which means that the believer does not overcome once but that victory in Christ is an ongoing scenario. Those who overcome are also those who will continue to do the works of the Lord. Those works of the Lord are to be done unto the end. Now two ends are in view here. The first end is the life of the believer. When they complete all the works that the Lord has prepared for them, He will call them home. The second end which is in view, is the end of the world. Once the church completes the task of evangelism, then the final scenario with the loosing of Satan will take place and then comes the end of the world. The word “end” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “completion, result, or conclusion.” Those who truly persevere until the end will be given power (authority) over the nations. Since we are co-heirs with Christ, if we suffer with Him we will also reign with Him. (2 Tim 2:12 KJV) If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us: Rev. 2:26 gives us the insight that Christ has begun to fulfill the promise of Psalm 2 concerning the ruling of the nations.

**(Rev 2:27 KJV)**

And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father.

(Psa 2:7-9 KJV) I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee. {8} Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. {9} Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

This section of Revelation is a fulfillment of Psalm 2 where the Lord Jesus Christ was given the heathen for His inheritance. When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross, He not only bought the salvation for the Elect within Israel, but He purchased the salvation of millions of Gentiles out of all the nations of the world. (Luke 20:17-18 KJV) And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? {18} Whosoever shall fall upon that stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. Here is a scenario given us that those who fall upon the stone, who is the Lord Jesus, shall be broken. That brokenness is not one of fatality but one of salvation. They will be stripped of their worldly pride and arrogance and will become humble in the service of the Lord. Those who remain unsaved, the chief cornerstone will fall on them and grind them to powder, that is, they shall be judged and cast into eternal Hell. The words “broken to shivers” means “broken in pieces.” The rod of iron will be the Gospel. Those who oppose the Gospel and follow Satan will suffer the consequences of eternal judgment. As the potter's vessels can be broken, the unsaved will also be broken in like manner.

**(Rev 2:28 KJV)**

And I will give him the morning star.

Those who become saved will have the Lord Jesus Christ for eternity. (Rev 22:16 KJV) I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star. For Jesus is the Morning Star and He will

give Himself and of Himself to those enduring believers throughout all eternity.

**(Rev 2:29 KJV)**

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

Only those who are saved will understand this because they are the only ones who have a spiritual ear to hear spiritual things. (Luke 24:45 KJV) Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, This truth is taught in the story of the disciples on the road to Emmaus. They did not understand what had transpired in Jerusalem and they did not even know who was having dinner with them until Jesus opened their spiritual understanding. This is why those who are unsaved cannot see the spiritual truths in the Bible and only use it as a moral teaching. Those saved in the churches will understand what is being taught by the Spirit.

Revelation 3:1-6  
The Church at Sardis

**(Rev 3:1 KJV)**

And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

Now the Lord Jesus Christ turns His attention to the church in Sardis. The seven Spirits of God we have seen to be the divine completeness of the Holy Spirit. The seven stars are the angels of these churches, probably these are the pastors of those churches. He tells them that He is fully aware of the works which they are doing and as a result of those works they have a name, in other words, they have a reputation for their works and those works show that they are a living church, however, the Lord Jesus tells them that they are dead. The word for dead in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "lifeless or useless." Those people on the outside were seeing that this church was a live church based on their works. Many today make the same mistake. If they see a church which concerns itself with hunger, environmental issues, political activities, many will say that it is a vibrant church. When it is looked at closely through spiritual eyes, it is seen to be a dead church, that is, spiritually dead. The church at Sardis was one which falling into the ways of a social church rather than remaining a spiritual church. When a church loses its spiritual activity, then it becomes a secular congregation and eventually becomes a dead congregation which is being dead to the things of God. A true church never exchanges the true Gospel for a secularized version.

**(Rev 3:2 KJV)**

Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

The Lord is commanding them to be watchful. The word "watchful" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "be alert or be vigilant." This church was to be vigilant in strengthening those things which remained of when they first became a church. The word "strengthen" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "establish or set firmly." There was obviously still a spiritual base left in the church at Sardis and before they completely died out, the Lord is telling them to rebuild and re-strengthen those spiritual building blocks in the church. The works which the church at Sardis were doing were not perfect or complete

before God. In other words, the works which this church was doing was not to its full potential. The works were not fully realized. They probably lacked the spiritual motivation to do the proper works and to bring them to fruition.

**(Rev 3:3 KJV)**

Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

Watch - Remain vigilant, stay awake, or be alert.

Christ is now commanding them to remember not the fact that they heard but how they received and heard. They received the truth in much hardship and persecution. They also received the Gospel through faith. The Lord is telling them to hold fast to the things they had when they first became a church. Christ is commanding them to repent and abide in those things which make for a solid spiritual church. Worldly things in the church does not grow Christians in the faith. If this church refuses to remain vigilant in those things which still remain, then the Lord is going to come upon them as a thief and when a thief comes, you do not know what hour he comes. There are two scenarios in view in the second half of this verse. The first one is that if they do not repent, the Lord will come swiftly and uncompromisingly upon this church and remove them from being a living church among the congregations of the Lord. The second scenario is that the return of the Lord at His second coming will be as a thief in the night. It will come upon all churches and if they are not found faithful, will suffer the consequences of the unsaved world.

**(Rev 3:4 KJV)**

Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

There were some in the church at Sardis who did not defile their garments, that is, they did not go the way of the world and cling to false teachings or unbelieving works which is what secular works are. Any time a Christian adopts any false teachings or false ways it is like defiling the pure garments we were given at the moment of salvation. All true believers wear the robe of Christ's righteousness. (Isa 61:10 KJV) I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels. However, those Christians who continue to persevere in the true teachings of the Lord shall walk with Him in white, which means they will be with Him throughout all eternity because these are the truly redeemed. Walking with Christ in white means they are pure before the eyes of God. We are made worthy only through the shed blood of Christ and the fact that His righteousness was imputed to us.

**(Rev 3:5 KJV)**

He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

(Rev 7:9 KJV) After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; Rev. 7:9 shows us that the true believers will be given white robes as a symbol of spiritual purity because of the cleansing they received through the Lord Jesus Christ. The white raiment is given to those who are victorious through the Lord Jesus Christ. Then he says those true believers will not be

blotted out of the book of life. This is because they were written in the Lamb's book of life before the foundation of the world. This verse should never be taken as a "proof text" that a person can lose their salvation. It is dangerous to build a doctrine upon apocalyptic imagery when the rest of the Bible refutes such a teaching.

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

Not only are the truly redeemed given eternal life but the Lord Jesus Christ is going to acknowledge and verbally confess our names to God the Father and before the angels. It is amazing when you think what the Lord Jesus Christ is going to do for His redeemed when it was He who did all the work on Calvary for us, and yet, we will reap all the eternal benefits.

### **(Rev 3:6 KJV)**

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

Once again we are told that only those who have spiritual ears by means of being truly saved will understand these truths which are given to all churches and not just to these seven. The notion that these letters were only applicable to these seven churches must not be entertained and we must realize that all churches are in danger of going apostate if they do not remain vigilant in the truth.

## Revelation 3:7-13 The Church at Philadelphia

### **(Rev 3:7 KJV)**

And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth;

Now the focus turns to the sixth church which is the church at Philadelphia. The word "Philadelphia" means "brotherly love." At this time I live 41 miles east of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. The introduction starts out stating that the Lord Jesus Christ is holy. Holiness is the primary characteristic of God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

(Lev 11:44-45 KJV) For I am the LORD your God: ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and ye shall be holy; for I am holy: neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. {45} For I am the LORD that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: ye shall therefore be holy, for I am holy.

Then the next description of the Lord Jesus Christ which is given is "true." (John 18:37-38 KJV) Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness

unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. {38} Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault at all. Pilate asked the Lord Jesus "what is truth?" and there was truth personified standing right in front of him. When a person becomes saved, that person is indwelt with the Spirit of truth. (John 16:13 KJV) Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come.

Then we are told that the Lord Jesus Christ has the key of David. This is a quote from the book of Isaiah.

(Isa 22:20-25 KJV) And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will call my servant Eliakim the son of Hilkiyah: {21} And I will clothe him with thy robe, and strengthen him with thy girdle, and I will commit thy government into his hand: and he shall be a father to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and to the house of Judah. {22} And the key of the house of David will I lay upon his shoulder; so he shall open, and none shall shut; and he shall shut, and none shall open. {23} And I will fasten him as a nail in a sure place; and he shall be for a glorious throne to his father's house. {24} And they shall hang upon him all the glory of his father's house, the offspring and the issue, all vessels of small quantity, from the vessels of cups, even to all the vessels of flagons. {25} In that day, saith the LORD of hosts, shall the nail that is fastened in the sure place be removed, and be cut down, and fall; and the burden that was upon it shall be cut off: for the LORD hath spoken it.

If you notice that this portion of Scripture is speaking of a person called Eliakim. The name "Eliakim" means "Resurrection of God." Already back in Isaiah God was already speaking of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ. Notice that Eliakim will be given the Key of David. David was king over Israel for forty years so the metaphor here is teaching us that Christ has complete authority over the royal household. As Eliakim had total control over the affairs of physical Judah, Christ has total control over the spiritual house of Judah which is really the body of believers. Notice in the Isaiah passage it speaks of Eliakim being nailed in a sure place. The Lord Jesus Christ was nailed in a sure place on Calvary and then was resurrected on the third day which resulted in the building of the body of believers throughout the entire age of man on Earth including both Old Testament and New Testament believers. Verse 23 states that Eliakim shall have a glorious throne in his father's house. We can see by the Lord Jesus going to Calvary, He also has a glorious throne in His Father's House. (Rev 5:6 KJV) And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

Then we are told that with the key that when He shuts, no one can open, and when He opens, no one can shut. This is a reference to salvation. That when the Lord Jesus Christ will save someone, the gates of Hell cannot prevail against any of God's Elect becoming saved. (Mat 24:24 KJV) For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. The Elect of God may be deceived before salvation but never to the point that it would be impossible to save them. Then those who are not written in the Lamb's book of life can never become saved. They are shut and no one can open. This means that Christ is going to be saving His Elect and nothing can hinder that salvation plus it means they can never lose their salvation for what Christ opens no one can shut, not even the person who had become saved. Many teach that a true born again believer can lose their salvation but this verse proves that anyone who has become truly saved can never lose their salvation.

**(Rev 3:8 KJV)**

I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

The Lord Jesus Christ is also fully aware of the works which this church was engaging in. He also set before them an open door of ministry. (1 Cor 16:9 KJV) For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries. The Apostle Paul also had a great door opened to him in Ephesus and he would walk through that door in ministry opportunity. The same situation had occurred in Philadelphia where the Lord opened the door of ministry and no matter how hard the enemy would work to stop it, they could not. (Mat 16:18 KJV) And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. When the Lord Jesus Christ has Elect in a certain place, He will open the door and the powers of Hell and their human pawns will never be able to close the door of ministry until the Lord Himself closes it. He states that the church at Philadelphia has a little strength. This may refer to the church being a small church rather than a very large congregation but regardless of size, they probably made a big impact on this city.

The size of a church is not always important, but what is important is their testimony and ministry. We read in this verse that they kept the word of the Lord Jesus. The word "kept" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "guard, pay attention to, or observe." They also did not deny the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. (2 Tim 2:12 KJV) If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us: It is possible that a true Christian can deny the name of the Lord Jesus but when that happens it weakens the testimony of the Christian. If a church denies the name of Christ, even partially, it can weaken their ministry and cause them to be removed from the living churches of Christ. Some martyrs of the past under torture had renounced the name of Christ but when they came to their senses and no longer denied Him, Christ strengthened them to endure martyrdom. Today many Christians deny the name of Christ in the name of ecumenism or fear of being labeled too rigid in their Christian life. Many churches today have been removed from the living churches of Christ because they have denied His deity.

#### **(Rev 3:9 KJV)**

Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

The synagogue of Satan is mentioned also in Revelation 2:9. The word "synagogue" in the Greek simply means "a place of assembly or a congregation." It does not necessarily point to a congregation of Jews. What would be a congregation of Satan? It would be any body of people that deny the cardinal truths about Christ and Christianity. When the Lord Jesus Christ returns to judge all the people of the earth, those who were members of false churches or synagogues of Satan, will be judged by the Lord Jesus Christ. According to 1 Corinthians 6:2-3, the true believers are going to have some type of responsibility in the final judgment. (1 Cor 6:2-3 KJV) Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? {3} Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life? It states that we are going to judge the world and we will also judge angels. Now as to what extent we will judge on both accounts remains to be seen but God is giving us insight that we will have some part in that final judgment. It may be that these false churches who castigated the true believers will at that time see that it was they who were wrong and the true believers correct. Now when this verse tells us that these unbelievers are going to worship at our feet, we must keep in mind that when the final judgment comes, the true believer will have already been in their glorified spiritual bodies and we will take on a different appearance. We must also remember that we are children of the living God and we will be clothed accordingly which means royal apparel and that is why these unbelievers will be worshipping at our feet, perhaps to beg for mercy when they are sentenced. The believer will also have a different

mindset because we will have been totally purified and sin will be reprehensible to us because we will then be totally holy.

**(Rev 3:10 KJV)**

Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

Since this church has faithfully kept the word of Christ in patience, this is evidence that they are truly saved. Since they have become truly saved, Christ is going to keep them from the great hour of temptation which will fall on the whole world. The word “temptation” in the Greek is actually the word for “trial.” The great trial which is going to affect everyone in the entire world is going to be the trial of each individual person at the Great White Throne Judgment. There, everyone will give an account of their life unto the Lord and since they will be standing there without a Savior, they will be judged and condemned to eternal Hell. Those who are truly saved will not come into judgment because Christ has paid for all their sins at Calvary and that is why they are kept from that great hour of trial where all the unsaved will appear on the last day.

**(Rev 3:11 KJV)**

Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

The hope of the second coming of Christ had encouraged those true believers in the Philadelphian church to continue to hold on to the truths which they had in that church. They were to continue fighting the good fight of faith because if they compromised, then it would be like they had lost their crown. The crown was given to all those true believers who continued to persevere until the end when the Lord returns. Even though it has been two thousand years since Revelation was written, we must look at the time according to how the Lord looks at time and not according to our calendar. In light of eternity, two thousand years is but a mere drop in the ocean. The crown would have been familiar to these Christians since Philadelphia was a place of games and festivals where crowns were given out. The crown mentioned here is called a Stephanos Crown which was a crown given to a victor of a game. It teaches that these believers were to be victorious in Christ as those who were victorious in the games.

**(Rev 3:12 KJV)**

Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

In the closing we are told that those who overcome will be made eternal pillars in the temple of God. The word in the Greek for “temple” designates the inner part of the temple. In the Old Testament Temple, the inner part was where the Ark of the Covenant was situated which was in the Holy of Holies. Only the High Priest was allowed to enter the Holy of Holies once a year. Here we are told that we shall be part of the inner sanctuary of God and no more will we have to go out, which means that God will supply all our needs for eternity and that will result in our being satisfied forever. There are three names which the Lord Jesus is going to symbolically write upon the believer.

The first name is going to be the name of God. (Rev 14:1 KJV) And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

The second name is the city of God which is New Jerusalem. (Rev 21:2 KJV) And I John

saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

The third name is the new name of the Lord Jesus Christ. (Rev 19:12 KJV) His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

When one speaks of a new name it is always associated with the characteristics of the reason that a new name was given. Here we are seeing that the true believers will have the name of God which means that they are in the family of God. (Rev 21:3 KJV) And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. Then the name of the new city which means that the true believers will be eternal citizens of that city which is the eternal city of God. (Heb 11:16 KJV) But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city. Then we are told that we will receive the new name that Christ will write upon us. At this time, based on Revelation 19:12, we do not know what that new name is.

**(Rev 3:13 KJV)**

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

Once again those who are truly saved and who have the corresponding spiritual ears will be able to hear and understand the message which goes out to all the churches until the last day.

Revelation 3:14-22  
The Church at Laodicea

**(Rev 3:14 KJV)**

And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

Our focus now shifts to the seventh church which is Laodicea. We are given a description of the Lord Jesus Christ who is called "the Amen." The word "amen" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "truly, surely, let it be." So the Lord Jesus, the Amen, is sure and true in His character. He is also called "the faithful and true witness." The church at Laodicea seemed to have lost their testimony because of the way the Lord Jesus describes this church. He calls Himself the faithful and true witness in contrast to the failed witness and the faithlessness of this church. He is also described as the beginning of the creation of God. This is not saying that Jesus was created but that He was involved in the creation of the world and the universe plus He was the creator of the church which means that He has the authority to discipline the churches as needed.

(Eph 3:9 KJV) And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the



beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

(Rev 4:11 KJV) Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

**(Rev 3:15 KJV)**

I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

Here the church is being told that the Lord Jesus is fully aware of their works but this church was not being commended for their works. Jesus describes this church as being neither cold nor hot. This description is taken from the waters which flowed around the city. There was a nearby place called Hierapolis which had hot springs of water and they had a medicinal effect. It was the hot springs in some health spas where the body can be healed of certain ailments when submerged in the water. In the same region of Laodicea was another cold spring which flowed from the area of Colossae and the water was very pure and had a healing effect on the body also. Then we come to Laodicea. This city had attempted to pipe the water into it but by time the water reached the city it was lukewarm and emetic. If you are not familiar with something being emetic, it is something which induces vomiting. The modern medical profession uses something today called the syrup of ipecac which induces vomiting. The Lord is telling them He would like them to be either like the hot springs or the pure cold spring water. The Lord is not telling this congregation that he would prefer them being cold with the meaning that cold would be totally askew of the true Gospel. Jesus wants His churches to have an impact for the Gospel and not to have a dead congregation.

**(Rev 3:16 KJV)**

So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

Since the water which came into Laodicea was lukewarm and of an emetic nature, it was not good for drinking as it only made people sick. It had no properties to heal the body. The true Gospel brings spiritual healing to an individual. (1 Pet 2:24 KJV) Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. Here the Lord Jesus is stating that the witness of the Laodicean church is just like that water. It does not possess the spiritual healing which the true Gospel possesses. The result of their compromising, weak testimony is that it is only good to be vomited out. Remember when the Lord was teaching His parables concerning the seed falling on good ground. The seed has to sprout and bring forth the fruit. (Mat 13:23 KJV) But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty. If the message that is preached is only worthy of being vomited out, then it can never germinate in the good soil, which is the Elect of God. Since the message of Laodicea was of this level, the Lord Jesus stated that He would spue them out of His mouth.

**(Rev 3:17 KJV)**

Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

Here are the reasons that the testimony and message of the Laodicean church was so lukewarm. In general, they did not see their true spiritual condition. First they thought that because they were a wealthy church and had much material wealth, they needed nothing. This is the great mistake that many mega-churches make today. They believe because they have a dome and have an attendance of 25,000 or more that they somehow have the

blessing of God upon them because of their increase in wealth. However, when one analyzes the Gospel messages coming from these prosperity domes, you will find a man-centered philosophy normally centered around the chief religious thief known as the Pastor, who drives around in a \$75,000 car and has made millions in the ministry. Poor people send in their dollars and these religious criminals just get rich by promising the people anything.

Jesus uses five descriptive words to express the true condition of this church which can be applied faithfully to all mega-churches with false messages.

Wretched - It carries with it the meaning of being devastated. In 2005 we saw two hurricanes, Katrina and Rita devastate the coasts along the Gulf of Mexico. To be devastated is to lay in waste or ruin.

Miserable - It carries with it the meaning of "pitiable." It was this church which needed pity because of their deceit.

Poor - It carries with it the meaning of "beggarly or destitute." This church, while being rich in material wealth was really a church of spiritual beggars. They based their spirituality upon what they physically saw in their material wealth. (Prov 13:7 KJV) There is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches.

Blind - The word means exactly as translated. This church was blind to its own spiritual deficiencies. When someone equates material wealth with being spiritually rich, they are blind to their own deception. The condition of blindness creates a total inability to see. Spiritual blindness is the most devastating of all.

Naked - This word is also translated as is. To be spiritually naked is to be without a Gospel covering. Each true Christian wears the robe of Christ's righteousness. (Isa 61:10 KJV) I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels. Those who appear naked before the throne are those who are without a Savior. This church was naked because they had no true Gospel coming from their assembly.

### **(Rev 3:18 KJV)**

I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

In this verse the Lord Jesus is not condemning this church but He is giving them the antidote to their situation. There was still hope for this church as there is for all churches which have voided themselves of the true Gospel. The first bit of counsel they receive was to buy gold which was tried in the fire so they could be truly rich. The gold which is tried in the fire is the true gold of faith. (1 Pet 1:7 KJV) That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ: The other churches were facing persecution because of the faith in Christ which they possessed and propagated. The Lord Jesus is telling this church that they need to exchange their material wealth for the wealth of the true spiritual gold which is precious gift of faith or the true Gospel.

Then they are to buy white raiment from the Lord Jesus. Laodicea became famous for its product of black wool fabric. The white raiment would be in contrast to the black fabric they would have been familiar with. The church at Sardis was promised white raiment or

garments to those that overcome. Christ was telling the Laodiceans that if they stop placing their faith in the material wealth and place it in Him, then they too will walk in victory in Christ. (Rev 3:4-5 KJV) Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy. {5} He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. That white raiment or the true Gospel will clothe them with the robe of Christ's righteousness and they no longer will be naked.

Then they are to buy eyesalve from the Lord Jesus so they will be able to see. In Laodicea there was school of medicine and they used something called Phrygian powder which was placed on the eyes in the form of a salve. The Laodiceans had thought that their spiritual sight was very good because they based their level of spirituality on their level of material wealth. The Lord is telling them that they are spiritually blind and they need a spiritual eyesalve, which would be a return to the true Gospel, and then they will see how spiritually blind they really were. When a person comes out of a false church or a cult, and then after a period of time they look back and spiritually assess where they were, their eyes become opened ten times wider to the fact that they were deluded. It is like receiving eyesight from being blind all your life.

**(Rev 3:19 KJV)**

As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

The Lord Jesus is stating here that just because He rebukes and chastens someone or a church does not mean that He has lost His love for them. The entire Bible was given as a guidebook for the churches plus it is also the manual for true doctrine. Whenever a church or a Christian departs from the truth, the Bible is there to bring us back to pure doctrine. The word "chasten" carries with it the meaning of "discipline." (2 Tim 3:16 KJV) All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: The Lord is commanding this church to repent of their compromising ways. The words "be zealous" and "repent" are in the imperative mood which means they are commands and not suggestions. The word "be zealous" carries with it the meaning of "strive or fervently desire." The love of Jesus is qualified as He loves His Elect and when they get off the straight and narrow, He has the right to discipline His own children. He is commanding this church to repent or to change their ways completely and grasp on to the true Gospel which will give a true testimony to the outside world and will be conducive for spiritual growth of its own people.

**(Rev 3:20 KJV)**

Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

This verse has been used by those who hold to free will doctrine that Jesus is knocking at the door and the person inside must open it to let Him in. The key phrase in this verse is "if any man hear my voice." In this section on the churches the Lord closes each one as follows:

(Rev 3:22 KJV) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

Only the true believer is truly qualified to hear the Lord Jesus Christ because they have been regenerated unto salvation and are indwelt by the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit gives the child of God spiritual ears to discern spiritual truth. The disciples on the road to Emmaus did not understand the Scriptures until Christ Himself opened up their spiritual ears.

(Luke 24:44-45 KJV) And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. {45} Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,

So in Rev. 3:20 Christ is teaching us that only those who are already saved will hear His voice and open the door. The warning is to the church that those who understand these spiritual truths which are being taught are not to reject them. Once a church repents of their evil teachings and comes back to the Bible as their source book, then it is like Christ coming back into the church and having fellowship with the true believers once again. This is symbolized as Christ having supper with them and they with Him. (1 John 1:3 KJV) That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. True fellowship is with the Father and the Son. Rev. 3:20 has nothing to do with a free will gospel, it has to do with a biblically qualified response to the warnings which are given to the church and the principle carries over to individual Christians. When a Christian forsakes a sin they have been partaking in, it is like Christ once again coming to intimately fellowship with that believer again.

**(Rev 3:21 KJV)**

To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

Those who are the true believers have overcome the world and Satan through the Lord Jesus Christ and He grants us to sit with Him in His throne. (Rev 1:6 KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. When we read about the believer sitting down it means a position of finality in that whatever work was in view is now completed and it also means that we are ruling. The Lord Jesus overcame on the cross as He completed God's salvation program for the Elect and now sits on His throne as ruler and completer of God's salvation plan for the Elect. The Lord Jesus shares the throne of heaven with His Father and in like manner we rule as we partake of the throne of the Lord Jesus.

**(Rev 3:22 KJV)**

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

The last letter to the churches ends in like manner as the other six. Those who have the spiritual ears, the truly saved, must heed the warnings written herein. For it is only the truly saved who can hear the spiritual teachings and implement them to bring about a repentance in the churches and in individual lives. It must be noted that these warnings are from the Holy Spirit and not the Apostle John, which means they are of divine origin and must not be treated as if it is just a commentary or a human dissertation.

Revelation 4:1-6

**(Rev 4:1 KJV)**

After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

John was already given information on the things which were and the things which are

and now he is going to be given the information on what is going to happen in the last days. The "last days" is the period from the cross to the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. In chapters two and three letters were sent to the existing churches on Earth but now the scene shifts to Heaven. This verse has been so misunderstood by the pre-tribulation crowd. They have taught for so long that it represents the rapture and they attempt to tie it in with 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18. Revelation 4:1 has nothing whatsoever to do with the idea of a pre-tribulation rapture. This verse is teaching us that the scene now shifts from earth to Heaven. Just as Ezekiel had heavenly visions, John is now having them. (Ezek 1:1 KJV) Now it came to pass in the thirtieth year, in the fourth month, in the fifth day of the month, as I was among the captives by the river of Chebar, that the heavens were opened, and I saw visions of God.

John now states that after the letters to the seven churches he looked and then he saw a door opened in heaven and the first voice was that of one which sounded like a trumpet. (Rev 1:10 KJV) I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet, John is repeating what he had previously saw. Remember the trumpet sounded a true sound and it was a call to battle. In the rest of the book of Revelation, we are going to see how the church is at constant war with the powers of evil. John is told to come up hither, that is, he is commanded to enter into the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ who is now going to show him the final chapter of the war between God and the powers of evil. This war continues until the last day when the Lord will destroy Satan and all his host of demons. Notice John is told that these things "must take place." That means, there is going to be persecution, both physical and spiritual, of the believer. Since these things must take place, the believer better stop looking for an easy escape such as the pre-tribulation rapture. It simply does not exist in Scripture. The true Christians are going to be on earth until the last day and we will suffer persecution until the last day. These are things which "must be hereafter."

#### **(Rev 4:2 KJV)**

And immediately I was in the spirit; and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

As soon as the Lord Jesus had commanded John to come up to heaven, his transfer was immediate. He also stated that he was in the Spirit, that is, he was fully enveloped by the Holy Spirit who was about to play a part in the revealing of future things. As soon as John was in heaven, he saw a throne and he also saw God sitting upon that throne. The fact that John saw the throne first tells us that he was introduced to the fact that all things in heaven and earth emanate from the throne of God which represents His universal sovereignty. Isaiah saw the same glory of God in his vision. (Isa 6:1 KJV) In the year that king Uzziah died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple.

#### **(Rev 4:3 KJV)**

And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

John now sees the throne of God and God sitting upon His throne in all His glory. John likens it to a jasper stone which is linked with the Glory of God. (Rev 21:11 KJV) Having the glory of God; and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; The jasper stone was clear as crystal which represents the absolute purity of and holiness of God. Normally a jasper stone is opaque but here it is described as being totally clear as crystal. Here on earth, the believer sees things darkly and in part but when the end of all things come, we will see things clearly. (1 Cor 13:12 KJV) For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am

known.

The jasper stone was in Aaron's breastplate of Judgment, in the fourth row. Then we see John likens God to a sardine stone. The sardine stone was also in Aaron's breastplate of judgment. (Exo 28:17 KJV) And thou shalt set in it settings of stones, even four rows of stones: the first row shall be a sardius, a topaz, and a carbuncle: this shall be the first row. The sardius or sardine stone was in the first row. The sardine stone was blood red. Red is normally associated with judgment. (Joel 2:31 KJV) The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come. Then we are told that a rainbow completely surrounds the throne. When God set His bow in the clouds after the world wide deluge, it was a promise that He would never again destroy the earth by water. Here the rainbow in heaven surrounds the throne which tells us of the complete mercy of God. When we see a rainbow on earth, we normally only see half of the circular bow but in heaven we see the full rainbow and we can know that the full mercy of God is available for the Elect of God. On earth we only see a partial story of the mercy of God but in heaven, we shall know of the full mercy of God. (1 Cor 13:10 KJV) But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. We are also told that the rainbow had the appearance of an emerald.

The emerald was also in the second row on the Breastplate of Judgment on Aaron. (Ezek 1:28 KJV) As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face, and I heard a voice of one that spake. Ezekiel also saw the rainbow and it probably carries with it the meaning of God's purity which we saw in the jasper stone, along with the red sardine stone which tells us of the judgment of God, and the rainbow is teaching us that although God will judge the earth, He mingles judgment with mercy. Keep in mind that salvation still continues until the last one is saved and then Satan shall be loosed to make his final war against the camp of the saints. In the meantime, the judgments of God will fall on many on the earth as they fight against the church.

#### **(Rev 4:4 KJV)**

And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

Around the throne are seated twenty four elders who are clothed in white raiment. We have previously seen that those true believers who have overcome will be clothed in white raiment. The actual identification of these twenty four elders are unknown but it does look like they are representative of all the believers who have become saved during both the Old and New Testament period.

(Rev 21:12 KJV) And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel:

(Rev 21:14 KJV) And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

As we see in the above two verses, the number twelve plays a prominent part in the New Heaven and New Earth. Twelve is the number of fullness and if you notice there are twelve apostles and twelve tribes mentioned. There were more tribes and more apostles than these but God uses the number twelve to indicate fullness. So when we have twenty four elders in heaven, they represent the fullness of all the believers who were saved from

the time of Adam to the last one on the day which God has chosen. These could not be angels because angels are not given crowns of Gold. (Rev 1:6 KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. The Bible states that it is believers who are made kings and kings wear crowns. So basically what we have here in the elders is a representation of all the believers.

#### **(Rev 4:5 KJV)**

And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

(Exo 19:16 KJV) And it came to pass on the third day in the morning, that there were thunders and lightnings, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud; so that all the people that was in the camp trembled.

(Exo 20:18 KJV) And all the people saw the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking: and when the people saw it, they removed, and stood afar off.

From the throne of God the lightnings, thunderings, and voices all symbolize the authority of God and the expressions which God used. We saw the same majestic expressions at Mt. Sinai when Israel had gathered at the base. These same expressions are found in Revelation 8:5, 11:19, and 16:18 and they are there to tell us that it is God who is the one bringing the judgments, as each occurrence appears after each series of seven judgments.

Then there are the seven lamps of fire which burned before the throne. Zechariah saw this in his vision. Then the angel explains to Zechariah about the seven lamps. They represent the Spirit of God.

(Zec 4:2-6 KJV) And said unto me, What seest thou? And I said, I have looked, and behold a candlestick all of gold, with a bowl upon the top of it, and his seven lamps thereon, and seven pipes to the seven lamps, which are upon the top thereof: {3} And two olive trees by it, one upon the right side of the bowl, and the other upon the left side thereof. {4} So I answered and spake to the angel that talked with me, saying, What are these, my lord? {5} Then the angel that talked with me answered and said unto me, Knowest thou not what these be? And I said, No, my lord. {6} Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, This is the word of the LORD unto Zerubbabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the LORD of hosts.

The seven Spirits of God represent the divine completeness of the Holy Spirit and we find the seven ministries of the Holy Spirit in Isaiah 11:2.

(Isa 11:2-3 KJV) And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; {3} And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears:

#### **(Rev 4:6 KJV)**

And before the throne there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behind.

John then sees before the throne a sea of glass which is like crystal. In Isaiah we read about a sea which represents the people of the world which makes great noise. In these verses of Isaiah we read that God is going to rebuke the voices of the world because those voices are in opposition to Him. Isaiah 17:12-13 carry with it the idea of final judgment.

(Isa 17:12-13 KJV) Woe to the multitude of many people, which make a noise like the noise of the seas; and to the rushing of nations, that make a rushing like the rushing of mighty waters! {13} The nations shall rush like the rushing of many waters: but God shall rebuke them, and they shall flee far off, and shall be chased as the chaff of the mountains before the wind, and like a rolling thing before the whirlwind.

Then we come to the sea of glass in Revelation 4:6 and we read that it is a pure sea. Glass is transparent and would be able to see through this sea because of its purity. This sea is a direct opposite of the sea of the world with all its sinful pollution. We also see that the sea is before the throne. The word “before” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “in the sight or presence of.” So here we have a pure sea in the presence of the throne of God. This sea may also represent the purity and the absence of sin which exists in heaven in contrast to the sinfulness of the earth which is represented by the sin filled seas which the people of the earth inhabit. Remember the twenty four elders are before the throne which represent all the believers and this sea of glass may represent all the believers who have been washed in the blood and are pure before the throne of God. (Rev 14:4-5 KJV) These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb. {5} And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

Ezekiel, in his vision, also saw this sea of glass which had formed the floor of the throne of God. He saw the bow which surrounded the throne and the precious stones which we saw in this chapter of Revelation.

(Ezek 1:22 KJV) And the likeness of the firmament upon the heads of the living creature was as the colour of the terrible crystal, stretched forth over their heads above.

(Ezek 1:26-28 KJV) And above the firmament that was over their heads was the likeness of a throne, as the appearance of a sapphire stone: and upon the likeness of the throne was the likeness as the appearance of a man above upon it. {27} And I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward, and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about. {28} As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face, and I heard a voice of one that spake.

Then in the second half of this verse we are told that there are four beasts which are in front and behind the throne, and even in the midst of the throne. The word “beasts” could best be understood as “living creatures.” Whoever these living creatures are, and they could be a high order of angelic beings, are definitely creatures who have intelligence and astuteness since they are able to see simultaneously front and back because they had many eyes. The description of them follows in the next few verses.

#### Revelation 4:7-11

##### **(Rev 4:7 KJV)**

And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.



Ezekiel had a similar vision of the four creatures but he had described them in a different manner. The word for “ox” in Ezekiel is the Hebrew word “shôr” which may also be translated “cow or bullock.” The primary meaning is that of an ox. If you notice in the Ezekiel description, all four creatures are exactly alike. Each creature had all four faces which are mentioned. Since we have two different accounts of the same creatures, we need to look at the characteristics of these named faces.

(Ezek 1:10 KJV) As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side: and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle.

The Lion is an animal which has tremendous strength and does not turn away from any beast. (Prov 30:30 KJV) A lion which is strongest among beasts, and turneth not away for any;

The word “calf” in the Revelation verse can also be translated as “young bull, ox, or musk.” (Exo 23:12 KJV) Six days thou shalt do thy work, and on the seventh day thou shalt rest: that thine ox and thine ass may rest, and the son of thy handmaid, and the stranger, may be refreshed. The oxen were beasts of burden and they performed service.

Then there is the face of man. It would represent the intelligence of man which God gave him.

Then there is a face like an eagle. The eagle is a bird of judgment. (Mat 24:28 KJV) For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together. The Eagle is also mentioned in a different light as a bird of deliverance. (Exo 19:4 KJV) Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto myself. So the Eagle can either represent judgment or deliverance.

It seems these four creatures are highly symbolic as they seem to be angels of a high order which will have some part in the final judgment of earth as we will see in subsequent chapters of Revelation.

#### **(Rev 4:8 KJV)**

And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

Isaiah had seen the same visions which John had seen. (Isa 6:2-3 KJV) Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. {3} And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory. Whoever these living creatures are, they are definitely servants of God and continue to announce the holiness of God which was from eternity past and will go into eternity future. The meaning of “Seraphims” in the Hebrew means “burning ones.” They apparently reflected the glory of God to the point that they seemed to burn. However, it can also point to the fact that they will be strategically used in the final judgments which are to come upon this world. The six wings may indicate a swiftness in carrying out the judgments which God will pronounce upon this world. The three-fold declaration of God’s holiness by these creatures emphasizes the absolute holiness of God. No one else in the universe or on Earth is given a three-fold description of holiness. It should give us an indication of how heinous sin would be to a thrice holy God.

#### **(Rev 4:9 KJV)**

And when those beasts give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

Not only do the four living creatures laud the holiness of God, there are times when they break out in praise, glory, and thanks to God. The end of this verse enlarges the praise of God by stating that He lives for ever and ever which means He is eternal. In the Old Testament, one of the names for God is "El Olam" which means "The Everlasting God."

**(Rev 4:10 KJV)**

The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

Here are the twenty four elders which are around the throne also prostrating themselves in worship to God and they show their deference to God by casting the crowns before Him which basically means that God is the supreme King and there is no king but Him. This should be a warning to all who think they are something when they are nothing. Too many people, in their pride, think they are some type of deity but here we see that there is but one King of the Universe. The elders prostrating themselves before God shows that their authority is one that is given to them or delegated.

**(Rev 4:11 KJV)**

Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

In their praise they are acknowledging that God is the center of their praise. Many times on earth and in the church, some Christians tend to worship those who are in authority and treat them like they have the nail prints in their hands. Here the twenty four elders are in heaven because the Lord Jesus Christ is the one who went to the cross and became sin for us so we could enter Heaven imputed with the righteousness of Christ. This is why God is worthy to receive our praise because He could have allowed the human race to go to hell by attrition but instead He chose to save millions from eternal damnation. God receives the glory for the church being redeemed in its entirety. He receives honour as one who deserves it for what He has done for His Elect. He also has the power to effect His final program which is about to be unleashed on the entire world. He is lauded as the creator of the universe, earth, and man. The word "pleasure" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "purpose desire, or will." God did not have to create the universe or even to create man but He created us with a purpose in mind. When Adam and Eve sinned, He did not abandon us but He determined to save millions from the fires of hell. We must keep in mind what we just read concerning the holiness of God. His holiness demands justice and that justice demands penalty and that penalty demands execution. Yet, God in His mercy sent His Son to the cross to die for the sins of those He named before the foundation of the world. God could have stopped creating right after Adam and Eve but He named His Elect and therefore the world has to continue until the last one is saved. This is why God gets the glory and honor, especially from His church redeemed.

Revelation 5:1-7

**(Rev 5:1 KJV)**

And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals.

Then John sees God holding a book in His right hand. The right hand of God is associated with power.

(Acts 5:31 KJV) Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

(Isa 62:8 KJV) The LORD hath sworn by his right hand, and by the arm of his strength, Surely I will no more give thy corn to be meat for thine enemies; and the sons of the stranger shall not drink thy wine, for the which thou hast laboured:

(Isa 48:13 KJV) Mine hand also hath laid the foundation of the earth, and my right hand hath spanned the heavens: when I call unto them, they stand up together.

Now we look at the characteristics of this book and the word for book in the Greek is "biblion," where we get our word "Bible" from. It can also mean "scroll or written document." Notice that this book has writing inside the pages and on the outside of the pages. This means that the book is full of writing as there is no place left to write anything else. In the book of Genesis, God is stating to Abraham that the Amorites will be judged for their iniquity but the time was not then. Their judgment was to come when Israel came out of Egypt and then the iniquity of the Amorites will be full.

(Gen 15:16 KJV) But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.

The book which God the Father holds in His right hand is filled to capacity with writing and is sealed with seven seals. This means the time has finally come for the final judgments to come upon the world because their iniquity is now complete and all things are written in the books. The time of the final days has begun.

(Isa 29:10-11 KJV) For the LORD hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes: the prophets and your rulers, the seers hath he covered. {11} And the vision of all is become unto you as the words of a book that is sealed, which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I cannot; for it is sealed:

Isaiah also records a book but that book was sealed at that time.

(Dan 12:4 KJV) But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.

Daniel was told by Gabriel to seal the book because the time was not yet at hand. Both Isaiah and Daniel lived in a time when it was not yet the beginning of the last days. The last days began at the cross and will end on the last day. (Rev 22:10 KJV) And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. In Revelation 22:10, we are told that the time is now at hand and the revealing of all things has begun and will escalate as we approach the last day. The seven seals will begin the first of the judgments upon the Earth when they are finally opened.

#### **(Rev 5:2 KJV)**

And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

It is believed that the mighty angel in view here is Gabriel as he is the one who told Daniel to seal up the book because the time was not yet at hand but now the time is at hand and now Gabriel approaches the throne and asks who is worthy to open and loose the seals.

Those seals are the ones which not only seal the book but as they are opened, judgments will be falling upon the world and the Christians will be facing persecution at the same time as God will be bringing judgment on the oppressors. What is really in view is the consummation of the history of the world and one is being searched for who is able and worthy to bring about the consummation. God does not perform the final task of bringing the world to an end instead it will be the Lord Jesus Christ who is worthy to do it. (John 5:22 KJV) For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:

**(Rev 5:3 KJV)**

And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.

The words "no man" carry with it the meaning of "no one or none." There was no one found in the greater creation in any quarter who was able to open the book and not only to open it, but even to look in it. This means that no human is capable of bringing a judgment on the world or even to establish a new heaven and new earth. The creation is void of such a person. No angel in heaven was qualified to open the book which includes the highest order or mightiest angel. Every created being was incapable of opening this book and unworthy to release what was about to happen on the Earth.

**(Rev 5:4 KJV)**

And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

John had realized that the revelation contained in the book was of utmost importance and believing that there was no one found worthy to open the book, he wept bitterly. In Revelation 4:1 he was told that he was going to be shown the things which were to happen and if the book could not be opened, then the revelation would be at an impasse. John was saddened because the end of the world and the judgments which were to come seemed to now be thwarted unless the book could be opened.

**(Rev 5:5 KJV)**

And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

John had continued weeping but one of the elders had commanded him to stop weeping because the Lion of the tribe of Judah who had prevailed or overcame was now prepared to open the book and loose those seven seals. (Gen 49:9 KJV) Judah is a lion's whelp: from the prey, my son, thou art gone up: he stooped down, he couched as a lion, and as an old lion; who shall rouse him up? The Lord Jesus Christ was of the tribe of Judah and in Genesis the tribe of Judah was called a Lion's whelp. The Lord Jesus was the Lion of the Tribe of Judah. (Prov 30:30 KJV) A lion which is strongest among beasts, and turneth not away for any; The lion is one who would not turn away from any other animal and the Lord Jesus is the one who overcame the world, the flesh, and the devil and successfully paid for the sins of His Elect. He is also called the Root of David. (2 Sam 7:16-17 KJV) And thine house and thy kingdom shall be established for ever before thee: thy throne shall be established for ever. {17} According to all these words, and according to all this vision, so did Nathan speak unto David. The house of David was another name for the body of believers since we read in 2 Samuel 7:16 that it was going to last forever. Only the recipients of the covenant of grace will be forever with the Lord.

**(Rev 5:6 KJV)**

And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which

are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

Here John sees the Lord Jesus Christ in the throne room of God and among the four living creatures. He is portrayed as a lamb which was slain. Even though the Lord Jesus Christ is called the Lion of the Tribe of Judah, it was as the Lamb of God that Christ had prevailed. He did not prevail by bringing the strength of heaven down to fight for Him or to bring legions of angels to free Him from the cross. It was submission to God's plan that brought about Him being a conqueror. Then we are given the picture of Christ having seven horns and seven eyes. The horn in Scripture is associated with power. (Mat 28:18 KJV) And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. The Lord Jesus Christ has all power in all realms including Heaven which speaks of His omnipotence. Then we are told He has seven eyes. (Zec 4:10 KJV) For who hath despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of the LORD, which run to and fro through the whole earth. The seven eyes represent that the Lord Jesus is all seeing which is why He has perfect knowledge. There is nothing hidden from the Lord Jesus Christ. (Heb 4:13 KJV) Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. Then we are told that the seven Spirits of God, which is the Holy Spirit, is being sent out to all the earth. This teaches us that the Holy Spirit will be going throughout the whole earth and He will be sealing the Elect of God until the last day plus He will also be carrying out whatever sovereign plan the Lord will enact.

#### **(Rev 5:7 KJV)**

And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

Then the Lord Jesus approaches the throne of God the Father and removes the book from His right hand. This was a legal act in which God is now showing that He has transferred authority to His Son in the matters of all judgment. (Dan 7:13-14 KJV) I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. {14} And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. Daniel had a similar vision to the one John had. He sees the Lord Jesus approaching God the Father, the Ancient of days, and with the passing of the book to Him, there was given all the power to enact on Earth whatever was written in the book.

### Revelation 5:8-14

#### **(Rev 5:8 KJV)**

And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints.

Previously John had wept for he believed that the book was to remain sealed for they could not find one who was worthy to open the book and loose the seals. Well here the Lord Jesus Christ had taken the book from God the Father and with that transfer Heaven breaks out into colossal praise. The living creatures and the twenty four elders fell down and prostrated themselves before the Lamb. The twenty four elders are pictured as having harps. (Psa 33:2 KJV) Praise the LORD with harp: sing unto him with the psaltery and an instrument of ten strings. Harps were used to bring praise to the Lord. The golden vials are

really large golden bowls full of odours. The word “odours” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “incense.” This word is associated with sacrifices and offerings and not just an aroma. (Acts 10:4 KJV) And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God. As Cornelius had prayed, it was in a vision that he was told that his prayers and alms were before God as a memorial. When we look at the golden vials which contained incense, it is symbolically the prayers of the Saints which had ascended to heaven and were before the throne of God. It is believed that these prayers are the prayers of the Saints that are praying for the consummation of the ages and the return of Christ. (Rev 16:15 KJV) Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. In the tabernacle and temple, there was an altar of incense. The incense was compounded and was prepared once a year. It was to be used one pound per day and three pounds on the day of atonement. The altar was positioned before the veil between the Holy Place and Most Holy Place. Incense was to be burned in the morning and evening.

### **(Rev 5:9 KJV)**

And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

Now a new song is being sung. This new song has its focus on the redemption the Lord Jesus Christ effected through His sacrifice on Calvary. Since Christ was the one who effected redemption by Himself, He was worthy to take the book and to open it and open the seals. (Heb 1:3 KJV) Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Christ's effectual redemption of the Elect, by His own blood, redeemed us to God, in other words, the Elect of God were reconciled unto Him. The redeemed of God can be found in every country around the world. (Mat 24:31 KJV) And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other. On the last day when God finally winds up this present sinful generation, all the Elect will be gathered from all the nations on earth. The new song always focuses on the Lord Jesus Christ who is the center of the book of Revelation.

### **(Rev 5:10 KJV)**

And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

(Rev 1:6 KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. Not only did the Lord Jesus Christ save us from a burning Hell but in addition to that (if that wasn't enough), He made us Kings and Priests and we shall reign on the earth. Whatever we are going to reign over on earth is still a mystery now but will be revealed on the day of our final redemption. This verse is not teaching that we are going to reign in some mythical thousand year millennium on earth but the reign of the believer is going to be forever in the New Heaven and New Earth. Daniel also saw the fact that the true believers are going to reign over a kingdom. After all, if the true believer is a king, then they must have some kingdom to rule over. Here Daniel also states that the Kingdom is going to be an everlasting Kingdom.

(Dan 7:22 KJV) Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.

(Dan 7:27 KJV) And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting

kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him.

**(Rev 5:11 KJV)**

And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;

In verses nine and ten, the elders sang the great song of redemption. The angels cannot sing a song of redemption because they do not need to be redeemed. The angels who rebelled with Satan will be judged and cast into Hell. The angels which stayed in heaven are called the Elect angels. (1 Tim 5:21 KJV) I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality. The number of angels around the throne are basically innumerable as we see the numbers above. This is why Jesus told His disciples that His Father could easily send legions of angels to deliver Him. (Mat 26:53 KJV) Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? Twelve legions of angels is merely a drop in the bucket compared to the number of angels which God created.

**(Rev 5:12 KJV)**

Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

The extremely large crowd of angels with the elders and the four living creatures made a very loud voice. The word "loud" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "great." The voice was a great voice in worshipping the Lamb who was slain for the sins of His Elect. There are seven things that the great voices in unison are stating that the Lamb is worthy to receive. The first one is power. He has all power and authority in heaven and earth. His power was able to raise the dead, cast out demons, and do miracles but He never used His power in an incorrect way, in fact, He never used His power to even save Himself from the cross. The next item He received was riches. The wealth of the universe and of the earth belongs to Him. (Psa 24:1 KJV) The earth is the LORD'S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein. These are the material riches but the true riches are those of the Gospel and redemption. (Luke 16:11 KJV) If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? Next is wisdom. Christ is the embodiment of wisdom. (1 Cor 1:24 KJV) But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. Then comes strength. This strength is God's mighty strength which is strong enough to save a person. (Isa 59:1 KJV) Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: Then comes Honor. The honor he receives as Redeemer, mighty God, and all that He has accomplished being the Lamb of God. (Psa 96:6 KJV) Honour and majesty are before him: strength and beauty are in his sanctuary. (1 Pet 2:17 KJV) Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king. Then comes glory. He now receives the heavenly glory from where He came from before He entered the humiliation of coming in the flesh to a sin filled world. He was pure and holy and walked among the sinful for thirty some years and now He receives the glory that is akin to the glory which God receives. In Revelation chapter one we saw the radiance of His countenance which caused John to fall at His feet as dead. His inner glory is reflected by the outer glory. The final one is blessing. The word in Greek is "eulogia" which means "praise." He is worthy to be praised by all His people and the angels in heaven. He is now exalted because He was humbled on earth as a man.

**(Rev 5:13 KJV)**

And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as

are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

Here is probably the greatest worship session in the universe taking place as John sees it. Not only are the angels, elders, and living creatures in Heaven giving honor and glory to the Lamb, but now John sees included those on the Earth, under the earth, and those in the sea. (Phil 2:10-11 KJV) That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; {11} And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. This praise session is different as a possibility that even those created animals under the earth and those in the sea are praising God. What we have here is the entire creation praising their creator. (Neh 9:6 KJV) Thou, even thou, art LORD alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee. If God can cause Balaam's donkey to speak, He can open the mouths of all the animals in the creation to sing praises. Keep in mind though that we are reading apocalyptic imagery and instead it may be referring to those believers who have died and were buried and are being resurrected to eternal life or those who died in the sea and now are being resurrected on the last day unto eternal life and are praising the Lord. This scene is part of the "now and not yet" scenario. In other words, in the Bible there are only two ages. The present age and the eternal age to come.

(Titus 2:12 KJV) Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;

(Mark 10:30 KJV) But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.

(Luke 18:30 KJV) Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

This means at the present time (the now) there is only as limited praise being given to the Lord from the body of believers but according to the Scriptures, there is coming a day when the entire creation, including the enemies of Christ, will bow down and worship Him (the not yet).

#### **(Rev 5:14 KJV)**

And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

The sequence of praise now refocuses back into the throne room where the four living creatures and the elders once again prostrate themselves in worship to God the Father and God the Son. The eternity of God is a prominent theme in the book of Revelation and it is a great encouragement to believers that as long as God lives, we too shall live, and that will be forever and ever.

[Back](#)



## Revelation 6:1-6

### **(Rev 6:1 KJV)**

And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see.

Now begins the opening of the seven seals. John sees the Lord Jesus Christ opening the first of these seals. One of the living creatures is now commanding John to come and to see the opening of these seals.

### **(Rev 6:2 KJV)**

And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

Here we begin the first of the seals which represent the judgments of God which will fall upon the earth. The first horseman is a white horse and he had a bow and crown. His mission was to go forth conquering and to finally conquer. The rider on this white horse is not the Lord Jesus Christ. For many years I thought it was but the fact that this horse, like the other three, are part of the initial four judgments which are paralleled in the trumpet judgments and the vial judgments. The Lord Jesus Christ returns in Revelation 19:11 to judge the entire world and if you look closely you will see that the only thing the white horse in Revelation 6:2 and Revelation 19:11 have is the fact that they are white. The white horse in Revelation 6:2 does not necessarily represent Christ or some individual evil individual or Satan.

(2 Cor 11:13-15 KJV) For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. {14} And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. {15} Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

The white horse here represents the going forth of the imitation of the true gospel. Satan brings an imitation gospel throughout the entire New Testament age. Keep in mind that Revelation is a book which describes the time from the cross to the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. Throughout this time period, Satan has always attempted to conquer the church through false teachings and teachers. This white horse is told to go out and conquer but it does not say what is being conquered. If you recall in the seven letters to the churches, the Lord is promising salvation to all those that overcome. Those that overcome are the true believers down through the complete age. Let us notice another main trait about this rider. This rider was given a crown. The crown is a "stephanos" crown which was given to those who were victorious in the games. It is very important to know that this crown was given to this rider.

"...and a crown was given unto him:..." The phrase "given unto him" is a phrase which is associated with evil powers being given authority by God for a specific purpose. In Revelation 6:4, the rider on the red horse had power given to him also.

When Moses was in Egypt and he was performing the miracles of God before Pharaoh, he was opposed by the high priests of Egypt who were imitating those miracles by means of satanic power.

(2 Tim 3:8 KJV) Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith.

(Exo 7:11-12 KJV) Then Pharaoh also called the wise men and the sorcerers: now the magicians of Egypt, they also did in like manner with their enchantments. {12} For they cast down every man his rod, and they became serpents: but Aaron's rod swallowed up their rods.

What we have in the white horse in Revelation 6:2 is a similar situation. The false workers of Egypt are just like the false teachers and preachers who attack the church. Their goal is to conquer the church and remove every vestige of truth from it. The crown which was given to the rider is symbolic of the authority given unto it to bring the attacks upon the church in the final days which commenced at the cross.

(1 Pet 4:17-18 KJV) For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God? {18} And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

In Peter's time, he knew that God would begin the final judgment very shortly and that judgment started with the house of God. The ultimate purpose was to separate the wheat from the chaff. In 1 Peter 4:18, it speaks about the righteous being saved and those who remain unsaved even in the church would someday be brought before the white throne judgment. For the present period or age, the white horse continues to ride as it attempts to conquer many churches and we see that happening at an accelerated rate.

#### **(Rev 6:3 KJV)**

And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

Then after the first seal was opened, John is then commanded to come and see the events which are about to unfold in the opening of the second seal.

#### **(Rev 6:4 KJV)**

And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

The second horse is colored red and the rider was given the authority to take peace from the earth. The result of this rider going forth from taking peace from the earth is that people are going to kill one another. The rider on this horse can be seen in two different ways. The first, is that this rider will be given the power to cause much dissension and strife in the physical realm of the world thus causing the world to be constantly in turmoil. Keep in mind we are looking at a time period from the cross to the second coming of Christ. During this time period, there has been very few days of peace, in fact it has been a time period of war and bloodshed. Within the confines of these wars, Christians have suffered at the hands of conquerors and normally are the first ones to be harassed even martyred for their faith. (Mat 10:34 KJV) Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. The Lord Jesus made it clear that the true Gospel is not going to make friends with the world, instead it is going to be a point of contention. Of course, with political wars religion always suffers.

For the second view of this horse, we must take a look at who these horses are, and we find the description in Zechariah 6:2-5:

(Zec 6:2-5 KJV) In the first chariot were red horses; and in the second chariot black horses; {3} And in the third chariot white horses; and in the fourth chariot grisled and bay horses. {4} Then I answered and said unto the angel that talked with me, What are these, my lord? {5} And the angel answered and said unto me, These are the four spirits of the heavens, which go forth from standing

before the Lord of all the earth.

If you will notice, the description of these horses are given as four spirits who stand before the Lord of all the Earth. These are not real horses but are given the description as horses because of the power given unto the riders. In the Bible the horse is described as a very noble creature designed for work and war.

(Job 39:19-25 KJV) Hast thou given the horse strength? hast thou clothed his neck with thunder? {20} Canst thou make him afraid as a grasshopper? the glory of his nostrils is terrible. {21} He paweth in the valley, and rejoiceth in his strength: he goeth on to meet the armed men. {22} He mocketh at fear, and is not affrighted; neither turneth he back from the sword. {23} The quiver rattleth against him, the glittering spear and the shield. {24} He swalloweth the ground with fierceness and rage: neither believeth he that it is the sound of the trumpet. {25} He saith among the trumpets, Ha, ha; and he smelleth the battle afar off, the thunder of the captains, and the shouting.

When speaking of these four horses, who are really the four spirits which are before the Lord, they are powerful enough to affect the entire earth with the task which has been assigned to them. The focus of Satan's attacks are against the church and the Christian. When studying the book of Revelation we must keep this in view. In the Bible, peace is normally referred to as peace between God and the Christian. In the world, there is always going to be wars which means that peace in the physical realm is really academic. When a person becomes saved, they are now at peace with God. (Rom 5:1 KJV) Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

That peace only comes through the Lord Jesus Christ. To remove peace from the earth is to remove the means of that peace which is the true Gospel. If the true Gospel is no longer being preached, then peace with God cannot be attained because it is only through hearing the word of God does one come to salvation. (Rom 10:17 KJV) So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

(Amos 8:11-12 KJV) Behold, the days come, saith the Lord GOD, that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of the LORD: {12} And they shall wander from sea to sea, and from the north even to the east, they shall run to and fro to seek the word of the LORD, and shall not find it.

If you notice in the Amos passages, we read that God Himself will send a famine in the land, which as we read in the next verse, is the entire world. We are seeing that come to pass at a very rapid rate. What is that famine? It is a famine of hearing the true word of God. The spirit, represented by the Red Horse, will slowly be removing the true Gospel and the true word of God from the entire earth. As we come closer to the last day, this removal will begin to escalate. 1881 was a pivotal year in the attack upon the word of God. That was the year that the Revised Version was published by two satanic necromancers, Hort and Westcott. Their Greek text was taken from the Gnostic corruptions made in Alexandria, Egypt in the second century and these have become the source text for all the modern bibles except the King James Version. It is interesting to note, that since the introduction of these modern Bibles, the church has declined rapidly in truth and spirituality. Visit a church which uses the NIV and you will see a weak church in disarray. God cannot and will not bless any church or Christian who uses a counterfeit bible.

Not only are we seeing God's word being attacked by the church, the very institution which should be cherishing it, but it is being attacked by unbelievers in the pulpit. Today if anyone has a Seminary degree, whether saved or unsaved, they will be considered for the Pastorate. The true word of God is also being hidden by signs and wonders gospels, false

prophets, allegorical quagmires, false systematic theologies, etc. The time is truly upon us that the true word of God has been removed from mainstream Christianity. The rider on the red horse is removing the means of eternal peace with God, which is the true Gospel. Go to ten churches and see if you hear the true Gospel in at least two of them. Most of the time you will hear a social gospel or a guilt manipulating gospel and no preaching on sin. There is going to come a time when the true Gospel will be completely removed, not from the true believer, for God must have true preaching until He has safely sealed every one of His Elect. There will come a time right before the return of the Lord when it will look like Satan has completely won but that is the deception. We will see this later on as we continue our study in Revelation. Notice how the red horse and white horse work in concert. The red horse removes the true Gospel and the white horse implants the false gospel. When the false gospel begins to take route, it is like killing each other because the false gospel cannot save and those who follow it will be killed with the second death. Remember those who followed the false teacher Jezebel? Revelation 2:20-23

### **(Rev 6:5 KJV)**

And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

Then the third seal was open and the living creature commanded John to come and see what this spirit was about to do. This particular rider had a balance in his hand. A balance was used for measuring. The balance is also a symbol for justice and equity. In front of courthouses in the United States we have statues with blindfolds on holding a balance in the hand. God used the balance in Scripture to measure kingdoms to see if they were found worthy. One such kingdom was that of Belshazzar who used the implements taken from the temple in a profane way at a drunken banquet. God symbolized the judgment of this kingdom by using a balance.

(Dan 5:25-30 KJV) And this is the writing that was written, MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPHARSIN. {26} This is the interpretation of the thing: MENE; God hath numbered thy kingdom, and finished it. {27} TEKEL; Thou art weighed in the balances, and art found wanting. {28} PERES; Thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and Persians. {29} Then commanded Belshazzar, and they clothed Daniel with scarlet, and put a chain of gold about his neck, and made a proclamation concerning him, that he should be the third ruler in the kingdom. {30} In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain.

Whenever God uses a balance on anyone, they will always come up wanting and only the imputed righteousness of Christ will bring the balance to an even position.

### **(Rev 6:6 KJV)**

And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

(Joel 1:6-12 KJV) For a nation is come up upon my land, strong, and without number, whose teeth are the teeth of a lion, and he hath the cheek teeth of a great lion. {7} He hath laid my vine waste, and barked my fig tree: he hath made it clean bare, and cast it away; the branches thereof are made white. {8} Lament like a virgin girded with sackcloth for the husband of her youth. {9} The meat offering and the drink offering is cut off from the house of the LORD; the priests, the LORD'S ministers, mourn. {10} The field is wasted, the land mourneth; for the corn is wasted: the new wine is dried up, the oil languisheth. {11} Be ye ashamed, O ye husbandmen; howl, O ye vinedressers, for the wheat and for the barley; because the harvest of the field is perished. {12} The vine is dried up, and the fig tree languisheth; the pomegranate tree, the palm tree also, and the apple tree, even all the trees of the field, are withered: because joy is withered away from the sons of men.

In Joel, we read about the impending judgment of Judah as they are about to go into captivity with the Babylonians. These verses above overlap two judgments by God. The first one is the plague of locusts which eat all the crops and the second is a great drought which is a great lack of rain, thus causing all the crops to dry up in the field. In the Revelation verse, we read that both the wheat and the barley are very scarce commodities in which a person would have to work a full day for just one liter of wheat and three liters of barley. The black horse is representing a major famine upon the earth. The red horse showed us a famine of the true word of God but here we have a famine of true believers. As we begin to get closer to the last day, it will be harder and harder to find a true believer, one of like mind.

In the New Testament the wheat is a figure of the true believer. (Mat 3:12 KJV) Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. The high price of Wheat and Barley in the Revelation verse shows the scarcity of these two grains. This shows the scarcity of true believers in the last days. Many may claim to be Christian but their doctrine and church affiliation will give them away. Have you ever tried to find a true Christian program on radio or TV? What will you find? You will find Charismatics teaching the false prosperity gospel. There is no such thing in the Bible as a prosperity gospel. You will also find the free will gospel, the dispensational gospel, the allegorical gospel, the psychological gospel, the works gospel, the political gospel but the true free grace gospel will be non-existent. Fifty years ago you could hear the free grace gospel, today it is gone.

An interesting verse which includes all four items in the Revelation verse is found in 2 Chronicles 2:15:

(2 Chr 2:15 KJV) Now therefore the wheat, and the barley, the oil, and the wine, which my lord hath spoken of, let him send unto his servants:

These four items were used in building the temple of Solomon. The Hebrew Temple was symbolic of the building of the temple in 1 Corinthians 6 which is the body of believers. The reason that the black horse cannot hurt the oil and the wine is because they are symbolic of the Holy Spirit who indwells the true believer. (Heb 1:9 KJV) Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. (Mat 9:17 KJV) Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved. The true believer will not be hurt by the judgments which are coming through the pinching off of the true Gospel. Not only will there be a famine of true believers, there will also be a famine of true bible believing churches. These churches will become fewer and fewer as we head toward the last day.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 6:7-11

### **(Rev 6:7 KJV)**

And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

Then John is commanded to come and see the opening of the fourth seal which gives a new vision but builds on the previous one.

### **(Rev 6:8 KJV)**

And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

This horse is actually a pale-green horse which is considered to be the color of a dead corpse. This horse seems to be the culmination of the prior three horse judgments. The rider's name is called Death. Since physical death has been around since the time of Adam, the type of death which is in view here also includes that of the second death because we see that Hell follows this rider. Physical death does not necessarily mean eternal damnation except in the case of the unbelievers who have followed the deception of false teachers and gospels. Power (authority) was given to this rider also over the fourth part of the earth.

The fourth part of the earth here does not mean that exactly one fourth of the earth's population has been killed. It means that at this point, there is a limitation placed upon the fourth seal judgment. We will see this number increase in the vial and trumpet judgments. In the trumpet judgments we see one third of the earth affected. (Rev. 8:7-12) and then in the bowl judgments we see the totality of the earth being affected. (Rev. 16:1-17)

(Ezek 14:13-21 KJV) Son of man, when the land sinneth against me by trespassing grievously, then will I stretch out mine hand upon it, and will break the staff of the bread thereof, and will send famine upon it, and will cut off man and beast from it: {14} Though these three men, Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, they should deliver but their own souls by their righteousness, saith the Lord GOD. {15} If I cause noisome beasts to pass through the land, and they spoil it, so that it be desolate, that no man may pass through because of the beasts: {16} Though these three men were in it, as I live, saith the Lord GOD, they shall deliver neither sons nor daughters; they only shall be delivered, but the land shall be desolate. {17} Or if I bring a sword upon that land, and say, Sword, go through the land; so that I cut off man and beast from it: {18} Though these three men were in it, as I live, saith the Lord GOD, they shall deliver neither sons nor daughters, but they only shall be delivered themselves. {19} Or if I send a pestilence into that land, and pour out my fury upon it in blood, to cut off from it man and beast: {20} Though Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, as I live, saith the Lord GOD, they shall deliver neither son nor daughter; they shall but deliver their own souls by their righteousness. {21} For thus saith the Lord GOD; How much more when I send my four sore judgments upon Jerusalem, the sword, and the famine, and the noisome beast, and the pestilence, to cut off from it man and beast?

In the book of Ezekiel, God is telling Ezekiel that the land of Judah has sinned against Him and He is going to send four judgments upon the land. The number four stands for universality or the total location which is in view. In Ezekiel God is speaking about the land of Judah, in Revelation, He is speaking about the fourth part of the earth. Both of these are limited judgments because the areas named are specific. Unlike the bowl judgments where the entire world will be affected. The same four judgments mentioned in Ezekiel which God will use against the sinning nation of Judah, He will use against one fourth of the sinning earth. Remember in Revelation we are going to see a progression of intensity of the divine judgments which will culminate in the return of the Lord Jesus Christ and the ultimate destruction of Satan and the unsaved.

The first judgment we see here is that of the killing by sword. This judgment is being intensified in our day as we see massive amounts of war all over the world and most of these are on local levels. We see terrorism, suicide bombers, governments which approve mass extermination especially under the guise of religion, etc. Governments who hold to religions like Islam have no problems allowing the murder of Christians in their countries.

The second judgment is that of famine or hunger. In today's world we are seeing much famine but it is, at present, limited in scope. It is amazing though that in developed nations there are actually people who do go hungry. As we get closer to the last day, the problem of hunger will increase.

The third judgment is death. We see much death surrounding us today. Not only does death come by war, but by disease. It is said that there are millions who have AIDS in Africa alone. As I am writing this, the day before a major earthquake just happened in India and Pakistan which killed between 35-100 thousand. Natural disasters seem to be happening at an increasing rate. Everywhere you look there seems to be some type of disaster which has claimed multiple lives.

Then the fourth judgment is by the beasts of the earth. God had warned Israel that He would send beasts among them as a judgment if they broke the covenant. (Lev 26:22 KJV) I will also send wild beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children, and destroy your cattle, and make you few in number; and your high ways shall be desolate. The beasts would not only destroy cattle which could also represent crops, but the animals would also attack people. With land developers continuing to tear down forests, animals are now coming into inhabited places because they are running out of food. With the forests disappearing, the animals must forage for food elsewhere. In every city there is a continuing rat problem. Not only will animals attack people but this judgment will also include insect infestations. In my home state of New Jersey, there is an escalating bear and deer problem.

These four judgments will affect a part of the earth and based upon the Ezekiel account, even those who are saved like Daniel, Job, and Noah, will have no power to stop these judgments. This means that the believers who are on earth at this time will also be affected by these judgments. Christians die from disease, they die in plane crashes, they die in government sponsored pogroms, they die in personal attacks by individuals, they are killed for their testimony of Christ.

(Josh 23:14 KJV) And, behold, this day I am going the way of all the earth: and ye know in all your hearts and in all your souls, that not one thing hath failed of all the good things which the LORD your God spake concerning you; all are come to pass unto you, and not one thing hath failed thereof.

(1 Ki 2:1-2 KJV) Now the days of David drew nigh that he should die; and he charged Solomon his son, saying, {2} I go the way of all the earth: be thou strong therefore, and show thyself a man;

The Christians must suffer the same things on earth as the unbelievers do, as we see in the statements by David and Joshua. As long as we are in these physical bodies, we will be susceptible to all the things that can kill a human body, whether natural or manufactured. The great difference comes after death.

#### **(Rev 6:9 KJV)**

And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held:

In verses 1-8 in this chapter, we saw the divine judgments which were meted out upon the world and within those judgments, there were many Christian martyrs. When God sends tribulation into the life of a Christian it is to purify them. When the fifth seal is opened, we see the focus shift from the divine judgments sent out to the martyrs in heaven. John now sees the martyrs which have already been slain for their testimony of faithfulness to the Lord Jesus Christ. These martyrs are those who have been slain from the beginning of time up till the present time of John. The Lord Jesus in Luke 11:49-51 states that the blood

of the Prophets was shed from the beginning of the world and was required of that generation.

(Luke 11:49-51 KJV) Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute: {50} That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; {51} From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation.

It must be noted that there is no time frame given in the Bible for a specific generation. Some say 40 years and some say 70 years but in this case the generation which the Lord is speaking of is the present generation of evil which extends from Adam to the end of the world. (Gal 1:4 KJV) Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: (Eph 1:21 KJV) Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: The Bible speaks of two ages. The present evil age and the age to come which is eternity.

Notice that we have in view those who were martyred for their faithfulness to the Lord Jesus Christ which resulted in their strong Christian testimony. John saw their souls underneath the altar. This altar is mentioned a few times in the book of Revelation. In the tabernacle and the temple there was an altar of sacrifice where the animal sacrifices were performed. Sometimes there were so many sacrifices that the blood ran down the altar. The Lord Jesus Christ is symbolic of that altar of sacrifice.

(Isa 6:6-7 KJV) Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: {7} And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.

In the book of Isaiah, when he received his commission, a seraphim took a live coal from the altar and placed it upon his mouth which cleansed it. The coal is the Gospel and the Gospel emanates from the Lord Jesus Christ who is the living altar of sacrifice. In Revelation 6:9, these souls being under the altar symbolizes them being under the shed blood of the Lamb, even though they were martyred in the physical realm. In the heavenly realm they are safe and secure where their persecutors can never get to them. The blood of the Lamb covers them completely and keeps them safe from all harm. (Lev 4:7 KJV) And the priest shall put some of the blood upon the horns of the altar of sweet incense before the LORD, which is in the tabernacle of the congregation; and shall pour all the blood of the bullock at the bottom of the altar of the burnt offering, which is at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation. This is symbolized as far back as the time of the Exodus in the book of Leviticus when the priest would pour some of the blood under the altar of burnt offering which symbolized Calvary and the shedding of the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. These martyrs were under the shed blood of Christ which made them fit for heaven.

#### **(Rev 6:10 KJV)**

And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

These same martyrs who were under the Altar had begun to cry out with a loud voice. The word in the Greek for "cry" is "scream." Their request for the Lord, who is holy and true, was how long did they have to wait before those who murdered them would be brought before the bar of God's justice? These martyrs had been killed any time after the time of Abel who was the first martyr for righteousness. John is also seeing into the future when there will be many millions more who would be martyred for the cause of Christ. The



middle ages would yield millions of Christian martyrs. Apparently these martyrs knew that they were killed for the cause of Christ and wanted the Lord to avenge their deaths. The Bible teaches that vengeance belongs to the Lord and that is why they are asking the Lord when will their evil acts be judged? 2 Thessalonians 1:4-10 gives the scenario in which the martyrs will be avenged when the Lord Jesus Christ returns. Even those in heaven already desire the end of the present evil age so eternal peace can begin and all evil will no longer be present.

**(Rev 6:11 KJV)**

And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

In the letter to the church at Sardis, the Lord promised those who overcame that they would be dressed in white raiment. (Rev 3:5 KJV) He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. These martyrs in Heaven were being given those white robes as temporary covering because the time is not yet fulfilled till the end when they will receive their full glorified bodies. The truth which was given to these martyrs was that there were more who were going to give their lives in the cause of the Lord Jesus Christ. The time frame given is the "little season" which means a "little time." In the realm of eternity a few thousand years is but a drop in the bucket.

(1 John 2:18 KJV) Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.

In 1 John 2:18, John refers to the present time as the "last time" and in the Greek it is really the word for "hour." John, in light of eternity, sees the period from the cross to the last day as the last hour as if it was 11 PM to midnight. These martyrs would have to wait until the plan of God is completely filled and then the end will come. It is interesting that the last days are measured in terms of those who must give their life until that number is fulfilled. Those who give their life in the service of the Lord are truly those who have overcome and are great examples of those who have endured to the end. The endurance does not end after they are martyred, it continues into heaven as they endure the time they must wait until the last one is martyred and then comes the judgment on the oppressors.

[Back](#)

Revelation 6:12-17

**(Rev 6:12 KJV)**

And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;

We now see the sixth seal open and with it is the first rendering of the return of the Lord Jesus Christ. Those who hold to the false notion that the book of Revelation is a chronological book will truly have difficulty explaining this section. How could the return of the Lord Jesus Christ be in chapter six if it is a chronological book?

What we see here is the beginning of the events which will culminate in the return of the Lord Jesus Christ. The first event is going to be a great earthquake. This earthquake is not being revealed as one which is local but it appears that this earthquake is going to be one which is universal in range. The entire earth will be affected with this earthquake because the return of the Lord Jesus Christ is going to affect the entire earth and not just a part of it. We read some passages in Joel which show us that when the day of the Lord occurs, then there is going to be some mighty signs accompanying it.

(Joel 2:1 KJV) Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain: let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the LORD cometh, for it is nigh at hand;

(Joel 2:9-11 KJV) They shall run to and fro in the city; they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up upon the houses; they shall enter in at the windows like a thief. {10} The earth shall quake before them; the heavens shall tremble: the sun and the moon shall be dark, and the stars shall withdraw their shining: {11} And the LORD shall utter his voice before his army: for his camp is very great: for he is strong that executeth his word: for the day of the LORD is great and very terrible; and who can abide it?

Joel shows us that there is going to be a great quake before the Lord returns and we read in other passages in Scripture that a great quake will occur at the time that the Lord Jesus Christ returns.

(Isa 2:19 KJV) And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of his majesty, when he ariseth to shake terribly the earth.

(Hag 2:6-7 KJV) For thus saith the LORD of hosts; Yet once, it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land; {7} And I will shake all nations, and the desire of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, saith the LORD of hosts.

(Nahum 1:5 KJV) The mountains quake at him, and the hills melt, and the earth is burned at his presence, yea, the world, and all that dwell therein.

We see how many prophecies of the Old Testament are aimed at the time of the return of Christ. Now the question at hand, is it going to be a literal earthquake or is it a description of something else? In the book of Exodus, when all Israel was by Mount Sinai, they feared greatly because the Lord had descended on to the mount to speak to the people of Israel. Their fear was so great that they begged Moses to speak to the Lord for them because of what they saw.

(Exo 19:18 KJV) And mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the LORD descended upon it in fire: and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly.

Then the earth is going to quake mightily at the voice of the Lord on the last day when He comes to bring home His Elect and to begin the judgment of the unsaved. His voice will be mightier than on Sinai since the whole world will hear Him.

Then we are told that in addition to the mighty earthquake, the sun is going to become black and the moon is going to become red as blood.

(Acts 2:20 KJV) The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come:

Peter is quoting a prophecy by the prophet Joel.

(Joel 2:31 KJV) The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come.

Both the sun and moon are given as signs and for seasons. When the sun becomes black, it means that the sun has been extinguished and the moon becoming blood gives us an indication that judgment has come. The sun and moon are important to the earth because the sun gives life giving warmth and the moon controls the tides. This means that the universe is beginning to disintegrate because judgment day has come.

(Gen 1:14 KJV) And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years:

**(Rev 6:13 KJV)**

And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

Continuing the thought from verse 12, not only will the sun and moon be affected, which is in our solar system, but now we read the stars will also begin to fall as the outer universe begins to collapse. This is total collapse of everything which man holds dear. He counts on the hope that the earth and universe will continue indefinitely. Evolution has given unsaved man false hope. They think that the universe has been here for billions of years and it will remain for billions of years. The truth is that the universe is less than fifteen thousand years old.

(Gen 1:14 KJV) And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years:

Then the collapse of the universe is compared to a fig tree which loses her figs when a great wind comes up. Probably what was in view here was a sirocco which was known in Italy and Sicily and other parts of the desert. It is a mighty wind of cyclonic nature which would cause things in its path to be destroyed. This verse is telling us that the return of Christ is going to be similar in nature. A great sirocco is going to come and blow the figs off of the trees before their time. This gives us an inkling that the return of Christ is going to come at a time when no one expects it. Hence, the word "untimely." The word in the Greek can refer to an "unripe fig." The Bible tells us that the return of the Lord Jesus is going to be like a thief in the night. Many will be surprised at His coming because no one knows the day nor the hour. Even the believer is told to watch because we will not know the hour of His return. Those who set dates are nothing but deceivers because they have no knowledge and they are in disobedience trying to delve into what God has kept secret for Himself. We must be patient as our brethren in heaven must be patient because God's plan must be fulfilled before it can end.

(Mat 24:42-43 KJV) Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. {43} But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

(Luke 12:40 KJV) Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

**(Rev 6:14 KJV)**

And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.

(Isa 34:4 KJV) And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll: and all their host shall fall down, as the leaf falleth off from the vine, and as a falling fig from the fig tree.

Isaiah gives a look at the final day when the universe begins to collapse. We saw the sun, moon, and stars collapse and now we are seeing the heaven depart. The word “depart” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “separating or parting.” It is like the scroll when it splits into two. With the parting of the heavens also comes other cataclysmic events which could tie into God speaking and causing the mountains and the islands to be moved out of their places. This means that the earth is beginning to radically shift and it too will begin to fall apart as God will remake it new again.

#### **(Rev 6:15 KJV)**

And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains;

The day which the unbelievers had mocked and eschewed has now come to pass. Every tract and church which taught the truth and was mocked by the unbelievers has now come upon them. The final day of man's history has come and judgment day is here. The history of man is now history. With the Lord returning, it seems here that all the groups mentioned do not seem to be concerned with gold and treasures, instead they seek to hide themselves in anyplace they can find. No one will escape the judgment of God. The rich, the poor, the middle class will all stand before the Lord and give account of themselves before they are judged.

#### **(Rev 6:16 KJV)**

And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb:

All those religions who denied the deity of Christ and have mocked Him are now cognizant of the fact that it is He who is now returning to earth to take vengeance on those who obeyed not the Gospel and who cause tribulation in the lives of His Saints.

(2 Th 1:7-10 KJV) And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, {8} In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: {9} Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; {10} When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

These unbelievers know that judgment day has come because they mention the wrath of the Lamb and God the Father. These unbelievers think that death is going to solve all their problems and that is why they want the mountains to fall on them. They have believed things like annihilation and they are hoping that it is true but deep down they know that their day of judgment has come and they must give an account to Him whom they have mocked and spurned.

#### **(Rev 6:17 KJV)**

For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

(Isa 13:6 KJV) Howl ye; for the day of the LORD is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty.

(Isa 13:9-11 KJV) Behold, the day of the LORD cometh, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it. {10} For the stars of heaven and the constellations thereof shall not give their light: the sun shall be darkened in his going forth, and the moon shall not cause her light to shine. {11} And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible.

Isaiah gives a pretty grim picture of what judgment day is going to be like. It is going to be absolute destruction of the universe and world and the final judgment of the unsaved where they will be cast into the lake of fire forever. No unbeliever will be able to stand in the judgment. If they do not have a Savior, they must answer for their own sins which means they must pay for their sins eternally. The only ones who will not face this terrible wrath are the true believers whom Christ had died for as we saw in Revelation 3:10.

(Rev 3:10 KJV) Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 7:1-8

### **(Rev 7:1 KJV)**

And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

In the Book of Revelation we will normally see that the forces of nature are under the authority of the angels as we see in the following two verses.

(Rev 14:18 KJV) And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

(Rev 16:5 KJV) And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus.

In Revelation 7:1, the destruction which was determined by the four horsemen in Revelation 6:1-8 are pictured here as being held back. The word for “spirit” in the Hebrew is word “ruach” which may also be translated as “wind and breath.” In Zechariah 6:5, the four spirits are used as a description of the four horsemen.

(Zec 6:5 KJV) And the angel answered and said unto me, These are the four spirits of the heavens, which go forth from standing before the Lord of all the earth.

The description of “wind” is representing the four horsemen in Revelation 7:1. These angels are holding back the judgments which will be unleashed by the four horsemen. The earth, sea, and trees would represent the inhabitants of the earth on which the fury of the

four horsemen would be unleashed. The reason for the temporary holding back of these judgments is given to us in the next few verses. This section of Scripture also prohibits the idea of Revelation being a chronological book. The events in this chapter precede the events in Chapter 6:1-8.

### **(Rev 7:2 KJV)**

And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

Here we see another angel who ascends from the east having the seal of God. In the Scriptures the east is sometimes associated with the Lord. The term is defined by its usage. We read in Ezekiel 43:2-4, concerning the glory of the Lord coming from the east.

(Ezek 43:2-4 KJV) And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east: and his voice was like a noise of many waters: and the earth shined with his glory. {3} And it was according to the appearance of the vision which I saw, even according to the vision that I saw when I came to destroy the city: and the visions were like the vision that I saw by the river Chebar; and I fell upon my face. {4} And the glory of the LORD came into the house by the way of the gate whose prospect is toward the east.

The angel in Revelation 7:2 comes from the east with the seal. Now the seal is something that God gives His children as a down payment of eternal life. It also represents the fact that those sealed belong to God and nothing can break the seal of the God of the universe. The Christian is given the Holy Spirit as the proof that they are sealed and possessed by the Lord for eternity.

(Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

We have a wonderful picture of this sealing in Ezekiel 9. Before Jerusalem went into captivity, God had commanded that a mark be placed upon all those who were truly sorry for the sins committed by their people. Only those who are truly saved would grieve for their sins and the sins of others. These people in Ezekiel 9 were marked as those who were followers of the true God and eschewed the evil committed by Judah.

(Ezek 9:4 KJV) And the LORD said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof.

### **(Rev 7:3 KJV)**

Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

The four horsemen have been withheld from going forth with their destructions for the purpose of waiting until all of the true believers have been sealed with salvation. Once the final sealing has taken place, then the four horsemen will begin their judgments upon the earth. Now God's children have been sealed since the first one became saved but here we are seeing the culmination of God's salvation plan as we read that all His children must be sealed before the final events on earth take place. We do not know when the sealing of the last one will take place since a person can be sealed and saved at an early age and then live for another 70 or 80 years. The sealing is definitely tied to salvation since the Holy Spirit, as we read in Ephesians 4:30, is the seal given to the true believer. The seal in the forehead is not literal but is figurative because the forehead represents the mind and

the true believer is given the mind of Christ. The mind of Christ always accompanies salvation. (1 Cor 2:16 KJV) For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ. Basically, what we have in this verse is the final sealing of those Christians before the return of the Lord. These last days Christians combine with all the others makes for the large multitude before the throne as we will see in the later verses in this chapter.

**(Rev 7:4-8 KJV)**

{4} And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel. {5} Of the tribe of Juda were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand. {6} Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephtholim were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand. {7} Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand. {8} Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

The common teaching about these passages is that in the tribulation period, 144,000 Jews will be sealed and sent forth as evangelists. This is absolutely erroneous and has no biblical foundation. If you notice in verse 5, it states that 12,000 from all the tribes of the children of Israel were sealed. If this number is from every tribe in Israel, then we have a problem. Where is the tribe of Dan? Dan is not mentioned here which gives us a hint that this section is not a literal 144,000. Please keep in mind that we are looking at apocalyptic imagery. If Dan is missing, then 12,000 are not taken from every tribe! This means that we are looking at something which is a figure. The 144,000 represent the entire body of believers from Adam to the last one. This will be made plain in the following verses in this chapter. Remember, the body of Christ is also referred to as Israel.

**The following is from my commentary on Romans:**

(Rom 9:6 KJV) Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

Here Paul reveals that there are two Israels. If you notice in the past few verses, Paul was speaking of his kinsman according to the flesh and the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ according to the flesh. The Bible is now revealing that there are two different Israels. There is Israel according to the flesh and Israel according to the Spirit. This is a very important verse as Paul begins by stating that the Word of God was effective in doing what it was supposed to do. When we look back at the history of the nation of Israel from the time they came out of Egypt, we will see two distinct populations. One of them was the people who built the Golden Calf and were the ones who disobeyed God right down through their entire history. Men such as Korah, King Saul, Baalam, etc. Then you also have the history of the men who obeyed God during their history. Men such as Moses, Joshua, David, Nehemiah, etc. What Paul is saying here is that God's Word reached His Elect among the ancient nation of Israel, even though it looked more like it failed in keeping the nation of Israel as a holy people. Nothing could be further from the truth.

The word of God, made a distinction between the Israel in the flesh which was disobedient and the Israel of God which was in the Spirit who were the obedient of God. Thus, we see that Paul speaks of two Israels, one according to the flesh and one according to the Spirit. Those who are born again are of Spiritual Israel, which is the eternal Israel. Paul is saying that just because a person was born in national Israel, does not mean they are part of the eternal Israel. One enters the eternal Israel through

redemption through the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ. The true chosen people of God are those chosen for salvation and that is the only chosen people God has. The idea that the modern talmudic Jews are God's chosen people is nothing more than political heresy which is embraced by many preachers simply because they will not approach these verses in Romans in truth, instead they approach them through the eyes and writings of well-paid false prophecy pundits who receive much money from the Zionists to make sure Christians keep thinking that the modern talmudic Jews are God's chosen people. (1 Pet 2:10 KJV) Which in time past were not a people, **but are now the people of God**: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. Notice in this verse it states "**the** people of God." The direct article means there is no other people of God.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 7:9-17

##### **(Rev 7:9 KJV)**

After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

John now sees the entire redeemed church in Heaven. It was a great number which were redeemed from the earth. John sees the culmination of thousands of years of evangelism and missionary work and preaching as every one of God's Elect is now in glory. We see that there are people from every nation under heaven. The Great Commission is now completed and all the true believers are now safe in Heaven. All the believers are dressed in white robes which means they are now totally pure and never again have to worry about the physical body causing a war between the flesh and the spirit. They also have palms in their hands. When the Lord Jesus Christ rode into Jerusalem on Palm Sunday the crowds had strewn the road with palm branches. Here we have a figure of the rejoicing that crowd in Jerusalem had but that rejoicing was very limited as the same crowd called for the crucifixion of Jesus the next week. The crowd in heaven which is said to have palms in their hands are rejoicing with an unfettered joy, one which will never end.

##### **(Rev 7:10 KJV)**

And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

When the Lord Jesus rode into Jerusalem, the crowd had yelled "Hosanna." Hosanna means "save now or succour now." The crowd in glory is now saying the truth that Salvation is of God and the Lamb. God orchestrated His salvation plan and the Lord Jesus Christ completed it on Calvary. Man never initiates salvation by mythical free will or else why would the crowd be saying that salvation belongs to God. They would be saying that salvation belongs to them since they made the decision. All the focus for salvation is on God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Notice that the crowd is now yelling in a loud voice and not just a moderate tone. The word "loud" carries with it the meaning of "great."



**(Rev 7:11 KJV)**

And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

Then John not only sees all the believers praising the Lord, he now sees all the angels joining in. Then the twenty four elders, the living creatures all prostrated themselves before the throne of God and worshipped Him. If you notice the angels, they are standing around the throne. This shows that they are ready to obey the commands of the Father when He sends them forth to do a certain job. The angels are always ready to obey, we should follow the same line of thinking.

**(Rev 7:12 KJV)**

Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

All heaven is in agreement when they pronounce their praise in unison. Blessing is the praise which God is given from all those He has created and those whom He has redeemed. The angels are not redeemed but belong to the created order. Then God receives all the glory for the miraculous salvation plan He has administered on behalf of His Elect. Man gets no glory in any of this but is the recipient of God's grace. Then wisdom is applied to God not only for His salvation plan but the very wisdom which is seen in all of creation. Nothing happened out of pure chance but all was founded upon the wisdom of the Creator. Those who have been redeemed from the earth give thanksgiving unto God for His great salvation which has saved them from Hell and elevated them to kingship in Heaven. Then honor is given to God. The word "honor" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "recognition or respect." Then all power in the universe belongs unto God who showed His power by creating a vast universe beyond the understanding of man. Then might is attributed to God. The word "might" carries with it the meaning of "strength." God is called the "Strength of Israel." (1 Sam 15:29 KJV) And also the Strength of Israel will not lie nor repent: for he is not a man, that he should repent. All these attributes are eternal. The word "amen" signifies finality. It basically means "it is so."

**(Rev 7:13 KJV)**

And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

Notice that no question was asked by John but in anticipation of the question, John receives an answer in question form. He was probably wondering who the great multitude was that he was looking at. The two question are who are these which are dressed in white robes and from where did they come?

**(Rev 7:14 KJV)**

And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

John is told that these have come out of the great tribulation. Tribulation has always been part of the believers life, from the time of Abel who was murdered by Cain up to the last day. There is going to come a time of tribulation which is going to be both spiritual and physical. The 20th century had more Christian martyrs than in any other century in history. As we progress toward the last day, the spiritual attacks on the true Gospel will intensify. These attacks will tend to either neutralize or degrade the true Gospel until it will be impossible to find any true Bible teaching. Along side will come physical persecution of the Christians and that is escalating every day, especially in Islamic and Communist countries

where Christians are killed without conscience. We read in Revelation 6:11 that there were yet many more who are going to die for the sake of the Gospel. We are not told in this verse if John is speaking of the entire multitude which he saw before the throne or if he is seeing a select group who were martyred for the Kingdom in the final days. It would seem that John in this verse was speaking of a specific group of martyrs which would go to glory in the final days right before the return of Christ as we read that a certain number had to be killed and that these should rest until that happens and then the end will come.

**(Rev 7:15 KJV)**

Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.

“Therefore” means what we just read which gives us the reason they are before the throne of God. Since they were redeemed by the Lamb and are made pure by His blood, they are now qualified to be before the throne of God. Here they are seen as serving the Lord constantly. The term “day and night” would be for the purpose of trying to give us understanding. When we, on earth, refer to day and night, we are in essence stating that something is continuous without stopping. God is in the midst of all His redeemed children and dwells among them for eternity. Here we are seeing the children of God who have now begun to serve Him for eternity. The earthly temple was a pattern of things in heaven and the child of God is allowed to enter the Holy of Holies since they have been washed in the blood of the Lamb. Now there is no physical temple in heaven but the temple of God is the entire New Heaven and New Earth which God creates after the last day. The Temple of the Old Testament was only a shadow and was abolished when Christ went to the cross. The term “temple” was transferred to the church of God. (1 Cor 3:16 KJV) Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? The pattern here is that as God was with the Israelites in the desert wandering, He will be in the midst of His redeemed people for eternity.

**(Rev 7:16 KJV)**

They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.

No longer will the true believer be spiritually hungry nor will they thirst for the water of the gospel because all will have been fulfilled in Christ plus the days of evangelism and missions are over. The spiritual hunger and thirst of the believer will be fulfilled in the presence of God and the Lord Jesus Christ. Then the sun will no longer light on them. The word “light” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “fall on or fall in ruins.” They shall not face any more heat. These two terms are telling us that the days of suffering are all behind and there will be no suffering in heaven as all those things have passed away with the old earth and the old heaven. Now the saying of Psalm 23:1 will have its ultimate fulfillment. (Psa 23:1 KJV) The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. No longer will the believer have any wants because the Lord, the Shepherd, has met all their needs.

**(Rev 7:17 KJV)**

For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

The Lord Jesus Christ who is the lamb of God will feed us forever. The word “feed” in the Greek is the word for “Shepherd.” When we look at Jesus leading us to the living fountains of water, we see a final fulfillment of the living waters from John 4:14 and 7:38 which will sustain and plentifully satisfy for all eternity.

(John 4:14 KJV) But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the

water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

(John 7:38 KJV) He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

We also see a great fulfillment of the eternal peace the believer will enjoy. (Psa 23:2 KJV) He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. The waters in the believer's life are very calm because Christ our Shepherd leads us. The waters on earth are very restless because of sin but when we are in Heaven, there will be nothing which will disturb the waters of eternal peace. Then we read that God will wipe away all tears. Since sorrows surrounded the believer on earth all their lives, only with brief periods of joy, God Himself has promised to wipe all the sorrows away which caused heartache in the life of His children. God wiping all the tears away tells us that God will eradicate all those things which caused those tears in the first place. Heaven shall be a place of eternal joy and peace for the believer. His children are now safe forever from all and anything which can cause them heartache.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 8:1-7

### **(Rev 8:1 KJV)**

And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

Revelation 8 begins the second of the parallel visions which John saw. The first vision contained chapters four to seven. This is the second vision which is more severe than the previous vision. This is known as progressive revelation, where God builds on one subject and increases the knowledge concerning it. Revelation is about the time from the first advent to the second coming of Christ. It is a book made up of parallel visions, each one more revealing and intense than the previous one till we get to the end of the book of Revelation when we see the finality of this sinful world and the New Heavens and the New Earth.

In Revelation 7, which ended on a note of loud and continuous joy in heaven by all the redeemed believers because we saw the first vision of Revelation ending with the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ and all the believers in heaven. Now we come to Chapter 8 and the first verse is in stark contrast to the loud praise in chapter seven. Here John sees the seventh seal opened and once again he will see the intensity of the persecution of the believers and the judgments which will be meted out to those who are the oppressors. The seventh seal is now opened and we are once again at the beginning of the parallel vision. The opening of the seventh seal was the beginning of seven very intense judgments to be meted out. These judgments are so awesome that they evoke a short time of silence in heaven. Previously we saw great joy being spoken but now Heaven becomes silent while the judgments are given to the seven angels to carry out. Now in Heaven there is no time because Heaven is eternal but we are given the time period of a half hour which is for the purpose of our understanding.

(Amos 5:12-13 KJV) For I know your manifold transgressions, and your mighty sins: they afflict the just, they take a bribe, and they turn aside the poor in the gate from their right. {13} Therefore the prudent shall keep silence in that time; for it is an evil time.

In the book of Amos in chapter five, God is chiding the house of Israel for their many sins and He is going to judge the nation of Israel for their sins but He tells the prudent, which we would see as the saved, to keep silent while He will be doling out the judgment. In Revelation we see a similar scenario. While God prepares the judgments on the world, the entire body of believers in Heaven are silent because they have asked the Lord for recompense for the evil done to them (Rev. 6:10) and now the time has come so their prayers have been answered and therefore they are silent before the throne.

(Acts 21:40 KJV) And when he had given him licence, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckoned with the hand unto the people. And when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

The Apostle Paul on Mars Hill was ready to give a defense of the Gospel and the people in attendance had become very silent so Paul was able to speak. Then in Acts 22:2, we read:

(Acts 22:2 KJV) (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith,)

Paul spoke in the Hebrew tongue and when the crowd heard that, they kept more silent. It is the same principle in Heaven in Revelation 8:1. The Saints have been praying for the judgment of God to fall on their oppressors and now that sentence is ready to be passed, they, like the Hebrews on Mars Hill, have become silent so the last seal and seven trumpets could now be unleashed on the earth.

#### **(Rev 8:2 KJV)**

And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets.

John sees the seven angels standing before God receiving their orders from Him. Each angel was given one trumpet and each trumpet will be a judgment. These seven angels may also be the ones who give out the vial judgments in the next parallel vision. Seven is the perfect divine number so once again the judgments will be divine in nature and will affect those whom God sends them out to affect. This vision does not cover the entire world which means that the second vision is also limited in scope, further than the previous one but less than the next one. In other words, the intensity of God's judgments are not yet complete and full.

#### **(Rev 8:3 KJV)**

And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne.

Here we see a different angel coming, not one of the seven who had the trumpet judgments. This scenario is similar to what we saw in Revelation 5:8:

(Rev 5:8 KJV) And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints.

Right before the releasing of the seven seal judgments, we see that the twenty four elders had golden vials filled with incense which were the prayers of the Saints plus they also bowed before the throne of the Lamb. In Revelation 8:3, we see that before the releasing of the trumpet judgments, there is also a scene in heaven where there was a mixture of

the prayers of the Saints with incense. The censers in Solomon's temple were made of gold. (1 Ki 7:50 KJV) And the bowls, and the snuffers, and the basins, and the spoons, and the censers of pure gold; and the hinges of gold, both for the doors of the inner house, the most holy place, and for the doors of the house, to wit, of the temple. As we previously read, we saw that the souls of those who were martyred for the cause of Christ were under the Altar. That Altar was before the throne of God and the prayers of the martyred Saints had prayed that Justice would be done for them. So the prayers at this altar are now mixed with incense.

**(Rev 8:4 KJV)**

And the smoke of the incense, which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel's hand.

In Acts 10:3-4, we see the principle of these prayers ascending up unto God. Cornelius was a saved man who prayed and in his vision, he saw an angel of God coming to him and telling him that his prayers had ascended unto God as a memorial.

(Acts 10:3-4 KJV) He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius. {4} And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.

In Revelation 5:8, we read another account of the prayers of the Saints which are represented by incense.

(Rev 5:8 KJV) And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints.

**(Rev 8:5 KJV)**

And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

Here we have the same censer which was filled with incense and the prayers of the Saints are now mixed with fire from the Altar. Fire always represents judgment. The prayers of the Saints who have prayed for God to act on their behalf has now been put into action. The combination of the prayers of the Saints and the fire from the Altar are now cast unto the earth. The thunder, lightning, and earthquake are all symbols of the judgment of God which is about to fall upon the earth. Just as God's appearance on Sinai to the people of Israel, now all the world will quake at the presence of God. What started out here as a scene of intercession concerning the prayers of the Saints has now become judgment.

**(Rev 8:6 KJV)**

And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

With the releasing of the prayers of the Saints mixed with the incense and the fire from the altar, which were cast to the earth, the stage has been set for the seven angels with the second set of judgments known as the trumpet judgments.

**(Rev 8:7 KJV)**

The first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

The first trumpet judgment is patterned after Exodus 9:22-25 which was the plague of hail

and fire. The mixing with blood is taken from Joel 2:31.

(Exo 9:22-25 KJV) And the LORD said unto Moses, Stretch forth thine hand toward heaven, that there may be hail in all the land of Egypt, upon man, and upon beast, and upon every herb of the field, throughout the land of Egypt. {23} And Moses stretched forth his rod toward heaven: and the LORD sent thunder and hail, and the fire ran along upon the ground; and the LORD rained hail upon the land of Egypt. {24} So there was hail, and fire mingled with the hail, very grievous, such as there was none like it in all the land of Egypt since it became a nation. {25} And the hail smote throughout all the land of Egypt all that was in the field, both man and beast; and the hail smote every herb of the field, and brake every tree of the field.

(Joel 2:31 KJV) The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come.

In the plague on Egypt, we read that this judgment had devastated all the vegetation in the land of Egypt except the wheat and rye were not smitten (Ex. 9:32). In the Revelation verse we read that one third of the trees were burnt up and all the green grass were burnt up by reason of the prayers of the Saints being answered by God in the judgments which are coming upon the unsaved world. Remember, the second set of judgments is showing more intensity than the previous seal judgments. The seal judgments spoke of one fourth of the earth being affected.

(Jer 17:2 KJV) Whilst their children remember their altars and their groves by the green trees upon the high hills.

This first trumpet judgment is aimed primarily at the trees and the green grass as we see that one third of all the trees were burned up plus all the green grass. In the book of Jeremiah, God was also warning Judah about their idolatry. The trees were associated with the groves where Baal and other false religions were practiced by both Judah and Israel. In the judgments of the seven trumpets, there is mentioned that those on earth who were not killed had not repented of their sorceries and idolatries. While the first trumpet judgment may have a physical effect upon a limited part of the earth, we are also seeing that God will be sending judgment upon all those who are idolatrous and who are involved in false religions. In our times we are seeing the prostitution of true Christianity as it is increasingly turned into a social religion by having the sting of the Gospel removed and the teachings of salvation reinterpreted. The Lord Jesus Christ has been removed from the majority of churches but there is still a remnant of faithful churches which have not embraced false gospels. As God judged Judah and Israel for their idolatrous ways, the churches which have embraced false gospels in our day will begin to feel the judging hand of God upon them.

(Jer 14:5-6 KJV) Yea, the hind also calved in the field, and forsook it, because there was no grass. {6} And the wild asses did stand in the high places, they snuffed up the wind like dragons; their eyes did fail, because there was no grass.

In Jeremiah 14, God is telling us that Judah had suffered because of a great dearth. The fact that there was no grass for the animals to feed on had caused great damage to the livestock population. In Revelation, when God burns up all the green grass, He is telling us that the true Gospel, which feeds the believers will become increasingly difficult to find. In Psalm 23, we are told that we will be beside green pastures. However, as God removes those pastures and burns them up in judgment, the true believer will also have a hard time in this world because of the absence of the true gospel. The unbeliever will rejoice in this as we will see in Revelation 11.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 8:8-13

### **(Rev 8:8 KJV)**

And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood;

(Jer 51:24-26 KJV) And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the LORD. {25} Behold, I am against thee, O destroying mountain, saith the LORD, which destroyest all the earth: and I will stretch out mine hand upon thee, and roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain. {26} And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the LORD.

We have a parallel verse found in Jeremiah 51:24-26. God is telling Babylon that He is against them. Babylon in the Old Testament was a type of the kingdom of Satan while Zion is the body of believers. We will get a further picture of the destruction of Satan's kingdom in Revelation 17 & 18. Here we have a small picture of what will happen. God had pronounced judgment against Babylon. Notice in the Jeremiah verses, He refers to Babylon as a "destroying mountain." In Revelation 8:8, we read that John is seeing a great mountain which was burning with fire. When something is burning, it is being judged. John sees this burning mountain cast into the sea and the third part of the sea became blood. When we look at the meaning of the sea, it is not speaking of the oceans and it is also not speaking of debris which was left behind. The sea is speaking of the all the nations of the world. Let me just say that the word "sea" is defined by the usage of the word. Sometimes it does refer to the physical seas but not in this case.

(Isa 17:12-13 KJV) Woe to the multitude of many people, which make a noise like the noise of the seas; and to the rushing of nations, that make a rushing like the rushing of mighty waters! {13} The nations shall rush like the rushing of many waters: but God shall rebuke them, and they shall flee far off, and shall be chased as the chaff of the mountains before the wind, and like a rolling thing before the whirlwind.

This mountain or kingdom of Satan has now come under partial judgment at this point. This mountain being cast into the sea has caused one third of it to become blood. This means that the judgment on the world is intensifying. In Chapters 4-7, we read about one fourth of the earth being affected. Here we read one third of the world is being affected. Blood speaks of judgment.

### **(Rev 8:9 KJV)**

And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

(Isa 27:1 KJV) In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea.

In this verse we read that a third of the creatures in the sea were killed and the third of all ships were destroyed. This connotes that a different part of the world has been affected.

When the sea became blood that triggered the deaths of creatures and the ships. When we look in the Bible, we see creatures who were in the sea and probably the most notable creature is leviathan which is called a piercing and crooked serpent. In the Bible, the most notable serpent is Satan himself. In Isaiah 27:1, God is pronouncing a judgment against Satan as we read the last part of the verse states that He will slay the dragon in the sea. In Isaiah 17:12-13, we saw that the seas are the world. Satan's domain is the present world and in Revelation 8:9, we see that God is making a judgment not only upon Satan but upon all those who follow him. Here we see that one third of those who follow Satan will be killed with the second death. It is interesting to note that the one third also tells us that as we get close to the end, the true gospel will be pinched off slowly until the time comes when the true gospel will be silenced.

(Ezek 30:9 KJV) In that day shall messengers go forth from me in ships to make the careless Ethiopians afraid, and great pain shall come upon them, as in the day of Egypt: for, lo, it cometh.

Ezekiel 30:9 & Psalm 107:22-24 have much in common. Both speak of people that are in ships. In Ezekiel we read that messengers go forth from God to make the Ethiopians afraid. The messengers that God sends out into the world are those who bring the true Gospel. The true Gospel brings fear into the hearts of unsaved people. The Ezekiel verse teaches us that a great day is coming and that day is judgment day when each unsaved person will face the Lord Jesus Christ to answer for their sins.

(Psa 107:22-24 KJV) And let them sacrifice the sacrifices of thanksgiving, and declare his works with rejoicing. {23} They that go down to the sea in ships, that do business in great waters; {24} These see the works of the LORD, and his wonders in the deep.

Psalm 107:22-24 also speaks of those who go down to the sea in ships and those that do are doing business and that business is bringing the Gospel to the world which is the great waters. Those who bring the gospel see the wonders of the Lord as they see people become saved and lives turned around and saved from sin. Missionaries will attest to those great wonders as they have seen cannibals and rank unbelievers become saved. In verse 22, we are told that these who go down to the sea in ships declare His works and sacrifice the sacrifices of thanksgiving which points to the mission of the true believer. (Psa 116:17 KJV) I will offer to thee the sacrifice of thanksgiving, and will call upon the name of the LORD.

#### **(Rev 8:10-11 KJV)**

And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters; {11} And the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

Here we have the third angel sounding his trumpet and with that sound a great star falls from heaven, which burned as a lamp. This affected the third part of the rivers and fountains of water. Wormwood is a bitter plant and has become synonymous with anything bitter. In the Scripture, clean water is associated with the giving of the Gospel. (John 7:38 KJV) He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. In fact, the Lord Jesus even showed us that those who believe on Him out of their bellies will flow the rivers of living water. That living water is the true gospel. When the waters are adulterated as in this case with bitterness, that will cause men to die. Wormwood, as an herb, will not kill a person, even though the taste will make you believe you have been fatally poisoned. The reason that men died of these bitter waters was because the purity of the true Gospel was diluted with the bitterness of the wormwood, which means the false gospel has now become effective in deceiving one third of the



earth. Please keep in mind that one third is not a literal number but is revealing the fact that the judgments are intensifying as we progress through Revelation.

(Jer 23:15 KJV) Therefore thus saith the LORD of hosts concerning the prophets; Behold, I will feed them with wormwood, and make them drink the water of gall: for from the prophets of Jerusalem is profaneness gone forth into all the land.

In Jeremiah 23, God is stating that He is going to feed them wormwood. In Jeremiah 23, we are introduced to the false pastors who led Israel astray. The principle carries over into the New Testament where during the New Testament age there are going to be false gospels heralded by false pastors and teachers who will adulterate the true Gospel. God even stated that He would send a strong delusion among the unbelievers who follow these false preachers.

(2 Th 2:10-12 KJV) And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. {11} And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: {12} That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

The 2 Thessalonians verses teach us that if people want to follow these false preachers, then God will continue to send the strong delusions to further their unbelief, thus creating a wider chasm between the true Gospel and the false gospel. Those who follow the true Gospel will be persecuted for those beliefs and much of that persecution is going to come from the churches themselves. The church will become increasingly apostate as we head toward the last day. In fact, there is going to become a time that the false gospel will overtake the true Gospel and we will see this at the end of this second vision.

#### **(Rev 8:12 KJV)**

And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

In the first three trumpet judgments, we see that they affected the earth but again, only limited in scope by the fraction 1/3. As we now see the fourth angel sounding his trumpet, we read that the sun, moon, and stars have been affected. Now this does not mean that these luminaries will actually lose their brightness by one third. In Ezekiel 32:7-8, we read a similar passage.

(Ezek 32:7-8 KJV) And when I shall put thee out, I will cover the heaven, and make the stars thereof dark; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give her light. {8} All the bright lights of heaven will I make dark over thee, and set darkness upon thy land, saith the Lord GOD.

In Ezekiel God is pronouncing a judgment upon Egypt. Egypt was a major country with major idolatry. In fact, the ten plagues on Egypt were significant in that each one was against a false god of Egypt. Many of the judgments which happened in the Old Testament were really precursors as to what will be happening spiritually in the latter days. When we look at the sun, moon, and stars, we see that they are light givers. The sun gives light during the day, and the moon gives reflected light at night. The stars also give light but only as guides. One can follow certain sets of stars and find their way in certain directions such as the North Star. When God states that the lights are going to be dimmed by one third, He is not speaking of the last day when they will begin to fall, meaning the end is at hand.

(Mat 24:29 KJV) Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

Matthew 24:29 teaches us that the timekeepers are being taken out of existence because it is the end of time.

(Gen 1:14 KJV) And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years:

Genesis 1:14 teaches us that God placed the sun, moon, and stars in the Heavens as timekeepers but in Matthew 24:29, they are about to be destroyed because the end has come. In Revelation 8:12, we see that they are just being darkened. What we are seeing in this verse is the same type of judgment which was done to the Egyptians. Egypt was a great place of idolatry and the present world is made up of idolatry. The New Age movement calls itself "light." This movement is of satanic origin. The real light is the light of the Gospel of Jesus Christ but as we get toward the end, the real Gospel will become darkened with the false gospels of the world with the admixture of false teaching. Anytime the true Gospel is adulterated, it becomes less of a light until it eventually becomes hidden by false teachings. We see this happening in our time at an exponential rate. Many churches and ministries have fallen prey to false gospels and many have willingly adopted them. This is why we see that the day is partially darkened and even the night is partially darkened because the stars have been covered.

(Dan 12:3 KJV) And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.

Daniel teaches us that the wise, which are the true believers, shall shine as the stars and they will lead many to righteousness. If the true Gospel is being pinched off, then the ministry of evangelism is also being curtailed which means the stars will be darkened instead of shining. This pertains to the true believers who are attempting to get the word out so all of God's Elect will come into the Kingdom. Their attempts at evangelizing the true gospel will become thwarted by the false religions and the false teachings who will eventually rule the churches and the airwaves. A quick example, try to write a book or tract and have it published using the King James Bible. Have the same book use the NIV or ESV and the publisher will welcome it. Why? Simply because the King James Bible is God's Word and the modern versions are Satan's counterfeits. This is only one area where the Gospel is being darkened by omissions, deletions, and word changes.

### **(Rev 8:13 KJV)**

And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabitants of the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are yet to sound!

As these judgments intensify, an angel flies in the midst of heaven pronouncing three woes on all the inhabitants of the earth as the last three judgments are yet to sound.

(Luke 21:25 KJV) And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring;

Luke 21:25 describes the way that many nations are existing. The word "perplexity" carries with it the meaning of "no resources or no way out." The judgments continue to become more complex and more surgical as God continues to bring judgment on the world system. This is why the angel flies through heaven pronouncing the three woes

because the world is being placed in a maze of perplexity because of its hatred of the Lord Jesus Christ, the Gospel, and Christians. During the Middle Ages the Roman Catholic Church murdered millions of true Christians. Do you think God has forgiven them and that He will bypass them just because many evangelical leaders are selling out to Rome? No, God will bring judgment on these false evangelical leaders too. Woe, woe, woe unto all who partner with Babylon, the world system.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 9:1-7

### **(Rev 9:1 KJV)**

And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.

Here we have the fifth angel sounding the fifth trumpet. Now this angel is not one of the good angels but this angel is an evil one. It may be Satan or it may be another one. There is no evidence either way. The reason that this angel is different from the others is because of the way he is described. The word "fall" in the Greek means "having fallen" and is a verb in the perfect tense. The perfect tense is the tense of completed action. Therefore this angel has already fallen. The word "fall" carries with it the meaning of "fall in ruins, go astray, or perish." These words never describe the Holy Angels of God who did not rebel with Satan. Therefore this angel is a fallen angel. Some believe that this angel may be Christ because he has a key but this will not stand the scrutiny of Scripture. Again, a key phrase in this verse is "and to him was given the key." Do you remember how we touched on this a while back that the angels meting out the judgments on earth "were given" authority to do so. It is the same principle here. This angel was given the key and was not a possessor of it as an owner. The word "bottomless" in the Greek is the word for "abyss." It is a place where evil angels are gathered together. Of the nine New Testament references to the abyss, seven of them are here in the book of Revelation.

### **(Rev 9:2 KJV)**

And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.

The angel now opens the abyss and out of it arises a great cloud of smoke which is so opaque that the sun was darkened by it plus the air was also polluted to the point of it also being darkened. I am sure that we have all seen fires which have given off black smoke which is so dark, it darkens the sun plus it darkens the air it fills. John makes this allusion so we can understand that the smoke which is rising out of the pit is not coming from heaven but from the place of the abode of the fallen angels. We will see that the smoke seems to be some type of carrier of the devils as we will see in the next verse.

### **(Rev 9:3 KJV)**

And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.

As the smoke pours out of the abyss, within the confines of that smoke John sees locusts. These locusts were also "given power." This power given to them was that of "authority." When we look at the Scriptures we find two notable places where locusts are mentioned.

Locusts was one of the ten plagues on Egypt and Joel also mentions locusts. In both cases, the locusts had done great damage. In Exodus the locusts devoured the land of Egypt.

(Exo 10:14-15 KJV) And the locusts went up over all the land of Egypt, and rested in all the coasts of Egypt: very grievous were they; before them there were no such locusts as they, neither after them shall be such. {15} For they covered the face of the whole earth, so that the land was darkened; and they did eat every herb of the land, and all the fruit of the trees which the hail had left: and there remained not any green thing in the trees, or in the herbs of the field, through all the land of Egypt.

In Joel a similar situation had occurred.

(Joel 2:25 KJV) And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, my great army which I sent among you.

When looking at the locusts of Revelation 9:3, we need to look at the fact that these are devils who are commissioned to cause havoc and destruction just as the locusts destroyed the lands that they have attacked, these demonic beings are going out to destroy. These demonic forces have now been unleashed on the earth and their main objective will be to destroy the unbelievers, yet they are not to kill them. We are seeing here an army of devils who have the ability to destroy but their destruction will be of a spiritual nature since literal locusts are not in view here. This authority that these devils are given will be used to further deceive the unbelievers as they are further driven into unbelief and false teachings while simultaneously causing much distress to the body of Christ which is still on earth.

#### **(Rev 9:4 KJV)**

And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

Locusts will normally attack all the green vegetation in its path. If one sees the before and after photos of a locust swarm, they will see full trees before and only bare trees after. Here these locusts are told to withhold themselves from hurting anyone who has the seal of God on them. The believers are also known by the following descriptions:

(Isa 61:3 KJV) To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

(Luke 23:30-31 KJV) Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. {31} For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

True believers are described as trees of righteousness and also they are described as green trees.

(Psa 1:3 KJV) And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.

Psalms 1:3 teaches us that a man who walks in righteousness will be like a tree planted by the waters and will bring forth fruit in season. Only a green tree will bring forth fruit because the green is an indicator that the tree is alive. A dry tree shows that it has died and will never bring forth any fruit. So this is why in Rev. 9:4, we are told that these devils

have no authority over the true believer because Satan no longer has any authority over the true believer. (John 14:30 KJV) Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. The Lord stated that Satan has nothing in Him and that applies also to the true believers who have the Holy Spirit dwelling in them. Those who do not have the seal of God are all the unsaved in the world and they will be affected by these judgments. The problem attached to this is that the body of believers are on earth which means they will be persecuted by those who are in authority who are being judged by the devils. Satan's primary target on this earth has always been the church and Christians. Even though the unbelievers are directly affected by these judgments, they will in turn blame Christians and this will result in still more martyrs for Christ.

#### **(Rev 9:5 KJV)**

And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

These demonic forces are now all over the earth but their time is limited just as all these judgments are in the first and second vision. Limitations of scope and time are now added to these judgments. The word "tormented" carries with it the meaning of "examine by torture" which has an underlying meaning of "testing." These devils are going to be testing those unbelievers on whom they are sent. The test that they are being given is unclear but we do know that the result will be that those who are tested will either prove that they belong to God or to Satan. A test sometimes brings a person to the Lord but in this case these who are tested are the idolaters and unbelievers of the earth. A scorpion strikes a person without warning and swiftly, so this judgment will also be a swift judgment. That is because it is intense as it is being compared to a scorpion's sting which can be fatal. Up to this point this is the only judgment with a time limit imposed on it. The five months here should not be taken literally since it is an apocalyptic number which teaches us that this judgment and the one in verse 10, has a time limitation on it. This may be because of the severity of this particular trumpet judgment. We will see in Revelation 20 that the one thousand years is also not a literal number.

#### **(Rev 9:6 KJV)**

And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

The persecutors will be under severe demonic oppression and some may seek death to avoid any more oppression but the problem is that they will not be able to seek death during this time. They must be tested for the full five months or the duration which God has set for the time limits on this judgment. This does not mean that all of those who are to be tormented will be tormented at the same time. It will happen to different people at different times in their lives. This is why God placed a time limitation on this judgment because it sets them up for the next judgment to come. They are not to be killed because God is not done testing them yet. Remember how Joseph was with his brothers? It was not just one test but he tested them for a length of time. Then something else will happen, the oppressors will then afflict the body of Christ and make more martyrs.

The church and Christian will be under severe satanic attack and it will be the Christians who will also seek death but for a different reason. Why would they seek death? First of all the persecution has become very intense.

Secondly, the Christian knows that to be home with the Lord is better than being here. (2 Cor 5:8 KJV) We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

(Phil 1:21-24 KJV) For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. {22} But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not. {23} For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: {24} Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.

As with Paul, it was necessary for him to stay on Earth, even though his desire was to depart and be with Christ. It is during the time of increased persecution that it is necessary for the Christian to remain here on Earth for a testimony. How many times have you desired that the Lord would return? That means that you too, have wanted death since the Lord is coming back on an appointed day and you can't wait.

We see this is paralleled in the sixth chapter of Revelation.

(Rev 6:9-11 KJV) And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held: {10} And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? {11} And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

### **(Rev 9:7 KJV)**

And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.

Here John begins to describe the locusts. The word "shapes" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "likeness or appearance". The word "like" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "similar or resembling." Now these two words give us insight into the description. John is unable to describe them perfectly so he uses the term "they are like or have the appearance of."

(Joel 2:1-5 KJV) Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain: let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the LORD cometh, for it is nigh at hand; {2} A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there hath not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it, even to the years of many generations. {3} A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth: the land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yea, and nothing shall escape them. {4} The appearance of them is as the appearance of horses; and as horsemen, so shall they run. {5} Like the noise of chariots on the tops of mountains shall they leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devoureth the stubble, as a strong people set in battle array.

In these verses Joel is giving a description of what is going to happen when the day of the Lord is approaching. Joel uses the locust as a metaphor of the approaching day of judgment. He sees them as horses and horsemen and as a result of their fierceness nothing or no one will escape. What Joel is basically saying here is that when the day of the Lord comes, it will come with the fury of a locust swarm and it will come with the strength of the horse which is prepared for battle.

In Revelation 9:7, John gives the best description he can. The horses represent the strength and swiftness that these demonic forces will be coming in. Remember, these forces have been dispatched by God Himself so there is going to be no relenting on the part of these devils. They had on their head crowns of gold which tells us that they have the authority to perform the duty which they have been dispatched to do. The gold crown also tells us that they have rule and they will be ruling over the unbelieving element of this

world and will succeed in their mission. They also had the faces of men which means that they will not only come with fierceness and swiftness but they will come with intelligence. God gave man intelligence and the face of the man on these devils tells us that they will use the intellect of men to further deceive them in their idolatries. How many billions believe in evolution? Countless numbers believe in UFO's and extra-terrestrial life. The intellect of the unsaved is Satan's playground. (2 Cor 4:4 KJV) In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. Based on Revelation 9:7, it seems the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbeliever by divine decree.

[Back](#)

### Revelation 9:8-14

#### **(Rev 9:8 KJV)**

And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions.

When locust are in flight, the small hairs on their legs and bodies would indicate the speediness in which they would be carrying out their mission. Keep in mind that they have a time limit on their mission and that is symbolically set at five months. The hair of women flowing in the wind would give a picture of the swiftness of these locusts. Then we are told that these locusts have teeth of lions. (1 Pet 5:8 KJV) Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: The teeth of lions shows us that these demonic forces will be fierce and devouring. Satan as a lion has no love for Christians and he has no love for those who follow him either. He hates all people with a vengeance. This is why these devils are being shown as fierce with the teeth of lions. If anyone has ever seen a lion devour prey, they literally rip them apart piece by piece. This is what Satan does to those who follow him. Piece by piece he pulls apart their lives.

#### **(Rev 9:9 KJV)**

And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle.

This verse is similar to the vision of Joel concerning the fierceness of the locusts.

(Joel 2:4-8 KJV) The appearance of them is as the appearance of horses; and as horsemen, so shall they run. {5} Like the noise of chariots on the tops of mountains shall they leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devoureth the stubble, as a strong people set in battle array. {6} Before their face the people shall be much pained: all faces shall gather blackness. {7} They shall run like mighty men; they shall climb the wall like men of war; and they shall march every one on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks: {8} Neither shall one thrust another; they shall walk every one in his path: and when they fall upon the sword, they shall not be wounded.

In the Revelation verse we are told that these demon locusts have breastplates of iron. The breastplate was an integral part of the soldier's defense. While wearing the breastplate an arrow or spear could not penetrate the vital organs. These locust wearing the breastplates are signifying the fact that they cannot be stopped from their divinely

appointed mission. Whatever their mission is and to those whom it is aimed at will receive whatever God has determined for them to receive. This second vision of John seems to indicate that these judgments are primarily coming against those who are idolaters. In Joel, the primary judgment was coming against Judah who became steeped in idolatry. God is using the vision of Joel as a parallel judgment to the one coming on the earth.

(Jer 51:27 KJV) Set ye up a standard in the land, blow the trumpet among the nations, prepare the nations against her, call together against her the kingdoms of Ararat, Minni, and Ashchenaz; appoint a captain against her; cause the horses to come up as the rough caterpillars.

In Jeremiah and Joel, we read, as we do in Revelation 9:9, that these demon locusts will come with the swiftness of an invading army. The “rough caterpillars” in Jeremiah 51:27, are the locusts. John heard these demon locusts as if they were the sound of an invading army. This means that they will be coming against those who continue in their unbelief and they will be coming with the unrelenting fierceness of an invading army.

#### **(Rev 9:10 KJV)**

And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power was to hurt men five months.

Once again John is pointing out that these devils will not be allowed to kill the people they are sent to bring judgment on. Just as Satan was not allowed to kill Job but only to afflict him. These devils are afflicting those who are still in unbelief. These judgments will not be upon the true Christians but upon unbelievers. As a scorpion stings its victims, these demon locusts will be stinging their victims but without death. It may be that they will bring unbelievers further into unbelief and cause them to stray further from the Lord. If this is the case, then God would be readying the world for Judgment day as the increase in false gospels and false teachers will increase. Once again John mentions the time limit of five months and this time should not be taken literally since we are dealing with apocalyptic and visionary language. The five months tell us that this judgment has a projected time limit to it.

#### **(Rev 9:11 KJV)**

And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.

In this verse we are introduced to the king over the bottomless pit. The two names which describe him are “Abaddon” and “Apollyon.” The name “abaddon” in the Hebrew carries with it the meaning of “ruin or destruction.” The name “Apollyon” carries with it the meaning of “to destroy.” The name “Apollyon” may come from the Roman god “Apollo” who was the patron god of the Roman Empire but the name Apollo goes back as far as the fifth century BC with the Greeks. In fact, history records that locusts were considered the creature of Apollo plus he was also known as the god of pestilence. John is not advocating a belief in the false god Apollo but he is making an association of ruin and destruction with the two names. It is not clear whether this angel who was king over the bottomless was Satan or another angel. We know that Satan’s mode of operation is nothing but chaos and destruction and he is head of the fallen angels at this point until he will be cast into the lake of fire at the end of time. We also know that there will come a time when all his angels will be released along with him to make war against the Christians and overcome them right before the return of the Lord Jesus Christ. We will see this detailed in Revelation 20.

#### **(Rev 9:12 KJV)**

One woe is past; and, behold, there come two woes more hereafter.



The first woe which was introduced by the angel in 8:13 is now complete but the second woe which is the sixth trumpet and the third woe which is the seventh trumpet are soon to be sounded. Now the vision is moved to the end of the five months as the other trumpets are ready to sound.

**(Rev 9:13 KJV)**

And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God,

The seventh seal and the seven trumpets are tied to the prayers of the Saints as we are once again brought back into the throne room where the focus is the golden altar where the prayers of the Saints were mixed with incense and then cast to the earth. The four horns of the altar are emphasized here. Four is the number of universality, so we can conclude by this that the prayers of the Saints are coming in from all over the world plus the judgment of God is going out through all the earth with limitations at this particular point in the second vision. The voice which is heard may be the voice of another angel or it could be the voice of the Lord Jesus Christ.

**(Rev 9:14 KJV)**

Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

These four angels differ from the four angels on the four corners of the earth in Revelation 7:1. Here a specific river is mentioned plus the angels in Revelation 7:1 are holding back the forces of evil while these four angels have been loosed. The Euphrates river was the limit of the land which was promised to Abraham back in Genesis. It is also one of the rivers which is mentioned flowing out of the Garden of Eden. (Gen 15:18 KJV) In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates: Now John is not seeing a physical river in his vision but he is seeing the beginning of the onslaught of demonic forces which will soon envelop the earth against the unbelievers. The river Euphrates was east of Israel. (Rev 7:2 KJV) And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, The angel told the four angels of Rev. 7:1 to not hurt those who have the seal of God on them. Remember the term "east" is defined by its usage. (Rev 16:12 KJV) And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared. In the sixth vial judgment, the Euphrates was dried up so the kings of the east could march. It could be that we are seeing the same action being performed on the Euphrates in both Revelation 9:14 and 16:12. Keep in mind that we are seeing parallel visions of the same events only they become more intense as we continue on.

[Back](#)

Revelation 9:15-21

**(Rev 9:15 KJV)**

And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the third part of men.

The voice from the four horns of the altar commanded that the four angels be loosed and

in this verse we are seeing that this command is now happening. If you notice that these demonic forces have been prepared for this moment. Just as an invading army prepares itself to do battle, these demonic forces have been prepared in the same manner. In fact, the words “were prepared” are in the perfect tense and may be understood as “having been prepared.” These demonic forces have been prepared for the precise moment when they will be unleashed. If you notice their time of dispatch was for a year, a month, a day, and an hour. This denotes a specific time of dispatch. We also read that they killed the third part of men.

(Rev 6:8 KJV) And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

In Revelation 6:8, which was the first vision of John we see that one fourth of the population of the earth was killed. Now we are seeing an increase in that number in this second vision. We go from one fourth to one third which is a large increase. To properly understand Revelation, we must keep these progressive quantities in mind. Demons do not kill people but what they do is they deceive them into false beliefs and those false beliefs eventually will kill them with the second death. Here we are seeing an increase from one fourth to one third. This means as we get closer to the end the great prophesied apostasy will become more evident as teachings stray from the truths of the Bible. There will be an increasing number of people who will be drawn into false belief systems whether they are religious or secular.

#### **(Rev 9:16 KJV)**

And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

This number is not a literal number but God is emphasizing to us that there is going to be a great number of demonic forces which are going out through all the earth deceiving the populations of the earth. They cannot deceive the true believers as they were commanded not to hurt those who have the seal of God on them, which is the seal of salvation. There are some who attempt to take this number and claim that this is the Chinese army which will invade Israel. This is an erroneous interpretation and abuses the context of this verse.

#### **(Rev 9:17 KJV)**

And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breastplates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone.

Here is the reason that the 200 million demons cannot be a literal army. John is now describing the ferocity of this demon army. It is not the riders which are bringing the judgment but it is the horses. As John described the locusts in a manner not consistent with the actual insect, the same principle is in effect here as these horses are also being described in a manner not consistent with the actual animal. These horses were spewing out fire, brimstone, and smoke which is all consistent with the judgment God is going to bring upon all the unbelievers at the Great White Throne judgment.

(Psa 11:6 KJV) Upon the wicked he shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup.

(Gen 19:24 KJV) Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven;

In both Psalm 11:6 and Genesis 19:24, we see that fire and brimstone speak of judgment by God upon the unbelievers in this world.

(Rev 21:8 KJV) But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

In Revelation 21:8 we read that unbelievers will be in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone.

(Rev 14:11 KJV) And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

We see that smoke, fire, and brimstone are all connected with hell. When we read about the horses in Revelation 9:17 issuing fire, smoke, and brimstone we know that their mission is associated with hell. These demons will also be very ferocious as they are portrayed as having the heads of lions. The mission of these demons is to bring a very hard deception upon the unbelievers and there will be no relenting on their part. Since the forces of hell are involved, the deception will be strong and lasting and will keep countless numbers in spiritual darkness which will result in their ultimate second death for all eternity.

#### **(Rev 9:18 KJV)**

By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths.

Once again we are introduced to the one third which means that this judgment is also one which is progressively wider in scope than those of the first vision. We read here that there are three separate judgments yet connected. They are the fire, smoke, and brimstone which is a burning sulphur. Brimstone is what burned when Sodom and Gomorrah was judged by God for their wicked sins. Since the world is also headed in the same direction that Sodom and Gomorrah were, it follows suit that the judgment of God will fall in the same fashion as it did on Sodom and Gomorrah. That judgment fell swiftly and the cities were incinerated in a matter of minutes. (Jude 1:7 KJV) Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. The present world is also being prepared for the day of judgment as Sodomy is being accepted by both the world and the church. (Deu 29:22-23 KJV) So that the generation to come of your children that shall rise up after you, and the stranger that shall come from a far land, shall say, when they see the plagues of that land, and the sicknesses which the LORD hath laid upon it; {23} And that the whole land thereof is brimstone, and salt, and burning, that it is not sown, nor beareth, nor any grass growth therein, like the overthrow of Sodom, and Gomorrah, Admah, and Zeboim, which the LORD overthrew in his anger, and in his wrath: The fire, smoke, and brimstone are all associated with Hell, so when these people who have succumbed to the false gospels and false religion wind up in Hell, they will be there for eternity as their situation will never change.

#### **(Rev 9:19 KJV)**

For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

(Psa 50:16-19 KJV) But unto the wicked God saith, What hast thou to do to declare my statutes, or that thou shouldest take my covenant in thy mouth? {17} Seeing thou hatest instruction, and castest

my words behind thee. {18} When thou sawest a thief, then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers. {19} Thou givest thy mouth to evil, and thy tongue frameth deceit. One of the characteristics of these demonic beings is that their power is in their mouth which means that the words which they speak are those words of Hell as we associate the fire, smoke and brimstone with these demonic beings. In Psalm 50:16-19, we are reading that the wicked are those who give their mouths over to evil and their tongues over to deceit. The greatest tool that Satan has in his arsenal is that of deceiving the people of this earth. (Prov 18:21 KJV) Death and life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof. As these demonic beings have power in their tongues. The word "power" in the Greek may also be translated as "authority." Keep in mind that these demonic beings have been given the power at this time to begin to deceive the masses of the world since they have this authority in their tongue and the tongue uses words.

These horse demons which John saw also have tails like serpents. In the Bible the serpent is associated with Satan which means that both their words and actions will hurt those whom God has used these demons to judge. The mouth uses words and the tail has a sting and that sting is the actions which will hurt the ones who this judgment is focused on. The word "hurt" in the Greek may also be translated as "Do wrong, injure, or act unjustly." So we can see that the tail will represent the actions which accompany the false words of deception. For example, in the charismatic movement many of their preachers speak of financial prosperity and the way to achieve it is by giving a lot of money, of course, to their ministry. So the words are the false preaching and the serpent tails are the actions which the people do, in this case giving large sums of money to a false system. The fact that there are heads on these tails teaches us that the actions will be made to sound like they are just and in keeping with God's economy. They will come with an intelligent pitch but under girded with deception. That deception will sound so good to the intellect that those who are deceived by it will not believe they are being deceived.

#### **(Rev 9:20-21 KJV)**

{20} And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: {21} Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

The heart of unsaved man is as hard as it can be. Instead of judgments softening the hearts, for many reprobates they become more hardened. Those who were not affected by these judgments did not repent of their evil works. One of the main evil works which has been brought to light here is that of idolatry. The heart of the unsaved man is evil and will wax worse and worse as they go deeper into sin. If we look at the list of sins, they are representative of the baseness of the unregenerate heart. Man worships devils through idolatry. Idolatry need not be a statue of a false god, it can be the gold we have in the bank or the money we are saving. It can be the pursuit of worldly pleasures and the pursuit of worldly gain. Idolatry can be anything which takes us in the opposite direction of God. In these two verses, we read that the idolatry is again connected with Hell since the worship of devils is involved. Many Christians are involved in Freemasonry which has its roots in Satanism and occultism, yet it is touted as a just a fraternal organization. The very wealthy who have designs upon world domination are also worshippers of Satan through these esoteric organizations like the Yale Order of the Skull and Bones. These two verses in Revelation show us that not only the wealthy serve Satan which are represented by the silver and gold, but also poor people are in Satan's service as represented by the brass, stone, and wood. Any time a person gets caught up in false religions and then propagates it to gain new members are guilty of murder. The murder is of the soul of the convert to the

false religion. When they stand before the Lord on Judgment day they will be cast into Hell for opposing Christ and Christianity. Basically, the list of sins in these two verses represent the way man goes when he rejects the true Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ, they go right into the bosom of Satan as Satan deceives them with all kinds of promises of worldly wealth and status but in the end they will realize they have been deceived but then it will be too late. Remember Satan's promise to the Lord Jesus Christ. (Mat 4:8-9 KJV) Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; {9} And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. This is exactly what man is doing, he is worshipping Satan to gain the kingdoms of the world.

[Back](#)

### Revelation 10:1-6

#### **(Rev 10:1 KJV)**

And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire:

Now the scene shifts as John is back on the earth. He now sees another mighty angel which now comes down from heaven. This angel differs from the one in Revelation 5:2 by means of the description given here. This angel can compare to the angel of the Lord as found in many instances in the Old Testament. First, we see that this angel was clothed with a cloud. One of the Old testament allusions to this would be found in Daniel 7:13. (Dan 7:13 KJV) I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. Daniel sees the Son of Man coming with clouds in one of his visions and we also see this portrayed in the new Testament. (Mat 26:64 KJV) Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. When the Lord Jesus will return to Earth on the last day, he will also be clothed with clouds. (Acts 1:9 KJV) And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight. When the Lord Jesus ascended to Heaven, a cloud received Him up.

Then we are told that he had a rainbow upon his head. Ezekiel had seen this in his vision. (Ezek 1:26-28 KJV) And above the firmament that was over their heads was the likeness of a throne, as the appearance of a sapphire stone: and upon the likeness of the throne was the likeness as the appearance of a man above upon it. {27} And I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward, and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about. {28} As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face, and I heard a voice of one that spake. Ezekiel had a parallel vision since in the vision of Ezekiel 1-3, there is also mention of Ezekiel eating a book which was sweet in his mouth as John will experience that same thing in this vision. The rainbow also represents the fact that God stated to Noah that He would never again flood the earth. The rainbow represents the Noahic covenant.

Then we are told that his face was as the sun. This means that his face had a tremendous

brightness. We saw this description of Christ back in Revelation 1:16: (Rev 1:16 KJV) And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp twoedged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

Then finally we are told that his feet were as pillars of fire. In Revelation 1:5 we are told that the feet of Christ were as brass burned in a furnace. Here is a reference to the pillar of fire which led Israel in the desert for forty years. His feet as pillars of fire shows that He guides His people through the wilderness of this earth until He returns on the last day. Therefore, based upon this information given in the description, this mighty angel is the Lord Jesus Christ. In the Greek, the word “angelos” may also be translated as “messenger.” Christ is referred to as the messenger of the Covenant in Malachi 3:1. (Mal 3:1 KJV) Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. This title of “mighty angel” given to Christ in Revelation 10:1 in no way gives any credence to the false belief that Christ was a created being. He is eternal God and always will be. John uses much apocalyptic language in his descriptions and they must be interpreted as such.

### **(Rev 10:2 KJV)**

And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

In his hand was a small scroll but this one seems different than the one we saw in Revelation 5 as this scroll has no seals nor is it closed. However, this little book is definitely identifiable with the book of Revelation 5. In Revelation 5, Christ had already opened that book and here John is seeing this from an earthly perspective. In Revelation 5, he saw it from the heavenly perspective. Both of the scrolls have an allusion to the scroll in Ezekiel 2. Revelation 5:2 speaks of a strong angel seeking to find someone worthy to open the book and here we have the book opened in the hands of another angel but this mighty angel is Christ Himself as divine attributes are given to make a clear distinction between the angel of Revelation 5 and the angel of the Lord in Revelation 10. Both of these scrolls have prophetic value to them. The book of Revelation 5 and the small book of Revelation 10 will allow a certain harmony of the entire prophetic picture from chapters 4-11. The judgments which were pronounced on the world in the book in Revelation 5, is probably enhanced by the book of Revelation 10 which may be an intensifying of the mysteries soon to be revealed on the earth as we will see in Revelation 10:7. Then John sees Christ as a very large angel. This angel was so big that one foot was in the sea and one on dry earth. This may also symbolize that Christ has authority over the entire earth. It also shows us that the demons which were released from the abyss would be no match for Christ who has total authority over everything in heaven and on earth and in the spiritual realm.

### **(Rev 10:3 KJV)**

And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

The angel roared with a mighty voice. If an angel can stand on the earth with one foot on land and one foot on the sea, then when he utters his voice it would be a mighty call. This roar would definitely be one which could be like a lion. When he cried (called or screamed) seven thunders uttered their voices. (Psa 29:3 KJV) The voice of the LORD is upon the waters: the God of glory thundereth: the LORD is upon many waters. (Hosea 11:10 KJV) They shall walk after the LORD: he shall roar like a lion: when he shall roar, then the children shall tremble from the west. Here again we are introduced to seven thunders. These seven thunders are associated with some sequence of coming judgments. Revelation 8:5; 11:19; and 16:18.

The thunderings are all associated with voices. The seven thunders in Revelation 10:3 must have been some type of revealing of judgments since we see that the number seven is mentioned. The number seven is the divine number of perfection, so whatever is about to happen will be done perfectly and completely.

**(Rev 10:4 KJV)**

And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

In the beginning of the book of Revelation, John was given the command to write the things which he shall see that shall happen hereafter. However, after these seven thunders had uttered their voices, he was about to write what he heard but he was told that he was not to write them. In other words, at this time these judgments have been sealed up until an appointed time. Daniel was also told to seal up the words which he was given until the appointed time of the end.

(Dan 12:4 KJV) But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.

(Dan 12:9 KJV) And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end.

Whatever these seven thunders were, it is significant to know that something will happen in the end times which is not being revealed to the people at present.

(Deu 29:29 KJV) The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.

The Lord reserves the right to reveal to His people whatever He believes is necessary for them to know and at the right time.

The seven thunders here in Revelation refer to the voice of God as written in Psalm 29.

(Psa 29:3-9 KJV) The voice of the LORD *is* upon the waters: **the God of glory thundereth**: the LORD *is* upon many waters. {4} The voice of the LORD *is* powerful; the voice of the LORD *is* full of majesty. {5} The voice of the LORD breaketh the cedars; yea, the LORD breaketh the cedars of Lebanon. {6} He maketh them also to skip like a calf; Lebanon and Sirion like a young unicorn. {7} The voice of the LORD divideth the flames of fire. {8} The voice of the LORD shaketh the wilderness; the LORD shaketh the wilderness of Kadesh. {9} The voice of the LORD maketh the hinds to calve, and discovereth the forests: and in his temple doth every one speak of *his* glory.

**(Rev 10:5 KJV)**

And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven,

John then abandons the attempt to write the contents of the seven thunders and then turns his attention back to Christ as the mighty messenger or angel. He sees Him lift His hand toward Heaven.

**(Rev 10:6 KJV)**

And swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

Now here the mighty angel makes a tremendous prophecy that time should be no longer and He swore by God the Father that this would be so. Now many believe that this angel is not speaking of Christ because the angel is taking some kind of oath. This type of action is not strange to Scripture. In Hebrews 6:13, we read in the account of Abraham that God swore to Abraham by Himself.

(Heb 6:13 KJV) For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself,

(Gen 22:16 KJV) And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the LORD, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son:

So it would not be out of character for the Lord Jesus Christ to do the same thing as He swears by God the Father. This should not be a stumbling block in understanding this passage because there is much in apocalyptic language and imagery that may seem convoluted to us but is proper in the ways of God. The prophecy made in this verse concerning the end of time would definitely speak to the earth. Heaven is a place of eternity and eternity would not be measured in time as we know it. This prophecy refers to a point in time on this earth when time will have reached its final end and then God is going to completely bring to an end the history of man and then beyond that will come eternity where the true believers will be in Heaven and the unbelievers in Hell. This verse shows that the Lord Jesus Christ has a sovereign control over the universe as it will be He who will end time as we know it.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 10:7-11

##### **(Rev 10:7 KJV)**

But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

This verse looks ahead to Revelation 11:15.

(Rev 11:15 KJV) And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.

In Revelation 10:6 we see that a divine oath had been sworn and here we see the focus of that oath. When the seventh angel shall begin to sound, then the mystery of God will be finished. When we look at 11:15, we can see with no uncertainty that the end has finally come. The kingdoms of this world which had been under Satan's control since the Garden of Eden have now been relinquished because the end of the age of evil has come. When we look at the fact that God had revealed this mystery to His prophets, we must seek to find where this mystery has been written for us.

(Eph 2:19-20 KJV) Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; {20} And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

In Ephesians 2:20, we read that the body of Christ is built upon the foundation of the



apostles and prophets. For us to find where the mystery is hidden that was revealed to the prophets, we must look to the Scriptures because this is where we will find those things which are a mystery unto the unbelieving world but have been revealed to the body of Christ.

(Mat 13:17 KJV) For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

The Lord Jesus had commented on this great mystery in that the prophets of old, who penned the books of the Bible did not have understanding of what was written. They desired to understand those Scriptures that the Holy Spirit spoke through them but the timing of the revealing of the mystery was not made known unto them. God had been declaring the mystery of Christ and the Gospel since Genesis 3:15 but the understanding of it was couched in parables and similes especially concerning the law and the animal sacrifices leading up to the incarnation of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Old Testament prophets did not make the spiritual connection between the animal sacrifices, the tabernacle, and the feasts as all pointing to Messiah. Even though this verse looks forward to the point prior to the Lord's return, the rest of the second vision shows us that there is much persecution which must be endured by the body of Christ before His return as detailed in Revelation 11:15-18.

#### **(Rev 10:8 KJV)**

And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea and upon the earth.

For the third time John hears a voice from Heaven commanding him to take the little book from Christ who is portrayed as this mighty angel enveloping both land and sea.

#### **(Rev 10:9 KJV)**

And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

Here John is told to eat this book and that it will be sweet in his mouth but when it hits his belly it will be bitter. This is a typical characteristic of the word of God. We read many of the passages and they give us joy and comfort but when we begin to digest the word of God as we get into it more deeply, it becomes bitter to us because it contains great judgments which include eternal damnation and I can positively say that everyone who reads this right now knows someone who died unsaved and is awaiting the final judgment. While the word of God may be sweet to the believer because of the great promises of eternal life, it is also very bitter to digest because of its judgments.

(Eccl 1:18 KJV) For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.

Solomon wrote Ecclesiastes and he penned, through inspiration of the Holy Spirit, that in much wisdom is much grief and an increase in knowledge increases sorrow. This is why when someone comes to the biblical doctrine of Limited Atonement, they loathe that doctrine because it is God who has determined who He will save and has not left it up to man to accept or reject. The more we know of the Scriptures, the more we become sorrowful for the millions around us who have not been chosen by God. When John symbolically swallowed the little book, it became bitter because he was seeing the

persecution, both spiritual and physical, which the church had yet to undergo before the return of Christ on the last day.

**(Rev 10:10 KJV)**

And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

Here John takes the little book and does as the angel commands him. The word of God is sweet with all the promises of heaven and joy but when the world must first be judged brings a bitterness to the soul. A true Christian will not take pleasure at the thought of the judgments which will come upon the unbelievers upon the earth but as the saying goes "it is a bitter pill to swallow."

**(Rev 10:11 KJV)**

And he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

John was required to digest the word of God because his ministry was not yet finished. The word of God must go out through all the world and then the end will come. (Mat 24:14 KJV) And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. In the midst of tribulation and persecution the word of God must be sown throughout all the world. Even those nations which are hostile to the Gospel, and there is no nation which holds the true gospel in high esteem, will have the true gospel preached in them so the Elect of God will hear the word and become saved until the last one is saved and then comes the end.

[Back](#)

Revelation 11:1-5

**(Rev 11:1 KJV)**

And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

Now John is being asked to take a measurement. This is something which has been done in the past. Abraham was told to walk through the land which God was going to give to him.

(Gen 13:17 KJV) Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee.

Now when we realize that God is not concerned about earthly real estate, we will know that God was using this walk of Abraham as symbolic because the real land of Canaan which God was going to give him was heaven which came through the eternal covenant.

(Gen 17:8 KJV) And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.

In Genesis 17:8, we read that God was going to give Abraham the land of Egypt and the land of Canaan for an everlasting possession. Now we know that this present earth will have an end and a new earth will come into being after the last day. Therefore, God is not

speaking of present real estate but is promising Abraham eternal life in heaven or on the new earth which is the eternal possessions. Abraham walking around the land is just a figure of him receiving eternal life. Keep in mind that Abraham died and did not receive any of the land.

In Amos 7:7-8 God told Amos to look at the plumb line which He was using to measure the straightness of the people. They were found crooked and God told Amos that they would go into judgment.

(Amos 7:7-8 KJV) Thus he showed me: and, behold, the Lord stood upon a wall made by a plumbline, with a plumbline in his hand. {8} And the LORD said unto me, Amos, what seest thou? And I said, A plumbline. Then said the Lord, Behold, I will set a plumbline in the midst of my people Israel: I will not again pass by them any more:

Now back to Revelation 11:1. The reed which was given to John gives us no clue as to the length of it. The reed was something which was used for writing and also something which was cut and used for measuring. When Revelation was penned about 95 AD, the physical temple was already destroyed for 25 years, so this verse is not speaking of the Jewish temple but is speaking symbolically of the body of Christ which is called the temple. (1 Cor 3:16-17 KJV) Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? {17} If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

John is also told to measure the altar which is probably the altar of incense which we have already seen in previous verses. Then John is also told to measure those that worship within. This measuring could not be a literal measurement because there were an innumerable amount of believers already in Heaven and a great multitude of believers still on earth. The measuring here is nothing more than a symbolic action in which God is stating that He is totally aware of every believer on earth and in heaven. The measuring would be like a divine register of every believer which was written in the Lamb's book of life. So this verse is in no way speaking of any future physical temple on earth because it is a symbolic gesture of the care of God for His believers.

#### **(Rev 11:2 KJV)**

But the court which is without the temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months.

Not only will the temple of God contain saved Jews, it will also contain saved Gentiles. The treading can be linked back to Matthew 11:12 which speaks of the Kingdom of God being taken by force.

(Mat 11:12 KJV) And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

It is speaking of the Kingdom of God advancing violently upon the world. The Kingdom of God invades the Kingdom of Satan and that is an act of violence when one kingdom comes against another. Whenever we advance the Kingdom of God, we are doing violence to the Kingdom of Satan by plundering it. The times of the Gentiles shall be on the last day.

(Luke 21:24 KJV) And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

The holy city is another synonym for the body of believers. This has absolutely nothing to do with the physical city of Jerusalem which has now been set aside with the abolition of the ceremonial laws with the sacrifice of Christ.

The outer court which John is told not to measure speaks of the church on earth as it still continues to gather in believers and face the persecution which shall come in the New Testament period which is symbolized in the 42 months, which was also prophesied in Daniel 7:25. Then after the forty two months there will come a little space of time where it seems that Satan will have won and we will see this in a few verses.

(Dan 7:25 KJV) And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

#### **(Rev 11:3 KJV)**

And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth.

On the heels of the forty two months prophesied in Revelation 11:2, the Lord Jesus tells John that the two witnesses are going to prophesy or preach the true Gospel for 1260 days. As the Kingdom continues to advance, God speaks of the body of believers and the local churches as the two witnesses. For it is only the saved in those churches who can be a commissioned witness for the true Gospel. In the law it was required that there be at least two witnesses for any matter to be established or legitimized.

(Deu 19:15 KJV) One witness shall not rise up against a man for any iniquity, or for any sin, in any sin that he sinneth: at the mouth of two witnesses, or at the mouth of three witnesses, shall the matter be established.

(John 8:17 KJV) It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.

God then says that He will give power to the two witnesses and they shall prophesy 1,260 days, which corresponds to the 42 months of Revelation 11:2. This period of time would represent the New Testament period minus the small amount of time which will occur between the last one being saved and the return of Christ. The fact that these witnesses are clothed in sackcloth means that they are calling the Elect to repentance. Only those whom God has qualified to hear and understand the Gospel will come to repentance. (2 Tim 2:25 KJV) In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; Repentance is a synonym for becoming saved and only the qualified Elect will repent and be saved. As we saw in the end of Chapter 9, that those unbelievers who were not affected by the plagues, did not repent of their sins (Rev. 9:21).

#### **(Rev 11:4 KJV)**

These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.

(Rom 11:17 KJV) And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree;

Now these two witnesses are being given two monikers. The first one they are given is that of the olive trees. In Romans 11, we read about the olive tree which is the body of Christ and how both Gentiles and Jews are grafted into the root and fatness of the olive tree. This olive tree is not the physical nation of modern Israel because that nation is not

mentioned in Scripture.

(Rev 1:20 KJV) The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches.

Then the second moniker it is given is that of the candlestick which we saw in Revelation 1:20 as the seven churches. If you remember, that the seven churches represented all the churches down through the ages until the last day. Even though we are seeing many churches falling to false gospels, yet there is a remnant of faithful churches which are still in existence. However, that will come to an end very shortly right before the return of Christ. If Satan can successfully attack the local churches and turn them to false gospels, then he will be able to discredit all of Christianity as true Christians are normally tied to the church. The church is a part of the testimony of the true believer.

#### **(Rev 11:5 KJV)**

And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

In previous verses, God had stated that the plagues and judgments would fall upon the unbelievers of the world and that the believers are spiritually protected by being part of the heavenly temple which John was told to measure. What God is pointing out here is that His children are under His protection and if anyone harms them, then fire will devour those who attempt to hurt them. This fire will be evident on Judgment day when the unbelievers and the persecutors will stand before the Lord and give an account for their hatred of Christ and Christianity. This, of course, does not rule out the fact that unbelievers will suffer judgments from God on earth as they attempt to hurt the believers. These judgments will be designed to give the believers temporary respite so they can continue to send forth the Gospel until the last day and then comes the final fiery judgment of the unbelievers. The fact that these unbelievers will face the same type of judgments that they will try to foster on the believers goes back to the principle of the Golden Rule. (Mat 7:12 KJV) Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. The Golden Rule does not only apply to good but it also applies to the evil people. As they have fought against Christ and the Gospel, then they will face the consequence of their actions. In other words, no unbeliever will get away with anything. As they have persecuted and attempted to do harm to believers, they in turn, will likewise receive proper judicial compensation for their crimes.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 11:6-10

#### **(Rev 11:6 KJV)**

These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

This verse is making allusion to the ministries of Moses and Elijah. Elijah had prayed and God withheld the rain for a period of forty two months. (Luke 4:25 KJV) But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land; Of course, we know that the forty two months is a figure of the New Testament period. The two witnesses are being portrayed as having the same power as those prophets of the Old Testament. Moses

brought the plagues on Egypt and the first one was the water turning to blood. These two witnesses have the ability to have this power any time they wish. Now what is in view here is not miracle working power which Moses and Elijah had but what is really in view is the source of those miracles. Just because during the New Testament period, except the first century, that miracles had ceased, does not mean that the believers do not have the same authority as those prophets of the Old Testament. The salvation of Moses and Elijah was brought about by the same sacrifice of Christ as every believer throughout history up to the last one who will be saved. Verses five and six of this chapter really point to the divine source of the believer's authority and those who persecute the believers in the New Testament period will face the same judgments that the old pagan nations faced under the old covenant except maybe these judgments will be delivered in different manners. No one will persecute the children of God with impunity.

**(Rev 11:7 KJV)**

And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

Now there is going to come a time which will come just prior to the return of Christ when the true Christian witness will be silenced. There may still be a religious and a false Christianity still permeating the churches and the air waves but the true Christian witness has been silenced for the first time in history. This does not mean that there will not be any true witness but it will have been so shrouded with the false gospel that it will seem like there is no one left who knows the true gospel. Remember the black horse in the first vision of John when there was a dearth of true believers. Revelation 11:7 links back to that black horse vision as there will be true believers on earth but they will be so scattered it will be impossible to find them and this is why God speaks of John measuring the temple in Revelation 11:1-2, because He knows who His true children are.

(Dan 7:21 KJV) I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;

Daniel also had a vision concerning the latter times when Satan will wage war against the true believers and will prevail. This is because the believers have all been sealed and saved and there is no need for the true Gospel to continue since no one else will be saved. In 11:7, we are told that the beast will come out of the bottomless pit. This title of "beast" gives us insight that this is Satan and harmonizes with Daniel 7:21.

(Dan 7:25 KJV) And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

Another Daniel verse which gives us insight that the Saints of God will be worn out. That is the literal meaning of this word. The war that Satan makes against the believers will literally wear them out to the point that it will seem like Satan is ruling over them. The true believer is never ruled by Satan but if you notice the time reference given here, "until a time and times and the dividing of time." This reference also corresponds to the forty two months of the New Testament period. Satan will be harassing and persecuting both the organized church and the believers. It will get so bad right before the return of Christ that even true believers will wonder about their salvation. Revelation 11:7 also tells us that the witness of the believer will come to an appointed end in the Lord's timing. Death brings about a sudden loss of life and in this verse we are told that Satan will kill them. This is going to be the final battle between God and Satan. Satan's forces will be allowed to overcome the believers. The word "overcome" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "prevail, win, or conquer." This is because the true gospel has been silenced because there will be no more of God's Elect to be saved. This is for a very brief time right before

the return of Christ. (Mat 24:21-22 KJV) For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. {22} And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Notice in the Matthew passage that a great tribulation will occur which has never happened before and that will be the end of salvation when God has saved His last elect one. Then the days following that will be cut short because the true believers will be facing persecution and if the days of this final period are not cut short, then many of the Elect may be physically killed and there will be a world void of believers. This must not happen since the Lord is going to return to earth and claim His Elect and this is why those days must be cut short. Notice in Matthew 24:21, the Lord speaks about "flesh" being saved which means the physical bodies of the believers are affected too.

In fact, we are seeing evidence for this overcoming at a massive rate. The churches are falling quickly to false gospels and also those in the media are falling to false gospels. Every time a false gospel is accepted by a church, ministry, or Christian it represents the killing of the true Gospel. This is the abomination of Desolation which the Lord spoke about. It is the replacing of the true Gospel with the false gospel and that is why the believer must flee. (Mat 24:15-16 KJV) When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) {16} Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: Where is the holy Place? It is anywhere the true Gospel is being preached and when the false gospel takes over, then it is like Satan taking over with the false gospel of the false prophet.

#### **(Rev 11:8 KJV)**

And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

Once the witness of the true believer and the true church have been completed, the vestiges of the once mighty church will still be seen, Unfortunately, it will be seen only as a dead body, an empty shell. The churches which once preached the true Gospel will now be filled with false gospels. The great media ministries which once preached the true Gospel will have been replaced by those false gospels. In eastern thought, not to bury someone after death was a disgrace, not only to the deceased but to their families. Here we are told that their bodies will lie in the street of the great city which is called Sodom and Egypt. If you notice the city is "spiritually" called "Sodom and Egypt." This is a reference to the world. The world is not only called "Babylon" but is known by other names also.

(Isa 1:10 KJV) Hear the word of the LORD, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah.

In Isaiah, God had called the rulers and the people of Judah, Sodom and Gomorrah. Now we know that these two cities had been destroyed many years prior but God is still calling them Sodom and Gomorrah. He does this because of the sinfulness of Judah and their affinity to the surrounding pagan nations. He also refers to them as Sodom in Ezekiel.

(Ezek 16:46-49 KJV) And thine elder sister is Samaria, she and her daughters that dwell at thy left hand: and thy younger sister, that dwelleth at thy right hand, is Sodom and her daughters. {47} Yet hast thou not walked after their ways, nor done after their abominations: but, as if that were a very little thing, thou wast corrupted more than they in all thy ways. {48} As I live, saith the Lord GOD, Sodom thy sister hath not done, she nor her daughters, as thou hast done, thou and thy daughters. {49} Behold, this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, pride, fulness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters, neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy.

The reference to the great city is a reference to the world. When the Lord was crucified in Jerusalem, the city had become so corrupt and embellished with false gospels, that they did not even recognize Christ from the Scriptures. The reference to Sodom is a reference to the degrading and base spiritual condition the city of Jerusalem had fallen into. The reference to Egypt, was that of a city engrafted into idolatry and pagan worship. When Christ came on the scene, the moneychangers were corrupting the temple of God, just as the modern moneychangers are doing to the modern church. Jerusalem had become so much like the world, that they are spoken of as being as bad as both Sodom and Egypt, both were typical representations of the world. This is why the great city where Christ was crucified can be identified with the world because Jerusalem became as corrupt as the world. Jerusalem had placed its faith in the world system in contrast to the heavenly Jerusalem of Galatians 4.

(Jer 22:6-9 KJV) For thus saith the LORD unto the king's house of Judah; Thou art Gilead unto me, and the head of Lebanon: yet surely I will make thee a wilderness, and cities which are not inhabited. {7} And I will prepare destroyers against thee, every one with his weapons: and they shall cut down thy choice cedars, and cast them into the fire. {8} And many nations shall pass by this city, and they shall say every man to his neighbour, Wherefore hath the LORD done thus unto this great city? {9} Then they shall answer, Because they have forsaken the covenant of the LORD their God, and worshipped other gods, and served them.

#### **(Rev 11:9 KJV)**

And they of the people and kindreds and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

Here we have a further elaboration of the term “great city” and how it refers to the world in general. Remember, that John is now seeing a time just before the return of Christ when the church will no longer be bringing the true Gospel. Since this “killing” of the true Gospel will be worldwide, this will happen in every country around the world. The universal message of the true Gospel will be squelched and all the world will see the remnants of the once mighty church. True believers will have a very limited outlet for testimony to the point that it will be so minimal that no one from the world will pay attention. The three and a half days signifies that this situation will be a very short period of time. 1260 days or forty two months represent the New Testament time period. Three and a half days is a very short time period in contrast to three and a half years which is the New Testament period. It goes back to the Lord saying that the days will be cut short.

#### **(Rev 11:10 KJV)**

And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another; because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

Here is the attitude of those on the earth. The great conscience of society is now silent and therefore this brings joy to those it came to preach to. The unbelieving people of the world can now feel a great relief since the true Gospel is not there to prick their consciences. They can now partake in Sodomy and call it an alternate lifestyle. They can now commit adultery and call it an affair. They can steal and call it their rights. Once the great pulpits and the strong ministries have become silent or have become apostate to the point of agreement with the world, then the world can feel at ease and go about its business without the pesky Gospel to call them to repentance. When one makes merry and sends gifts to each other, it shows a spirit of the world especially since the reason is the end of the Gospel witness. Those who dwell upon the earth, as stated in the above verse, are those who are tied to the world system, just as Jerusalem was when Christ



came on the scene. The preaching of Judgment to the world has stopped and that gives a temporary ease to the unsaved.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 11:11-15

##### **(Rev 11:11 KJV)**

And after three days and an half the Spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

The three and a half days was the very brief time period in which it seemed that Satan had won by completely killing the Christian message. Now the second vision of John begins to conclude with the return of the Lord Jesus Christ on the last day. The Christians had seemed to be defeated in that the true Gospel was quashed by the world. Their joy in quashing the true Gospel resulted in great merriment that it was like a party atmosphere on earth that the great conscience of society was now dead. Here in this verse we see that things have become reversed rather quickly. The great joy which the world had felt believing they defeated true Christianity has now been turned into great fear. The body of believers which was portrayed as having been killed were now resurrected in might and the whole world has seen these believers and were in great fear. Now at this point I do not know what has caused the great fear in the world except that the final things have now begun to happen and the world now knows that the return of the Lord is very near and that could very well be the source of their fear. The Lord Jesus Christ, who they have mocked and degraded throughout the years is now ready to return in power and in judgment.

##### **(Rev 11:12 KJV)**

And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud; and their enemies beheld them.

(1 Th 4:16-17 KJV) For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: {17} Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

The fear in the previous verse may be related to 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17 where the believers which have been physically dead are now raised from the dead and the world is watching as these believers who have died natural causes and who were murdered by the world are now being raised. This would definitely cause fear in a person to see someone you personally killed or had killed, come to life again. In this verse we are reading that a voice from heaven is now telling the believers to come up hither and this worldwide resurrection will be witnessed by those in the world. From the way these two verses (Rev. 11:11-12) are worded there seems to be a short interval of time between the raising of these dead and their actual ascension into Heaven. When the believers who are alive begin to see these things take place, there will be given them a holy boldness to once again proclaim that judgment is now approaching very shortly. The Christians and the church who had lost their witness in the world have now once again regained their holy boldness in the Holy Spirit and now the world fears them and their message.

**(Rev 11:13 KJV)**

And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

“The same hour” indicates that the final judgment of mankind has begun simultaneously with the raising and rapture of the saints. Revelation 11:13 parallels Revelation 6:15-17 in the first vision of John. At this point of the final judgment, the one tenth represents the beginning of the end for the world. Seven thousand men were slain by the earthquake. Seven, as you recall, is the number of divine perfection which means that in this number we are seeing a number of people who were slain at the outset of the beginning of Judgment. However, this did not end the world at this moment because the rest of the world called “the remnant” were affrighted. The word “affrighted” carries with it the meaning in the Greek of “great fear or terror.” The world is now being struck with terror because the day of reckoning has come. As usual, whenever the world faces some crisis, they immediately become religious and believe that they can appease God to avert catastrophe. We all remember what happened on 9/11 and after that tragedy millions had gone to church but four years later, the churches are empty again and the malls and playgrounds of the world are filled on Sunday morning. However, this time there will be no appeasing because the end has come and nothing will change the plan of God.

**(Rev 11:14 KJV)**

The second woe is past; and, behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

Either John or that angel is now relating that the second woe is passed and the third woe will now come quickly because the end time events are unraveling at a rapid speed. “Woe” is used to express “grief, distress, or calamity.” The third woe spells final doom for the unbelievers of the world.

**(Rev 11:15 KJV)**

And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the *kingdoms* of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.

The scene now shifts back to heaven. The seventh angel has sounded his trumpet and with this woe the new heaven, the new earth, and the final judgment of man at the Great White Throne judgment will commence. Satan who was called the god of this world had all the kingdoms of this world under his influence but now his rulership has ended and the world has now become the kingdom of the Lord Jesus Christ. The fact that the verse tells us He will reign forever and ever tells us that this is speaking of the New Earth which will go on forever where the true believers will dwell. (2 Pet 3:13 KJV) Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. Every vestige of sin and Satan’s influence has now been totally expunged from the world and the universe.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 11:16-19

### **(Rev 11:16 KJV)**

And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God,

Now the twenty four elders which also had seats in heaven have now fallen down and worshipped God because the great day of spiritual reckoning has come for the believers. The martyrs in heaven who had cried out to the Lord that He should judge those who made them martyrs are now seeing that come to pass. No longer will the true believers ever face the evil oppressors as they will be judged and sent to Hell for eternity.

### **(Rev 11:17 KJV)**

Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

God is being lauded as having ultimate power as Almighty God. He is being lauded as the one who is, was, and is to come. God had always reigned and was in total control of the situation on earth where the true believers had faced persecution. God had a plan and that plan needed to be worked out but with that plan came the time that it would be completed so the Saints who have borne the brunt of satanic persecution would now rest eternally from that war. God is being thanked for the salvation plan He engineered and by bringing the true believers to heaven with Him for eternity. Now all the pains and the tribulations of the Saints on earth have now been turned into joy and rest and for this the Saints give God much thanks.

### **(Rev 11:18 KJV)**

And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

Now the scene shifts back to earth as John focuses in on the attitude of the nations when the Lord Jesus Christ returns. The nations of the world had become angry because the world was now readied for judgment. Even now unsaved man still holds anger at the Lord Jesus, right on the precipice of judgment.

(John 5:28-29 KJV) Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, {29} And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

John 5:28-29 teaches us that there is going to be one general resurrection when both the believers and the unbelievers are going to be raised on the last day. Two things are going to happen. First, we read in Rev. 11:18 that the day of wrath has come and the unsaved are going to stand for judgment and be cast into eternal hell. In Revelation 17 & 18 we will see why the world was angry because everything was going along fine and the world's economy was making many people rich, so when judgment day has come, their fine lives which they lived on earth has also come to an end and into judgment. Then secondly, we learn that the true believers, no matter what their status was, whether they were prophets, saints in the workplace, or rulers in palaces. These will be receiving the great reward. Many falsely believe that the believers are going to receive some type of physical rewards like crowns or something else but God had revealed to Abraham what the true reward of

the Christian is.

(Gen 15:1 KJV) After these things the word of the LORD came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward.

God Himself will be the true reward of all His children. Can physical blessings be more valuable to the Christian than having God Himself as our eternal reward? God will be blessing us and will be fellowshiping with us throughout all eternity. To be saved from the eternal torments of Hell would be reward enough but some are not satisfied with that. Then we are told that those who destroyed the earth will themselves be destroyed. When sin entered the human race, the entire creation was also affected by it. (Rom 8:22 KJV) For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. All sinners will face the judgment of God and must be cast into hell for their sins. (Rom 2:5 KJV) But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; The word “destroy” carries with it the meaning in the Greek of “corrupt.” (Gen 6:11-12 KJV) The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. {12} And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. The world was corrupted by sin in the days of Noah and behold it has always been corrupted by sin. (Mat 24:37-39 KJV) But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. {38} For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, {39} And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. The nations were angry with the coming of Christ because according to the Matthew passage, everything was going along fine, business as usual but now the day of their destruction is at hand.

#### **(Rev 11:19 KJV)**

And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

In this final scene of the second vision of John, we read that the ark of his testament or covenant was seen in heaven. This is not the ark of the covenant which was carried around the desert by Israel, instead the symbolism here is that of the abiding presence of God. When Israel had carried the ark through its wanderings it represented that God was with them through their entire wanderings. In the Revelation verse, John is mentioning the ark for those who will go through the tribulation of the New Testament period. It is mentioned as a reminder to the true believers that God is always present with His children, no matter what situation they are in. Then the second part of this verse which contains the lightnings, voices, thunderings, earthquake, and great hail signify that final judgment has now come to the earth. We have seen these descriptions of the judgments of God falling on the unbelievers but in this verse it takes on the new meaning of all of them signifying the final judgment on earth and unsaved man. Thus ends the second vision of John.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 12:1-6

#### **(Rev 12:1 KJV)**

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:

The next set of visions begins in this chapter and ends in chapter 14 with the reaping of

the earth, which is the removal of the believers from earth to Heaven, as we saw in Revelation 11:12. Chapters 12-22 will give us greater detail in the age old conflict between God and Satan and the Church and the world.

John now sees a great wonder in heaven. The word "wonder" may be understood as "sign." Many Catholic commentators have tried to convince the world that the woman in view is the Virgin Mary, however that would be wrong. What is in view here is the Old Testament church which existed inside of the nation of Israel. It was the believing remnant through which the Lord Jesus came. (Gal 4:26 KJV) But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. Paul speaks of the heavenly Jerusalem which is the mother of us all and by that he means that it is the true church which gives birth to Christians. As we go out and evangelize, those whom the Father has chosen will become saved and indwelt by the Holy Spirit. It was through this believing remnant in the nation of Israel that the Lord Jesus Christ came. The woman is clothed with the Sun and that would be the Sun of Righteousness who would be the Lord Jesus Christ Himself. (Mal 4:2 KJV) But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.

Then we are told that the moon was under her feet. The moon reflects the light of the sun and in this verse we are seeing the believing remnant of Israel, who waited for the Messiah. They had the reflected light of God as the true believer does. (John 1:8-9 KJV) He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light. {9} That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. The Lord Jesus Christ is the source of the light of the Gospel and the true believer is a reflection of that light to the world. The fact that she has the reflected light under her feet tells us that it is God who guides her footsteps and upholds her. (Psa 119:105 KJV) Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path. God's word is a lamp unto our feet as it illumines our paths upon the earth.

On her head was a crown with twelve stars. The number twelve gives us a meaning of fullness. The twelve stars represent the true believers in Israel and all those believers who will come afterward, up until the last day. So in this verse, we are told that all believers from the first one who was saved to the last one who will be saved before the Lord returns.

#### **(Rev 12:2 KJV)**

And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

The child which the believing remnant of Israel was going to bring forth was the Lord Jesus Christ. (Isa 26:17 KJV) Like as a woman with child, that draweth near the time of her delivery, is in pain, and crieth out in her pangs; so have we been in thy sight, O LORD. Isaiah teaches the same principle that the Lord Jesus Christ came at a time thousands of years after the first announcement in Genesis 3:15 and in the time period after the nation of Israel was formed, that nation faced many enemies who had tried to extinguish her. If Satan could annihilate the ancient nation of Israel, then it would have been possible to annihilate the divine line which was to bring forth the Lord Jesus Christ. Israel had faced many enemies which was to them as a woman in labor pains. The pains are excruciating and labor being very painful may seem to the woman that they may never come to an end. The believing remnant of Israel was also in much pain to bring forth the Messiah at the appointed time.

#### **(Rev 12:3 KJV)**

And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

John now sees another sign in heaven but this time he sees a red dragon. The color of the dragon possibly represents the fact that Satan is a murderer and his kingdom is drenched in the blood of the martyrs. (Rev 18:24 KJV) And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth. Revelation 18 speaks of the universality of the kingdom of Satan and we see in this verse that the seven heads with crowns and the ten horns signifies that it engulfs the entire earth.

(Dan 7:7 KJV) After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.

Daniel had seen them in his visions of Satan as ruler of all the evil kingdoms which have been constantly persecuting the eternal church of the Lord Jesus Christ. The seven crowns tells us that Satan has been given authority to wage that war against the church which will culminate in Armageddon which is the final battle between God and Satan. The ten horns tell us that his kingdom is complete engulfing the whole world as ten is the number of completeness. Daniel also saw this in his vision.

(Dan 7:24 KJV) And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings.

Ten kings tells us that there is going to be a completeness to the kingdom of Satan which is conjoined by the ten kings. These ten kings represent all the evil kingdoms of the world which oppose Christ and Christianity. Horns in Scripture represent authority or power. Satan's power is not of himself but has been given to him by God for an established purpose.

#### **(Rev 12:4 KJV)**

And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.

(Dan 8:10 KJV) And it waxed great, even to the host of heaven; and it cast down some of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them.

In Rev. 12:4, we are seeing that the wrath of Satan is so great concerning the coming Messiah, that he actually drew one third of the stars and cast them to the earth. This could be speaking of the time when Satan first rebelled against God and took many of the angels with him in that rebellion. However, while that may seem like a plausible interpretation, rather, this verse is showing us that Satan does have enormous power and that his war against Christ is no small skirmish but a full fledged war. This is what we see in that he can draw the stars of heaven. The word "drew" carries with it the meaning of "haul or drag." This word is also in the present tense which means that the above action of Satan would not be a one time event. This would indicate that this war is a continuous war and he will use all his power to try and win.

Then we are told that the dragon stood by the woman to devour the child as soon as he was born. The word "devour" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "consume or destroy." Satan used his earthly evil kingdoms to try and kill Christ. Herod tried to kill him by having all the babies killed. Satan tried to destroy Christ by tempting Him and to try and get Him to bow down and worship him. If you look at the history of ancient Israel, Satan tried to destroy them by getting them into idolatrous alliances and having their enemies like the Moabites and Philistines attempt to annihilate them. God sent prophets to the

nation of Israel, not only to bring them unto repentance but also to protect the divine line of the Lord Jesus Christ.

**(Rev 12:5 KJV)**

And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

In this verse we have a capsulated view of the life of Christ. John begins with His birth in Bethlehem and we are told that eventually He is going to rule all the nations of this world after Satan and all the evil is finally judged. We saw this back in Revelation 11:15. In Psalm 2, we read that the Lord Jesus Christ was to receive the heathen (the nations of the world) as His inheritance and he shall break the evil kingdoms with a rod of iron. We have been seeing that judgments have been going out throughout the world against those heathen nations who have opposed the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ.

(Psa 2:8-9 KJV) Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. {9} Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

Then John goes on to give us His ascension into Heaven and His rightful ascent to His throne and His Father's throne, which we have seen in the book of Revelation.

**(Rev 12:6 KJV)**

And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

The woman, who is the body of believers, after bringing forth the Lord Jesus Christ now flees into the wilderness. The wilderness is not some barren desert but it is into the entire world as the church was to go worldwide. (John 14:2 KJV) In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross, the place He prepared for us was Heaven.

(1 Pet 1:3-4 KJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, {4} To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,

However, the church had to remain on earth until the last day because it was commissioned to evangelize the world and bring home all the Elect of God. God is not promising that there will be physical protection of the Elect because down through history the church has faced major persecution which resulted in millions of martyrs. The place which is prepared for us where God feeds us goes back to the beginning of Revelation 11, when John was told to measure the temple and all that worship therein. God was stating that He would protect His church from spiritual deceptions which would come at the Christians from every angle. This feeding is for the entire New Testament period as we are once again given the twelve hundred and sixty days or forty two months. The feeding is also spiritual truth so no true Christian will ever accept a false gospel and the one who brings the believer this truth is God Himself in the third person of the Trinity, the Holy Spirit.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 12:7-12

### **(Rev 12:7 KJV)**

And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels,

When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross and rose the third day, the final war between God and Satan was set in motion. On earth, the believers began to spread the word of God until we get into our present time where the whole world now has the Gospel. It started out in Jerusalem, then went to Africa, and then to Europe, and fanned out to all the rest of the countries of the world until they all have a Gospel witness in them. Satan was unable to stop the spread of Christianity upon the earth because he was bound at the cross. The war in heaven was a response to the events on earth that the Gospel was now being sent forth and Satan had tried to do everything he could to stop it both on earth and in heaven.

### **(Rev 12:8 KJV)**

And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven.

The result of the heavenly war is that Satan and his followers lost and were expelled from heaven. This would give us the reason why Satan has so much hatred toward the church. Satan once had an exalted position in heaven but now he has lost it and he can no more reenter heaven.

### **(Rev 12:9 KJV)**

And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

Here we have a direct identification of who the dragon is. Satan has now lost all entrances to heaven and he has been cast to the earth where we are told that he deceives the whole earth. This would be spiritual deception where Satan would keep those in false religions under spiritual bondage. However, he does not have the authority to prevent anyone from becoming saved. Those whom God has chosen will become saved at their appointed time and all the deceptions that Satan can muster will not affect that timing. (Mat 24:24 KJV) For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. The Elect of God can never be so deceived that the light of the truth of the Gospel cannot penetrate it and save them.

### **(Rev 12:10 KJV)**

And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

After the war where Satan tried to conquer heaven with his demons, his expulsion from heaven is now being lauded with a great voice. It is not clear if this voice is one person or if it is one uniform voice of all the inhabitants of heaven. It is probably the latter but is the unified voice of all the Christians in heaven. If you notice that Satan is called the accuser of the brethren. We do not find in Scripture where Satan brings accusations against angels. Satan's hatred is for the redeemed body of Christ, which he is not allowed to touch spiritually.

(Job 2:4-5 KJV) And Satan answered the LORD, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath



will he give for his life. {5} But put forth thine hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will curse thee to thy face.

(Zec 3:1 KJV) And he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him.

Satan has always mounted a campaign of false accusations against the brethren, but now in heaven he has been expelled because of the blood of Christ washing the believers pure, there is nothing which Satan can accuse the believers of. Christ completely cleansed His children and God looks at them as if they had never sinned.

(Rom 8:33-34 KJV) Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. {34} Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

#### **(Rev 12:11 KJV)**

And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

Here is the reason for the lauding and shouting in heaven. As humans we can never defeat the devil because of the strength and cunning he possesses but we are victors through the cross of Christ. It is only by being washed in the blood of the Lamb whereby we may obtain the spiritual victory over Satan. Satan was and is also overcome by the faithful witness of the brethren who continue to preach the true Gospel and they do it without fear of losing their physical lives. (Mat 10:39 KJV) He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. When a Christian is committed to the propagation of the true Gospel, are finding their life in Christ and are losing their life toward the world. They are detaching themselves from the world by remaining as faithful witnesses. The faithful witnesses who lose their life on earth by means of dedicating it totally for the service of the Lord in truth are in essence finding their life. It must be remembered that the true life that Christians will have is not here on earth but in Heaven. We read the lives of many who refused to compromise the true Gospel for a few more years here on earth. We read of Christians who were tortured and murdered by Rome, and then the Roman Catholic Church became Satan's killing machine in the middle ages and in these latter days false gospels and false versions are attempting to neutralize the sting of the Gospel.

#### **(Rev 12:12 KJV)**

Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

We see here that because of Satan's expulsion from heaven that those in Heaven can now rejoice because evil has been expelled forever. Then we are seeing that a woe, which is grief or distress, will come upon the inhabitants of the earth because now the spiritual war is taking place on earth. We saw in verse 4, the great strength that Satan has and now that evilness is now being felt on the earth. Satan is also aware that his time is limited. This little time would probably be from the time of his expulsion until the final judgment when he will be cast into the lake of fire. Since we are not specifically told when this expulsion took place, there seems to be an imminence to the return of the Lord. This means that since only the Father knows the day and hour of the Lord's return, Satan will attempt to bring as much havoc upon the church as he possibly can in the short time that he has. An application here also can be made to the following verse. (Mark 13:20 KJV) And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake,

whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days. Satan has caused many Christians to be killed through false religions and evil governments and if he was allowed to go for thousands of years, then what would happen is that he could mount a campaign which would physically rid the earth of every Christian. This is why the Lord has shortened those days so there would still be many Elect left on earth when he returned.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 12:13-17

##### **(Rev 12:13 KJV)**

And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.

Here is the focus of Satan's wrath and that is the church of Christ. Satan will persecute the true believer throughout the end times but because he is limited he will not be able to spiritually deceive them. The true body of believers is where the divine line lead to the birth of the Lord Jesus Christ. This is why in Romans 9:6, Paul had stated that not all Israel was of Israel. (Rom 9:6 KJV) Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: Although the Lord Jesus Christ came through the physical nation of Israel, it was through the spiritual Israel that the divine line came. This is why there must be a differentiation made between the physical Israel and the spiritual Israel which is the redeemed body of believers.

##### **(Rev 12:14 KJV)**

And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

(Deu 32:9-12 KJV) For the LORD'S portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance. {10} He found him in a desert land, and in the waste howling wilderness; he led him about, he instructed him, he kept him as the apple of his eye. {11} As an eagle stirreth up her nest, fluttereth over her young, spreadeth abroad her wings, taketh them, beareth them on her wings: {12} So the LORD alone did lead him, and there was no strange god with him.

Just as God protected Jacob in the wilderness as an eagle bears their young on their wings, so God will be as a great eagle protecting the church from the evil onslaughts of Satan. Again, the wilderness will be the church going into all the world and the time, times, and half a time represents the 1,260 days which is the New Testament period. Satan will be unable to spiritually kill or deceive the true church of God because they will be under His protection. This does not mean that there will not be physical martyrs but these martyrs will hold the true testimony right to the end, which means that Satan could not defeat them. (James 4:7 KJV) Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. If Satan cannot defeat you because you hold tenaciously to the true Gospel, he will find someone that he can deceive and he will be able to find billions who are steeped in false religion.

**(Rev 12:15 KJV)**

And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

Satan continues to persecute the church and here he is shown as spewing out of his mouth a great flood so that the church will be carried away by that flood or overwhelmed by it. This imagery of a great flood would refer to the fact that sometimes water or flood will represent a great evil or testing.

(Isa 43:2 KJV) When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

In Isaiah 43:2, we read that God will be with those who go through the waters and the waters would represent the hard times that Christians will go through. It also states that the rivers will not over flow us or better, drown us. In Revelation 12:15, the great flood of persecution which spews from Satan will not be able to drown the church or rather to deceive them. Satan will come against the church with everything he has and that will be like a great flood of evil but as we have already read in many places that God will spiritually protect His children as they trek through the wilderness of this world.

**(Rev 12:16 KJV)**

And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

(Exo 15:12 KJV) Thou stretchedst out thy right hand, the earth swallowed them.

When Korah rebelled against Moses, God had judged that rebellion by allowing the earth to swallow them up as a result of their actions. When Satan will spew his flood of hatred toward the church, the earth, in some manner will also aid them as Satan's hatred will be swallowed up by the earth. This allusion is a figure showing that God will protect the church during the sojourn on earth. As God protected Moses from the rebellion of Korah, God will protect the church from the ongoing rebellion of Satan.

**(Rev 12:17 KJV)**

And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

Now that Satan has failed to conquer the eternal church of Christ, his next plan in the war against Christ is to mount a campaign against all the Christians he can. The remnant of the seed of the woman will be all the Christians who become saved till the last day. Those who are truly saved are those who keep the commandments. The way we keep the commandments is through the sacrifice of Christ because He satisfied all the righteous demands of God's Holy Law and that satisfaction was imputed to every true believer. Satan will continue to attack and persecute Christians until he is finally tossed into the lake of fire on the last day.

[Back](#)

**(Rev 13:1 KJV)**

And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.

In Revelation 12:3 we saw the scene in heaven of this very same beast.

(Rev 12:3 KJV) And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

In Revelation 12:3, we read that there were seven crowns on the seven heads but here in 13:1, we are seeing that the crowns are upon his horns. Horns in Scripture represent power. The fact that there are crowns upon the horns tells us that this beast has been given authority of a king and accompanying power to accomplish his evil tasks.

(Dan 7:7 KJV) After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.

Now in 13:1, the beast is on earth because we see him coming out of the sea. This is not speaking of a sea like a physical ocean but is speaking of the nations of the world.

(Isa 17:12-13 KJV) Woe to the multitude of many people, which make a noise like the noise of the seas; and to the rushing of nations, that make a rushing like the rushing of mighty waters! {13} The nations shall rush like the rushing of many waters: but God shall rebuke them, and they shall flee far off, and shall be chased as the chaff of the mountains before the wind, and like a rolling thing before the whirlwind.

Isaiah speaks of the multitude of peoples and nations like the sea and the sound of mighty waters. In fact, even the Lord stated in His Olivet Discourse that the nations are like the restless seas. (Luke 21:25 KJV) And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; The sea and the waves are roaring in our day because Satan has been cast down and he is putting the nations of the world in perplexity. The word “perplexity” carries with it meaning of “distress, difficulty, and consternation.” Can anyone who watches a news broadcast say that this world is in anything beside perplexity?

This beast in 13:1 is not Satan but it is the entire kingdom of Satan who has much power to accomplish his dastardly deeds. Satan is not omnipresent but has a large army of demons to help him in his attack upon the church on earth. Since Satan has been cast down to earth, the spiritual war now rages on the earth and that is why we see many of his demons coming out of the world system. These demons also have on their heads the name of blasphemy. We are not told here what the name is but you can be assured that whatever it is, it will be blasphemy against God, Christ, and the redeemed church. (Mark 7:21-22 KJV) For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, {22} Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: The unsaved heart of man contains blasphemy as well as other heinous sins. The word “blasphemy” carries with it in the Greek the meaning of “evil speaking, slander, and reviling.” How many millions of times has the body of Christ been reviled by the unsaved world?

**(Rev 13:2 KJV)**

And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

John now gives a description of this beast. He states that it was like unto a leopard. The leopard is a very strong cat which is very adept at climbing which means it can go through the mountains very quickly and without much hindrance. Then next he states that his feet were like that of a bear. When one looks at bear's foot, the one thing which sticks out is their vicious claws. Bears can claw a victim to death because the bear is also a very strong animal. Then we are told his mouth was like that of a lion. When a lion roars, it lets out a very intimidating sound which causes fear in the hearts of those who hear him. So with the description John is giving, we can see that this particular demon has the swiftness of a leopard, the strength and ferociousness of the bear's claws and the roar of the lion which is why he will be spewing out blasphemies against God. Satan had lost his authority to accuse the brethren and was cast out of heaven but here we see that he still has the power to empower the demons who are helping wage war on the church on earth. This beast also has a seat which means that he now has an established authority but it will only be temporary.

### **(Rev 13:3 KJV)**

And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

Here we are told that one of the seven heads of this beast was wounded to death, and according to Rev. 13:14, the wound was caused by a sword. It also must be noted here that the beast, not the head recovered.

(Isa 27:1 KJV) In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea.

The Isaiah verse is fitting here because it teaches us that God is going to raise the sword that is going to kill the dragon which is in the sea. Here in Revelation 13, we are seeing that the beast has come out of the sea. Now when we look at one head being wounded to death but the beast still lives, we can liken that to times when the kingdom of Satan is assaulted in various areas with the Gospel. We all remember the Reformation in 1517 when the kingdom of Satan was assaulted by the truth of the Gospel going forth throughout Europe. However, the Reformation did not put an end to the kingdom of Satan because that will be done on the last day when his kingdom will be completely destroyed. Until then, the Gospel continues to plunder the kingdom here and there and gives a partial wound to the kingdom. Whenever someone becomes saved, they are in essence dead to the kingdom of Satan which means that his kingdom received another partial death blow. (Mark 3:27 KJV) No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house. Satan had been bound at the cross and was unable to stop any of God's Elect from becoming saved. Then we are told that all the world had wondered after the beast. The word "wondered" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "admire or be amazed." The fact that the world system has not yet had a completely fatal wound means that the unsaved of the world still adhere to it. Millions still believe in evolution even though many scientists are turning away from it and going to creationism. This still does not stop those who are tied to this world because they refuse to believe in God. The truth of the Gospel is proclaimed every day around the world yet there are still a billion people tied to Rome and a billion tied to Islam. Some may become saved out of these systems, but that does not stop them from going on with the other adherents. This is what is meant by the world wondering or admiring their system.

**(Rev 13:4 KJV)**

And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

Now we are told that those in the world are worshipping Satan through the world system. When one places man and his worldly governments on the throne of their hearts, they are in essence worshipping Satan and his beast. The mindset is that who can challenge the authority of the world system with all its education and systems. Then there are the religious systems of the world. When Martin Luther challenged the Roman Catholic establishment in 1517, I am sure there were many who asked who can challenge it and win because it was the ruling power for about one thousand years already. We look at large countries like China and say who can challenge that large country to allow us to bring the true Gospel? So when we look at the beast, it represents the belief that it is invincible and cannot be challenged and overcome.

**(Rev 13:5 KJV)**

And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.

Daniel also saw that this beast would speak blasphemies against God.

(Dan 7:25 KJV) And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

The beast is going to do the bidding of Satan while here on earth for the time period of the New Testament. The blasphemies which he will speak will be against God. Today we have attacks on God from every corner of society. In fact, November 25, 2005, the University of Kansas chose to place a course called creation and intelligent design under the category of mythology. This is relegating God to that of a myth. If this is not speaking great things and blasphemies against God then nothing is. This is a perfect example of how the beast is doing the bidding of Satan. It is taking God and blaspheming Him by making Him a myth and this same university, and all the other secular ones, will exalt evolution. These attacks on God and the church are being allowed as God readies Satan's kingdom for judgment. Throughout the entire New Testament period attacks on God, Christ, and the church have been steady. Wherever the true Gospel is or was being preached, that is where the beast mounts or mounted a campaign to quash it.

**(Rev 13:6 KJV)**

And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

The beast opens his mouth and blasphemes the name of God. He will blaspheme God as Creator, as Supreme Being of the entire universe, he will blaspheme God's reputation, he will blaspheme God's salvation plan by getting people to believe you must do works to get to heaven, He will blaspheme God's name in language through swear words and jokes, etc. The beast will blaspheme God's name in any manner and on any subject he can in hopes to discredit Him and getting people to place their faith in the beast system.

The tabernacle was the place where God dwelt with Israel on their wilderness sojourn. The tabernacle in view here is identified with that of Revelation 11:1-2. The temple or tabernacle of God is both in heaven and on earth as God dwells in His people on earth. (2 Pet 1:13-14 KJV) Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting

you in remembrance; {14} Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath showed me. The human body of the believers where God dwells is called the tabernacle. The tabernacle was a dwelling place in Israel and in the body of believers, God dwells within them in the person of the Holy Spirit. When a believer physically dies, they are putting off their tabernacle as Peter states in 2 Peter 1:13-14.

Then the beast blasphemes against those who are in heaven. This would include blasphemy against God, the Lord Jesus Christ, the Holy Spirit, angels, and of course the redeemed Saints. Satan's kingdom comes against all aspects of the Kingdom of God. There is nothing that Satan will not attack in his effort to rule the universe and especially man.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 13:7-12

##### **(Rev 13:7 KJV)**

And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

Here the beast has been given consent to make war with the Saints. It must always be noted that when we read "and it was given," this means that the beast and the dragon are both under the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ and it is God's plan for the kingdom of Satan to make war against the Saints.

(Dan 7:21 KJV) I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;

(Luke 21:20 KJV) And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

These two verses give us insight as to the overcoming of the saints being prophesied. Daniel tells us that Satan will make war against the Saints and will prevail. Luke gives us this same prophecy in a different way. He speaks of armies coming against Jerusalem which is akin to the armies of Satan attacking the body of believers. We saw the overcoming of the Saints in Revelation 11:7 when the true Gospel will no longer be preached to the world. It will be a momentary victory for the forces of darkness. This victory will not be just a limited one but as we read in the verse that the beast has power (authority) over the entire world. This means that satanic deception by means of secular and religious means will blanket the whole world and there will be no place for the true Gospel. This will make it look like the body of Christ has been defeated.

##### **(Rev 13:8 KJV)**

And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

Here is a very important verse which must always be taken into consideration when speaking of God's salvation plan. The beast which will be given power by Satan will be worshipped by the whole world except those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of Life. This means that God had already named those He was going to save before the

foundation of the world. Those who believe in free will normally avoid the core truth of this verse. If God already named who He was going to save, then no one outside that book can ever become saved. This is called Limited Atonement and is hated by all those who teach the free will of man in the area of salvation. It is only the named body of believers who will not bow down to the beast. This verse is also very illuminating in the area of salvation. The question always arises concerning, was their grace in the Old Testament? The answer is a resounding yes, because in principle, Christ was slain before the foundation of the world. This would mean, that along with whom God named as heirs of salvation in the New Testament after the physical crucifixion of Christ, that those in the Old Testament would become saved the same way by means of Christ being slain before the foundation of the world. This is why Abraham could have faith because he was a Christian saved by the pre-creation crucifixion of Christ, although in principle, was to become a physical reality in time. No person could ever become saved by any type of works and that is why those in the Old Testament such as David, Moses, Solomon, and others were saved because they were saved by the grace of God through the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ. That is how we have the Elect line going through Israel up to the birth of the Lord Jesus Christ. Paul said in Romans 9:6, that not all of Israel was of Israel and as we previously saw, that meant two lines coming through the whole Old Testament. There was the Elect line which was those who were saved and the secular line, those who were not saved.

**(Rev 13:9 KJV)**

If any man have an ear, let him hear.

Here the Lord Jesus is stating that those who have spiritual ears can hear what is being taught. It is important to know and understand that Revelation is an Apocalyptic book which must be viewed spiritually because if one tries to make a literal application, except in a few places, of Revelation, they will get into hermeneutical trouble and an erroneous interpretation will happen. This will also happen by those who pull verses out of the context of the visions and try to fit them into some type of belief system. (2 Pet 1:20 KJV) Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. 2 Peter 1:20 teaches us that the Scriptures must harmonize with each other. The term "private interpretation" deals with the sad practice of isolating verses from their context to be hammered into a mold of someone's personal belief system or theology.

**(Rev 13:10 KJV)**

He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

Here is a two-fold warning against both the unbelievers who worship the beast and the true believers who do not. The first warning is that those who will lead others into captivity will themselves be subject to captivity and those who kill with the sword will themselves be subject to the sword. This is basically the law of sowing and reaping and applies to the unbeliever as well as the believer. When Christians are led into captivity it is speaking of another form of persecution as we see going on today. Many countries under the authority of the powerful Sodomite lobbies are passing hate crime legislation which is aimed right at the preaching of God's word. If someone preaches that sodomy is sin, that person may be subject to prison and will go into captivity. In many countries around the world laws are being passed to prohibit the preaching of the Bible. One just needs to look at Islamic countries and open amoral countries who prohibit the teaching of the Bible before they prohibit open sexual conduct.

Then there are going to be those who will physically kill Christians to shut down their ministries. Recently in North Korea, (November 2005), four Christians were placed under



a bulldozer alive and were murdered. The murder of Christians all over this world is increasing at an alarming rate as there were more Christian martyrs in the twentieth century than there were in all preceding centuries. Here God tells us that those who physically kill His children will also face the sword and that is the worst one of all because it will be the second sword of God which will be the second death in the lake of fire. No one will get away with hurting God's children.

Now throughout the first and second visions of John we saw that that the church is going to undergo persecution throughout the entire New Testament period and this persecution will become more rampant as we approach the last day because the true Gospel has been prophesied that it will be temporarily overcome very close to the Lord's return. This is why God is pointing out that the Saints must have patience and faith during these times of persecution. It is also interesting to note that millions of Christians believe in a pre-tribulation rapture when here we find that the church on earth is alive but persecuted. Too many Christians are unprepared for persecution and are waiting for their escapist theology to commence. This will not happen until the last day as all the believers will still be here on earth or else why would God call for the faith and patience of the believers.

**(Rev 13:11 KJV)**

And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

The first beast that John saw had arisen out of the sea but now he is seeing a second beast rise out of the earth. Now this is an interesting beast because the description is not one of ferocity but of gentleness which is represented by the lamb. Now this lamb has only two horns. Two would show us an imitation of the two witnesses which would be the body of believers. The first beast gave us a secular world system which is void of God and now this beast will be gentle as a lamb but will still have the authority of Satan to operate. It will put on the airs of gentleness but will speak in falsehoods. We see a simple picture of this when Isaac spoke to Jacob concerning the blessing he stole from Esau.

(Gen 27:22 KJV) And Jacob went near unto Isaac his father; and he felt him, and said, The voice is Jacob's voice, but the hands are the hands of Esau.

Isaac's eyesight was dim which is a picture of the spiritual sight of the world, and he did not recognize Jacob. Instead he just said the voice was Jacob's but the hands are of Esau. Esau was an unbeliever, so when we look at this scenario we can liken it to the second beast which had the appearance of a lamb but spoke words of the devil. We have the sweet words of religion but the deception of Satan in the second beast.

(Rev 2:9 KJV) I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

In Revelation 2:9 and 3:9 the "synagogue of Satan" is mentioned. This would also refer to those who say they are Jews but are not. What is in view are those who claim to be real Christians but are not. He is speaking of Spiritual Israel which is the body of believers. So it is a possibility that the second beast which arises out of the earth may be the false prophet which attempts to keep the people of the world in religious darkness or bondage. Since the Lord Jesus Christ is called a Lamb, this lamb would no doubt be a fake who comes in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ but brings a false gospel and false religions. (Mat 24:5 KJV) For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

One of the characteristics of the final days is that there is going to rise many who will come in the name of Christ and teach false gospels and there will be many who will proclaim that Christ is God and will append false teachings instead of truth. For example, the charismatic movement proclaims Jesus as Lord but then focuses mainly on prosperity and health. The teaching that Christ is God may be the lure and then comes the false teachings which may sound very good.

**(Rev 13:12 KJV)**

And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

Now here we have the second beast which possesses all the power of the first beast but the second beast, which is the false prophet, now begins to get the unsaved to align themselves with the first beast which runs the world system. In today's religious world, many of the religions of the world are aligned with secular governments and do their bidding for them. The Roman Catholic church has many of its adherents involved in government. During the middle ages when they were murdering the true Christians, they had the local authorities to do the burning of the martyrs. In Israel today, Judaism is tied to the government of Israel and Judaism is a hostile religion to the Lord Jesus Christ. The religion of Islam is also tied to the governments of many countries as they use Islamic law to run their countries. As we saw that the deadly wound of one of the heads of the first beast was healed and that means that the world system also took a hit but it was not destroyed. The second beast tries to meld the religious world and the secular world. With the true Gospel being expunged from the world, we can see today how the secular churches have begun to align themselves with their governments. Instead of opposing evil governments, they counsel their people to obey them. When a human government opposes God's laws, then God's laws must be obeyed but this is not what is being preached today. We see in the political arena that human government is being treated as divine as so many people look to the government to take care of them. I wish they would realize that government is not the solution but the cause of the problems. He who has ears to hear!

[Back](#)

Revelation 13:13-18

**(Rev 13:13 KJV)**

And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men,

Here is the ministry of the false prophet. In the Scriptures we read that God allowed His true prophets to perform miracles. In this verse we are given the example of Elijah calling down fire from heaven in the sight of all Israel.

(1 Ki 18:37-38 KJV) Hear me, O LORD, hear me, that this people may know that thou art the LORD God, and that thou hast turned their heart back again. {38} Then the fire of the LORD fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench.

The false prophet will enable his earthly false human prophets to have the same type of

ministry. The false prophet will empower his people to perform false miracles and great signs. The Lord Jesus had warned that this would take place.

(Mat 24:24 KJV) For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

A false prophet could never survive on words alone because they have to show some type of miracles to capture the hearts of their followers. Deception always puts on a good show. In India, a man named Sai Baba had over twenty million followers because he was able to do false miracles in front of them. These types of deception are not only on the outside of the church but also on the inside. Many charismatic preachers claim they have raised the dead and have healed people from crippling diseases so they can walk again. All these types of signs and wonders keeps people in captivity to the leader of their church or to some evangelist on the outside who claims great healing or miraculous powers. Whenever we hear or see any signs or wonders, be warned that it is the second beast at work.

### **(Rev 13:14 KJV)**

And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

The false prophet will be deceiving all the unbelievers on earth which are designated as "them that dwell on the earth." The real prophets of God received their power and instruction from the Lord Himself. The false prophet receives his power from the first beast and from Satan. The reason that we see this false prophet receiving his orders in the same way that the real prophets received their orders should be a wake up call to the Christian. Satan is imitating the true Gospel in the last days.

(2 Cor 11:13-15 KJV) For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. {14} And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. {15} Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

Satan is portrayed as some invincible being in Hollywood movies such as the Omen when he wreaks havoc on the world and the other horror movies which portray Satan as a vicious killer are not seeing him as he is coming today. 2 Corinthians 11:13-15 shows us a great parallel to what we are studying in Revelation right now. Satan is empowering his false prophet to imitate the true Gospel, in fact, his false gospel will look so good that many will take it as the truth. Only those who are truly saved will know the differences and many of them will be very subtle.

Man has always been easily seduced into making images. In fact, before the end of the first century, the cities in which the seven letters of Revelation 2-3 were sent were all sold out to Caesar as their deity. No wonder the Lord said He knew where Satan's seat was (Rev. 2:13). The word image in the Greek is "eikona" which carries with it the meaning of "likeness or appearance." We get the word "icon" from it. The image of the beast is not just a large statue of some kind or some kind of religious relic. Since this beast deceives the dwellers of the earth, it is not just found in one part of the world. In China the image could be Buddha or even the communist government. In India it could be Krishna or Vishnu. In Roman Catholicism it could be Mary. The principle in understanding the image of the beast is to know that the first and second beast are primarily bringing deception. So whatever is deceiving the people of the earth, is the image of the deceiving beast. Now we know that billions are being deceived outside the church but what about inside the

church? Raising the dead, healing sickness, prosperity, works, tongues, miracles, save the whales and the environment, Christian rock bands, systems like Purpose Driven Life built on New Age principles, acceptance of Sodomite clergy, modern bible versions which attack cardinal doctrines of the faith, these and many other things are taking over the church and are devouring congregation by congregation. What was once mighty congregations and denominations have become nothing more than religious collection agencies. The true Gospel has been expunged from many churches because they have served the image of the beast of the world system. One need not look hard to find the image of the beast, just listen to a talk show for few minutes.

**(Rev 13:15 KJV)**

And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.

Here is the key to the success of the image of the beast. It is not just a dumb idol sitting in some hut in some remote place. The image speaks on college campuses when they proclaim atheism and evolution. The image speaks when God is expunged from the classroom. The image speaks when it becomes illegal to place a nativity scene on public grounds. The beast speaks when the name of Jesus Christ may be used as a swear word but not reverently in the work place. The beast speaks when TV teaches that you can drink, smoke, and fornicate without any repercussions. The beast speaks when your unsaved minister teaches that good works will get you to heaven. Now we see that the true Christian would never accept any of these but our verse teaches us that those who do not worship the image of the beast will be killed. This will definitely refer to physical martyrs as we have seen this throughout the whole New Testament period but in modern countries when Christians oppose these things, they may not be killed physically but their testimony and witness will be killed. They may be fired from work, tossed out of their church, expelled from school and these things would kill their witness in these places simply because they are no longer there. Then those unbelievers who are left in these situations will exude the merry spirit we saw in Revelation 11:10 because the Christians are no longer there to kill their fun.

**(Rev 13:16 KJV)**

And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

Now the beast causes all his people to have a mark and if you will notice the locations of this mark on the body are significant. First of all we see this mark on the right hand. (Psa 17:7 KJV) Show thy marvellous lovingkindness, O thou that savest by thy right hand them which put their trust in thee from those that rise up against them. In Psalm 17:7, we see that the right hand is associated with salvation by the power of the Lord. As we saw before that the beast will imitate the things which the Lord does. The mark on the right hand is associated with those who work deceitfully bringing a false salvation. The right hand will also be associated with those who do works for the beast, in other words, their life's work will be in concert with the deceit of the beast. They will do the works that deceive others. Then the mark in their foreheads shows that their mind is given over to the work of the beast. So in this particular passage, we see that those who invent systems and then implement them in the world are those with the mark on the hands (works) and the mind (evil thoughts). (1 Tim 6:5 KJV) Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself. The mind is Satan's playground and he is very active with his people. It does not matter what a person's social status is, Satan will deceive all his people. Now some people want to make this out to be some type of physical mark like a bar code but this is not what it is in view. Sensationalizing verses only

clouds the real meaning but of course, sells books.

**(Rev 13:17 KJV)**

And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

To be accepted by the world system, a person must be one of those who has the mark. Only Satan's people will have the mark of the beast and because Christians do not have this mark, instead they have the mark of God in their foreheads (Revelation 14:1). This means that Christians will be outcasts in the world because they hold the testimony of the Lord Jesus Christ. Their writings, their sayings, their teachings will all be rejected by the world system because they are in the world but not of the world. If Christians wrote on the same level as those of the unsaved, then they could buy and sell within the kingdom of Satan but, because they are the redeemed of God, they have nothing to buy or sell in the kingdom of Satan. Paul summed it greatly in the following verse. (Gal 6:14 KJV) But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. The world holds no desire for the Christian and the Christian holds no desire for the world and that is why they cannot buy and sell in Satan's Kingdom. It is interesting to note that modern bible versions are welcomed in the kingdom of Satan and are sold in that kingdom of the unsaved.

(Prov 23:23 KJV) Buy the truth, and sell it not; also wisdom, and instruction, and understanding.

(Isa 55:1 KJV) Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price.

(Rev 3:18 KJV) I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

These three verses speak of buying the truth, even if you have no money. Having no money means a person is very poor which is representative of being spiritually poor. What is in view here is that God is speaking of salvation which is only available from Him and it costs nothing for us, which means no works, but all of grace through the Lord Jesus Christ. Satan's kingdom does not allow the Christian to do business but these three verses are teaching us that those Elect still in the kingdom of Satan may come to the Lord at their appointed times and buy that gold which is salvation.

**(Rev 13:18 KJV)**

Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

Now this verse has been so ruined by prophecy pundits and Hollywood. The number of the beast being 666 is the number of man. It is the number which God gives to those who are following the beast. This is the symbolic number which the unbeliever has upon them. It is not going to be a physical mark. Millions are not going to be walking around with 666 on their heads. In the Greek the word is “ανθρωπου\_ (anthropou). It is in the genitive case also known as the possessive case. When this was translated, the Pope was touted as being the Antichrist and this may be the reason the translators used the term “a man.”

The place where “anthropou” is found in one major clause found in many verses with the term Son of man. “Of man” would be the proper usage for a genitive case noun.

(Mat 9:6 KJV) But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then

saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

(John 5:27 KJV) And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.

The Apostle Paul states that the Gospel he received was not “of man.”

(Gal 1:12 KJV) For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

The indirect object “a” is used elsewhere in the New Testament when “anthropou” is used. Here are some examples:

(Mat 12:43 KJV) When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

(Mark 7:15 KJV) There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

(Acts 12:22 KJV) And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.

(1 Cor 7:1 KJV) Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

(Gal 3:15 KJV) Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.

(Rev 21:17 KJV) And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

What these six verses have in common is that they are all speaking of a generic individual man in their contexts but there is no specific man in mind. Revelation 13:18 is speaking, in context, of the entire unsaved human race. The verse states “and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.” The word “his” should be translated as “its” because it is a personal pronoun but it is not masculine, it is in the “neuter” gender. So Revelation 13:18 should be speaking of the number of man being 666. The word “anthropou” is derived from “anthropos” which is the generic term for mankind. If a specific male was in view then the word should have been “ανηρ\_ (aner) which would be translated as an individual male, husband, man, or bridegroom. Since the context of Revelation 13:18 is that of the unsaved in general, then it would follow properly that the term should be \_man\_ and not \_a man.\_

[Back](#)

## Revelation 14:1-7

**(Rev 14:1 KJV)**

And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and

four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

Throughout the Bible, especially in the Old Testament, God will pronounce a judgment upon the nation of Israel or Judah, then we will find in close proximity the great blessings which God promises to the Elect line in those countries. We have the same situation here. Right on the heels of John seeing the numbering of the followers of the beast, God intervenes and shows John another great aspect of his vision. He sees the Lord Jesus Christ, the Lamb, standing on Mount Zion. Mount Zion has always been associated with salvation. (Joel 2:32 KJV) And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call. Here we have this mount in Heaven. The mount in Scripture represents a kingdom and in this case John is seeing the Kingdom of God with all the believers.

(Psa 121:1-2 KJV) I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help. {2} My help cometh from the LORD, which made heaven and earth.

Psalm 121:1 tells us that the writer looks unto the hills for that is where his help will come from and then goes on in verse 2 and plainly tells us who the source of his help is, it is the Lord.

In 14:1, we know that heaven is in view because once again the 144,000 are mentioned. This is important because in Revelation 7, where it is first mentioned to this point the church had faced much persecution and the fact that the same number is in view tells us that God had not lost one of His children. He is the protector of His children and has promised that not one will ever be lost, no matter how intense the persecution.

Then we are told that these 144,000 have their Father's name written on their forehead which is symbolic of having the seal of salvation on them. The fact that they have the name of God on their foreheads is in contrast to the previous chapter where we saw the number of the unsaved on their foreheads and in their right hand, that number being 666 which is the number of the entire unsaved human population. The name is not physically written on the foreheads but is symbolic of all the redeemed of God.

#### **(Rev 14:2 KJV)**

And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

(Isa 35:10 KJV) And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away. Isaiah had prophesied that all the redeemed shall come to Zion and will experience everlasting joy. In 14:2, we see that in heaven there seems to be very loud voices. They are described as a voice of many waters and of a great thunder which would indicate that these voices were not just humming at a low voice but the joy level in Heaven is extremely loud. Along with the loud voices of the believers were harpists playing the harps. This means not only was their verbal singing in Heaven but there were also instruments praising the Lord.

#### **(Rev 14:3 KJV)**

And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

This song is not being sung by angels because angels were never redeemed from sin and

Satan. The song which is being sung is by all the redeemed from the earth. This new song they were singing was before the throne. No doubt it was some type of song of redemption that only the Elect of God can truly sing. (Psa 144:9 KJV) I will sing a new song unto thee, O God: upon a psaltery and an instrument of ten strings will I sing praises unto thee. David writes here that he has sung a new song plus he will be playing that new song on a stringed instrument. That Psalm of David is now being played out to the fullest in heaven by all the true believers. I would be surprised if David was not of the harpists.

#### **(Rev 14:4 KJV)**

These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb.

John is describing the redeemed body of believers in several ways here. The first description is that of being virgins. (2 Cor 11:2 KJV) For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ. The Apostle Paul had told the church at Corinth that he wanted to present the church as a chaste virgin unto Christ. The description of the redeemed being virgins is because they have been purified by the blood of Christ. The virgin is one who has not had any sex with anyone until marriage and here they are spoken of as being virgins even though they are married to Christ.

When it says that they were not defiled with women, this is an allusion to the false religions of the world. (Jer 7:18 KJV) The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger. In Jeremiah 7, we read that it was the women who baked cakes to offer to the queen of heaven. In ancient times there were number of female deities. One was known as Ashtoreth. (1 Ki 11:5 KJV) For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. Another one was named Asherah who was the female companion of Baal. Then there was Ishtar of the Babylonians, Diana of the Ephesians, and Mary of Roman Catholicism. Now 14:4 is not specifically speaking of these pagan deities but I wanted to give an example that there were many false female deities in ancient times and of course who can forget Jezebel.

What God is telling us here is that the redeemed body of believers are chaste virgins who follow the Lamb and not any false religion. It is worthy to note that these redeemed followed the Lord wherever He went. The Lord was willing to give up His life for the Elect. Millions of His followers also gave up their lives in following the Lamb and not compromising their testimony. Those that gave their lives in following the Lamb may be referred to as the "firstfruits." The firstfruits were offered unto God as an offering in the Old Testament. It is more likely that the entire body of believers are in view here as we read in James 1:18. (James 1:18 KJV) Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures. In James it speaks of all the believers being the firstfruits which gives us an indication that the true believers are the firstfruits of mankind who were redeemed from all of mankind throughout history. As a farmer brings only part of his crop at the beginning as an offering, so the believers, who were named from the foundation of the world are the firstfruits of mankind. After the firstfruits are brought as an offering, there is no secondary fruit offering. This means that those who God named before the foundation of the world are the only believers who are going to be saved and therefore are represented by the firstfruits which is a small part of the crop or the human race.

#### **(Rev 14:5 KJV)**



And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

The believers are so pure that not even guile, which is craftiness or deceit, is found in their mouth and because of them being redeemed by the blood of the Lamb they are without any fault before the throne of God. (Rom 8:33 KJV) Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Romans teaches us that God justifies His children so who can bring any type of accusation against a person whom God has saved and justified? The answer is no, especially since the accuser of the brethren was thrown out of heaven. This verse teaches us that the atonement of Christ was so complete, that these believers do not even sin with their tongue. (James 3:8 KJV) But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. For the believers in glory, their tongue has been tamed.

#### **(Rev 14:6 KJV)**

And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

From verses 6 to 11 in this chapter there is a contrast between the believers and the unbelievers to which this section of verses is aimed. In 14:6 we have an angel which is flying through the midst of heaven. This angel is preaching the everlasting Gospel but his focus audience is not the conversion of the Elect, instead this angel is bringing the Gospel to those that dwell on the earth, which are the unbelievers who are in opposition to the true Gospel and those who are the persecutors of the brethren. This Gospel is a warning of impending judgment which will come upon all those unbelievers on the earth.

#### **(Rev 14:7 KJV)**

Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

The true Gospel message contains two aspects: One, is salvation, and secondly, that of warning the unbelievers that judgment is a real event and in this verse we see that the time of judgment is upon the earth. This messenger is forewarning the unbelievers that they must give glory to God who is the Creator of the entire universe and earth. There will come a time when every knee will bow before the Lord Jesus Christ and then those who hated Him will also give glory to God. (Phil 2:10 KJV) That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; The word "fear" in 14:7 carries with it the meaning of "respect, reverence, and worship, along with fearing God." The unbeliever is very bold on earth in believing that they are kings of this earth and that there is no God. This is why this angel is warning them that judgment will come upon them and it will happen very soon. Whenever we hand out a tract, the unbeliever has been warned.

[Back](#)

**(Rev 14:8 KJV)**

And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

We will see more detail about Babylon in Chapters 17 & 18 but here we are given a single statement that Babylon has fallen. Babylon is a synonym for the kingdom of Satan. As God judged Babylon in the Old Testament, God will swiftly judge the kingdom of Satan at the end of time. There is nowhere on earth that the kingdom of Satan has not touched. Every single nation of this world has been under the evil influence of the kingdom of Satan. The fornication which these nations have been seduced by is the evil beast and the false prophet which had been responsible for seducing both governments of the world and the religious systems by creating false religions which bring only destruction to a person's soul. When one drinks wine it makes them feel good until they realize that wine has led to their eternal destruction as in the case of the wine of the wrath of the fornication of Babylon. The unbeliever drinks the wine of Babylon thinking that it will be only innocent but will realize too late that it has set them up for eternal damnation.

**(Rev 14:9 KJV)**

And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

Now a third angel follows in this judgment section warning that if anyone has worshipped the beast and had his mark. In other words, those people who put their faith in the world system or in false religion are now being warned.

**(Rev 14:10 KJV)**

The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

Those who were of the world and drank the wine of Babylon believing that there would be no consequence will now drink the wine of the wrath of God. This means that those who were of the world, the unbelievers, will now be judged for their sins of fornication with the kingdom of Satan. Here the wrath of God is given a new description. Sometimes in ancient times wine was mixed with different ingredients to give it a special flavor or for a special occasion. Here we are told that the wrath of God is unmixed into his cup of indignation. This means that God's judgment will be on every sin and will take into account every evil action. There will be no mercy or forgiveness mixed in with the judgment. There are not going to be any special ingredients added to this wine of wrath because it will come against all sin and its focus is on those who opposed God and persecuted His children. These people will be tormented in the fires of eternal hell in the presence of the holy angels and the Lord Jesus Christ.

**(Rev 14:11 KJV)**

And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

Here is the end result of all those who remained unsaved and who fornicated happily with the kingdom of Satan. Those who followed Satan on earth will follow him into eternal judgment. There is not going to be any rest in hell nor will there be any respite. Those who will be sentenced to eternal damnation will be tormented forever. This verse should put to death the idea that there is no judgment after death and the notion that there is annihilation after death. When a person is sentenced to hell, it will be for eternity and the

suffering will be for eternity.

**(Rev 14:12 KJV)**

Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

This verse is speaking of the patience of the saints and in this context, it is the fulfillment of that patience. The end has come and the believers no longer need any patience because the faith has now become sight. With the destruction of Babylon (kingdom of Satan) and the judgment of the unbelievers completed, now John switches to the Saints and their heavenly reward. No longer will the believer have to rely on faith and patience because the time has now come for them to completely inherit the New Heaven and New Earth.

**(Rev 14:13 KJV)**

And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

John is now seeing this from the vantage point of earth. He hears a voice from Heaven commanding him to write what he hears. It is a blessing for those true believers who die in the Lord and they are given eternal rest but their works do follow them. What works will follow us into Heaven? It will not be the tracts we handed out. It will not be the money we gave. It will not be the labor we put forth into our earthly ministries. It will not be our support of missions. Then what will it be? It will be the result of all these I just mentioned. The result is to send forth the Gospel on the earth to bring in all the Elect. The works which follow us are those who became saved through our ministry which the Lord gave us. We must realize that it is the Lord who does the saving but He has commanded the body of Christ to go forth into all the world with the Gospel. Those who became saved through our individual and corporate ministries are the works which will follow us. The time for rest is not on earth but our time for rest will be in Heaven, once we complete the ministry which the Lord gave us. (Luke 16:9 KJV) And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations. This verse in Luke gives us a little insight that if we use money for the ministry, we will be using it properly and thus making friends with it and by using it, those who become saved through our proper use of money, will welcome us as the ones who gave so they could hear and be saved.

**(Rev 14:14 KJV)**

And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

In this verse John is seeing the return of the Lord Jesus Christ and the Lord is symbolically sitting on a cloud and as King of Kings He has a golden crown. John sees Him descending from heaven having a sharp sickle in his hand. (Mark 4:28-29 KJV) For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. {29} But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come. In Mark we read that the sickle is put to the corn when it is full and then the harvest begins. In 14:14, the Lord is bringing His sickle with Him because it is time to reap the harvest of the earth because the end has come. If you notice that the sickle is sharp, so that not one ear of corn will remain in the field which means symbolically that not one believer will be left behind.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 14:15-20

### **(Rev 14:15 KJV)**

And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

Here an angel now approaches the Lord Jesus Christ and commands Him to put in the sickle for the harvest is ripe. Since no angel ever has any authority over the Lord Jesus Christ, this angel is no doubt bringing the command from God the Father and he is just relaying it.

(John 6:37 KJV) All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

John 6:37 states that all that the Father gives Jesus will come to Him. Now there is going to come a time right at the end when the last one whom the Father named will be brought to the Lord Jesus Christ and then comes the harvest of the earth. Now this harvest does not only include the Elect of God, the unbelievers also will be harvested from the earth and will stand before the Lord Jesus Christ. (Mat 25:31-32 KJV) When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: {32} And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: So here we have the sickle being cast into the harvest and all things in the fields will be harvested. (Mat 13:38-39 KJV) The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; {39} The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. Matthew 13:38-39 teach us what the field is and what the harvest is so there can be no guesswork.

### **(Rev 14:16 KJV)**

And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

Everything has an order, even the reaping of the harvest of the earth. In verse 15 we saw the generic harvest and now we are seeing the specific order of that harvest. (1 Th 4:16-17 KJV) For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: {17} Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17 teaches us that the Lord is going to raise the dead in Christ and then those who are still alive will be brought to Heaven on their heels. This will be the rapture of the Saints into Glory.

### **(Rev 14:17 KJV)**

And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

Now we are reading that another angel comes out of the temple of heaven and this angel also has a sharp sickle. His responsibility will now be to bring the unbelievers into judgment. The believers have all been brought to heaven and now it is the resurrection and judgment of the nations that we saw in Matthew 25. This will be the judgment upon

Babylon which is the universal kingdom of Satan.

**(Rev 14:18 KJV)**

And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

This angel has authority over fire. When we look in the Scriptures we will find that fire has to do with judgment. (Mat 18:8 KJV) Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. Now this angel tells the angel in the previous verse to thrust in the sharp sickle because the grapes are fully ripe. The principle for this is found back in Genesis 15:16. (Gen 15:16 KJV) But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full. God told Abraham that the nation of Israel would come out of Egypt in the fourth generation because the iniquity of the Amorites was not yet full. In 14:18, we are told that the grapes are fully ripe which means the iniquity of the earth is now full and ready for judgment.

**(Rev 14:19 KJV)**

And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God.

The angel now puts forth the sickle and gathers the vine of the earth into the great winepress of God. This simply means that all the unbelievers are now readied for judgment and are in the process of being judged at the Great White Throne Judgment. In Deuteronomy 32:31-33 we read that God is making a separation between His people and those of the world. He likens the vine of the world to that of Sodom and Gomorrah and the fruit of that vine, the wine, as poison of serpents and cruel venom of asps which are poisonous snakes. Of course, Satan has been dubbed a serpent and spews his venom through the unbelievers who attack the church as we have been seeing so far in Revelation.

(Deu 32:31-33 KJV) For their rock is not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves being judges. {32} For their vine is of the vine of Sodom, and of the fields of Gomorrah: their grapes are grapes of gall, their clusters are bitter: {33} Their wine is the poison of dragons, and the cruel venom of asps.

**(Rev 14:20 KJV)**

And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

Here we are reading a very gruesome description of the judgment of the unbelievers. First, we are told that this judgment is done outside the city. This would allude to the city which is the body of believers. (Rev 21:10 KJV) And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, Our judgment was paid for by Christ and therefore we do not stand for any type of judgment since all our sins have been removed and paid for.

The judgment is being graphically described as being a great bloodletting judgment. The 1600 furlongs would equate to 200 miles. Since the whole world is being judged at this point, this number is symbolic and it would be easier if it was looked at as 4 X 400. 4 is the number of universality which means that the world on judgment day is being symbolically depicted as a great blood bath which would be universal. The bridle of a horse is approximately 5 feet off the ground but varies as the horse walks. This too would be a

symbolic description that the judgment will be so intense that the blood will cover the earth up to five feet in height. Of course, this is symbolic to show that the judgment is universal and awful. The winepress is symbolic for the Great White Throne Judgment where no unbeliever will escape and that is why the symbol of blood is universal. There are some who try to make this verse literal but it will not stand the scrutiny and the context of this chapter.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 15:1-8

### **(Rev 15:1 KJV)**

And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God.

John now begins the fourth vision which contains the seven last judgments which are known as the vial judgments. In these judgments we will see that they will affect the entire earth. The first vision affected one quarter of the earth and the second vision affected one third of the earth. These fractions denote that the judgments were limited in scope but now in the third set of judgments, they are affecting the entire earth. This is known as progressive revelation when God builds upon something He previously mentioned. The judgments represented in the three sets have become progressively intense. In this vision we will end up at Armageddon which is the final battle between God and Satan. In 15:1, John is seeing another great sign in heaven. He is seeing the seven angels which have been dispatched with the final seven plagues. Revelation 10:7 states that when the seventh angel sounded the mystery of God will be finished. (Rev 10:7 KJV) But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets. The last seven plagues completes the wrath of God on the earth. The term "filled up" carries with it the meaning of "complete or finished."

### **(Rev 15:2 KJV)**

And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.

Here John sees a wonderful sight. John is seeing a sea of glass which is mingled with fire. The word "mingled" carries with it the meaning of "mixed or blended." One thing we know is that fire represents judgment. In Rev. 4:6, we saw the sea of glass which was like crystal. Here we have the glass mixed with fire. (Isa 48:10 KJV) Behold, I have refined thee, but not with silver; I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction. We also see the believers standing on the glass which is mingled with fire. In Isaiah 48:10, we are told that God has purified His people but not with Silver. He has chosen us in the furnace of affliction. That fire which has purified the believer was the fire of judgment which the Lord Jesus Christ took upon Himself for all the Elect on Calvary. It is through Christ that the true believer is victorious and that is why we see the believers standing on the glass mixed with fire. All the true believers went through the fires of affliction with the Lord Jesus Christ and were declared pure as we saw in Revelation 14:5. The true believers can stand in the fire and it will not hurt them because they will never again face any judgment for their sins since they have been removed. This is why the fire of judgment does not affect them because they have already faced judgment for their sins and have been found not guilty because of

Christ. Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego also faced the furnace which was heated seven times hotter but because they were with Christ in that furnace, they were not affected by the fire, in fact, they didn't even have the smell of fire on them. (Daniel 3) The believers in 15:2 are rejoicing in their salvation that they have harps of God in their hands. The believers were totally victorious over the entire world system and the beast and his mark through Christ.

**(Rev 15:3 KJV)**

And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints.

Since the believers will never face any type of judgment again and they are safe in Heaven, they begin to sing the song of Moses as found in type in Exodus 15. As the Israelites sang the song of deliverance from Egypt, the believers in heaven begin to sing the song of total deliverance from the evil world system and Satan and his beast and false prophet. They also sang the song praising the Lord Jesus Christ for the greatness of His works and lauding Him as being God Almighty. He is also being praised for His ways which are true and just. The just part would be that the final assault on the kingdom of Satan is about to begin and the Lord is just for bringing judgment on a kingdom and its followers who are in total rebellion to Him and His Kingdom. (Psa 145:17 KJV) The LORD is righteous in all his ways, and holy in all his works. (Psa 145:20 KJV) The LORD preserveth all them that love him: but all the wicked will he destroy. David knew this very well and the same characteristics he saw in God are the same ones that the believers are praising their Redeemer for.

**(Rev 15:4 KJV)**

Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for thou only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest.

Then in the song they ask the question as to who shall not fear Him and glorify His name? The whole world is about to fear the Lord when for many millennia the name of God and the name of the Lord Jesus was used as a swear word. His existence was doubted and belittled by the intellectual establishment but very soon when they see Him in all His glory, they will fear and give glory to His name but at that point it will be too late. (Phil 2:10 KJV) That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; All the unbelievers, from the first one to the last one, who vilified the Lord Jesus Christ will be made to acknowledge Him and will worship Him. These will worship Him by force but the true believer does not need to be forced to worship his creator. The unbelievers will acknowledge the Lord Jesus Christ because the judgments which He will be executing on the earth will be devastating as we will see, because these vial judgments will affect the entire earth and no unbeliever will escape.

**(Rev 15:5 KJV)**

And after that I looked, and, behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened:

As in the wilderness wanderings of Israel, the tabernacle was the place where God's presence was and where He met with His representatives. The tabernacle was where Israel would receive their directives and also where they would receive any judgments for any sins they committed against God. In 15:5, we are seeing the same principle that these vial judgments are coming from God Himself which is represented by the temple of the tabernacle. This is not a physical temple or tabernacle but it is symbolic of where the direction for the final plagues is coming from.

### **(Rev 15:6 KJV)**

And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

Here is the description of the seven angels which have now been dispatched to pour out the vials of judgments. The dress is an indication that they were in the presence of God receiving His direction. The white linen and the golden girdles shows the purity and sinlessness of those who have been dispatched to deliver the final judgments. The golden girdles also are dress for a priest and a king which shows that their mission comes directly from God the Father Himself.

### **(Rev 15:7 KJV)**

And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

One of the four beasts who attend to the throne of God hands the seven vials over to the seven angels. These contain the wrath of God which is destined for the whole earth. The golden vial represents that the judgments are pure and there is no mixture of any kind. In Revelation 5:8, we read that the prayers of the Saints were in vials and these vials may be in response to those prayers as the martyrs have been asking God when the end will come and when they will be avenged. Here we see that the end is very close as the vials are about to be poured out on the whole earth.

### **(Rev 15:8 KJV)**

And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

Just as the Glory of God filled the tabernacle in the time of the wilderness wanderings of Israel. (Exo 40:34-35 KJV) Then a cloud covered the tent of the congregation, and the glory of the LORD filled the tabernacle. {35} And Moses was not able to enter into the tent of the congregation, because the cloud abode thereon, and the glory of the LORD filled the tabernacle. The same situation in 15:8 is being given. Once the seven angels were dispatched with the final judgments, the Glory of God became evident in Heaven and because the smoke from the Glory of God was so great, no one was able to enter the temple. This was the same situation that Moses encountered as he was unable to go into the tabernacle while the Glory of God abode upon it. What we have here in 15:8 is the fact that once the judgments of God begin, there is no stopping them until they are completed. When the high priest went into make an atonement for sins then normally the judging hand of God was stayed but here no one is allowed to enter that temple because the time for sacrifices and atonement is over. The time for judgment has begun. This is symbolized by no man being able to enter the temple while the wrath of God is being poured out upon the unbelievers of the earth. John is also seeing this vision and he is relaying this scene because he wants the world to know that the judgments of God are absolutely awesome and devastating, just like when God descended upon Mt. Sinai in Exodus 19 and His glory was so great the people trembled in fear. This is the mindset that John is conveying that the final seven judgments are about to bring the same fear, but this time the fear will be on the entire unbelieving world.

[Back](#)



## Revelation 16:1-7

### **(Rev 16:1 KJV)**

And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

Now comes the final seven plagues which are being dispatched with a loud voice. There is no guessing as to what the mission of these seven angels are. Each one has been given a specific vial and each one is to affect the entire earth in different manners. This final set of judgments are the conclusive ones to dominate the earth. The first set of judgments affected one fourth of the earth and the second set of judgments affected one third of the earth which means the judgments were limited in scope but now the final set of judgments are upon the whole earth and this time there will be no unbeliever who will escape. This final set of judgments will culminate in the battle of Armageddon which is not a literal tank battle in Israel but is the final battle between God and Satan. Let me just state here that God does not have to battle Satan because He can just throw him into hell but the battle between God and Satan must take place because God has a purpose for this battle and until that purpose is completed, the battle will rage.

### **(Rev 16:2 KJV)**

And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

The time has now come for the answer to the prayer of Jeremiah.

(Jer 10:25 KJV) Pour out thy fury upon the heathen that know thee not, and upon the families that call not on thy name: for they have eaten up Jacob, and devoured him, and consumed him, and have made his habitation desolate.

God now begins to pour out His fury upon all the nations of the world and upon them which have eaten up Jacob. In other words, those nations which have persecuted the body of believers which resulted in many martyrs. These nations are now being judged. In the first of the vial judgments, the result is noisome and grievous sores are coming upon those who belonged to Satan. The word "noisome" may also be translated "evil." In Job 2:7, Job was smitten with boils from Satan.

(Job 2:7 KJV) So went Satan forth from the presence of the LORD, and smote Job with sore boils from the sole of his foot unto his crown.

The Hebrew word for boils may also allude to cancerous sores. It is interesting to note that cancer cases are increasing all over the world.

(Exo 9:9-11 KJV) And it shall become small dust in all the land of Egypt, and shall be a boil breaking forth with blains upon man, and upon beast, throughout all the land of Egypt. {10} And they took ashes of the furnace, and stood before Pharaoh; and Moses sprinkled it up toward heaven; and it became a boil breaking forth with blains upon man, and upon beast. {11} And the magicians could not stand before Moses because of the boils; for the boil was upon the magicians, and upon all the Egyptians.

The first vial judgment has a relation to the plague of boils which hit the Egyptians. If you

notice in that everyone had the boils and no one was spared this torment. The word "blain" carries with it the meaning of "belch forth or bubble." This means that these festering sores were unsightly and painful, especially if they would bubble bringing up puss. Now this first vial judgment does not necessarily mean that everyone in the world, except believers are going to walk around with bubbling boils.

However, the first vial judgment will exude a torment. This torment will also be some type of psychological or spiritual torment. One of the great torments that anyone on earth can have is to be spiritually confounded. (2 Tim 3:7 KJV) Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. There are millions today who believe they have found the truth, yet are totally confounded. Spiritual uncertainty can plague a mind.

#### **(Rev 16:3 KJV)**

And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man; and every living soul died in the sea.

The second vial judgment is almost a direct parallel of the second trumpet judgment. (Revelation 8:8-9) This judgment also parallels the first judgment upon Egypt which was when the waters were turned to blood. In the second trumpet judgment we read that one third of the sea became blood which means that judgment had come upon the kingdom of Satan partially. Now in this second vial, we see that this is a furthering of the second trumpet judgment. It now goes from one third to the entire earth. The mountain that burned in the second trumpet judgment will now mean that the entire kingdom of Satan has finally been judged. When God will judge the kingdom of Satan in its entirety, all who are members of this evil kingdom will become dead. That is, they will face the second death for eternity. We can also see in this verse that the seas became as blood of a dead man. The sea is water and the true Gospel is the water of life but dead water is the dead, false gospel which cannot save and that results in the followers of false religion being cast into an eternal hell.

#### **(Rev 16:4 KJV)**

And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.

The third vial judgment is parallel with that of the third trumpet judgment. (Rev. 8:10-11) As in the third trumpet judgment, the waters were made bitter so people could not drink of them but those who had died from the poisoning. In our day, there is a serious concern for having clean drinking water and the supply seems to be shrinking world wide. While thirst may be a legitimate plague and can happen anywhere at anytime, what is in view here is that which is akin to the third trumpet. (John 7:38 KJV) He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. The pure water of the Gospel will flow out of every true believer but in the Revelation verse we are seeing that the rivers and fountains will turn to blood, which means that there is going to be an intensifying of false gospels and teachings worldwide. Those false teachings are going to be responsible for the eternal deaths of billions. The unsaved world hates the true Gospel so God will intensify their false belief systems so they will think they are living in truth. (2 Th 2:11-12 KJV) And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: {12} That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

A similar principle is found in the Old Testament when Ahab was looking for confirmation of his alliance with Jehoshaphat and his war. Micaiah had seen a vision of the Lord and even told Ahab that God was going to send a lying spirit to put into the mouths of all the false prophets. This principle is alive and well as we see in Revelation 16:4 that all the fountains and rivers became as the blood of dead men which means a dead, lying false

gospel.

(1 Ki 22:19-23 KJV) And he said, Hear thou therefore the word of the LORD: I saw the LORD sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by him on his right hand and on his left. {20} And the LORD said, Who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and fall at Ramothgilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner. {21} And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the LORD, and said, I will persuade him. {22} And the LORD said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so. {23} Now therefore, behold, the LORD hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the LORD hath spoken evil concerning thee.

**(Rev 16:5 KJV)**

And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus.

John hears the angel of the water now interject a justification for this terrible plague. The kingdom of Satan which for so long persecuted the church of God, is now being requited for their hatred. Maybe this is a coming physical plague of thirst since the judgment is against those who dwell upon the earth. The Lord is righteous to bring any judgment against the kingdom of Satan which He desires. This is the only place in Scripture where the angel of the waters is mentioned. Other angels mentioned are those who have power over the winds (Rev. 7:1) and over fire (Rev. 14:18).

**(Rev 16:6 KJV)**

For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.

The unbelieving world, no matter at what time in history, is and has been responsible for the murder of God's children. The kingdom of Satan has been at war continually with the Kingdom of God. Since they have shed the blood of the saints and the prophets of God, God is now giving them blood to drink, which means that they will be paying for their deeds with their own lives and their own spiritual lives which will end them up in eternal hell. The last part of the verse, "for they are worthy" is teaching us that those whom God is judging by taking their life are worthy to receive that penalty. Just as they felt the believers were worthy to be killed because of their stand for truth, now God is taking their lives because they are worthy to be judged for their crimes against Christians.

**(Rev 16:7 KJV)**

And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments.

Here is another approbation coming from the altar, which may be the voice of the martyrs stating that God's judgment upon these unbelievers are true and righteous. This means basically that the punishment fits the crime. As the unbelieving world had no problems taking the lives of the true believers because they thought they were right and just in doing it, especially in countries where laws were passed to restrict Christian activity, now God is not restricting His judgment upon these killers of His children.

**(Rev 16:8 KJV)**

And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

After the blast of the fourth trumpet in Rev. 8:12, the sun was darkened by one third and it was temporary but here we are seeing that when the fourth vial is poured out on the sun, this angel had the power to scorch men with fire. The word “scorch” in the Greek also carries the meaning of “burn.” With the sun involved and the mentioning of fire, we see that God has begun to judge the unbelieving people on earth. The judgments are now very intense because the vial being poured on the sun gives the effect of increased power to severely affect the lives of the unbelievers on earth.

**(Rev 16:9 KJV)**

And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.

As usual with the unsaved, instead of seeking the reason for the judgments that come upon them, they, instead blame God but never look to the fact that the judgments coming upon them have been justly earned. Unsaved man would rather blaspheme the name of God than repent of their evil ways. We saw this same situation back in Revelation 9 when God sent plagues upon the idolaters and those who were not affected by the plagues refused to repent of their sins.

(Rev 9:20-21 KJV) And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: {21} Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

Rev 16:9 is teaching us that it is God that has the authority over these plagues and we can see a similar situation here as we saw in Exodus. When Moses had confronted Pharaoh to let Israel go, Pharaoh refused and in the process of his confrontation, he hardened his heart against Moses and God. These people in Revelation who refused to repent have done the same thing, they have hardened their hearts against God. Today we see much of this same attitude as people ride around with bumper stickers reading “No Fear.” No fear? This is just a hardening of their heart.

**(Rev 16:10 KJV)**

And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

The fifth angel pours his vial upon the seat of the beast. We are not told where this seat is but the fact that a seat is mentioned means that it is the heart of his kingdom. Whenever we see a seat mentioned, it is normally speaking of the central place of authority. It also speaks of something which has been completed and the person who completed the project now sits down. So this vial is poured out upon the ruling place of the beast and it doesn't really matter where it is, what is important is that the judgment is falling on the place of authority from where the beast operates. When the central place or place of authority is being judged, it will hinder the operation of the beast's kingdom.

This judgment is reminiscent of the plague of darkness upon Egypt. (Exo 10:22-23 KJV) And Moses stretched forth his hand toward heaven; and there was a thick darkness in all the land of Egypt three days: {23} They saw not one another, neither rose any from his place for three days: but all the children of Israel had light in their dwellings. The darkness was so thick that they could not even see each other and that caused them to remain at home. In 16:10 we are

told that this vial causes a darkness to descend upon the kingdom of the beast which causes his people to gnaw their tongues because of the pain. The word "gnawed" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "squeeze or knead." The word for "pain" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "distress or affliction" and is used only in the book of Revelation as is the word for "gnawed." What would possibly cause such pain or distress in the darkness? It is the fact that the entire kingdom of the beast is in spiritual darkness and that all those who are part of the beast system are separated from God and eternal darkness awaits them as punishment for being part of the beast system. (Mat 8:12 KJV) But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. What kingdom is the Lord speaking of? He is speaking of the kingdom of Satan. "Outer Darkness" is another designation for Hell and that is why the followers of the beast are squeezing their tongues in distress because what they have waiting for them is eternal damnation. (Luke 16:24 KJV) And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. As the flame tormented the rich man and caused his tongue to be parched, so the darkness of the fifth vial will cause all the followers of the beast to squeeze their tongues also for pain. It is also interesting to note that God specifically mentions their tongues because in the previous verse, we read that these same people were blaspheming God with their tongues. So here we see again, the judgment of God is righteous and just upon these people.

**(Rev 16:11 KJV)**

And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

Because of the darkness which is spewed over unbelieving mankind, these same people are once again blaspheming the name of God. This is being done because these people have minds which have been further darkened by this plague and that darkness has disallowed them from believing the truth. In fact, in 2 Corinthians 4:4, we are told that Satan has blinded the minds of the unbelievers and blindness is total darkness. (2 Cor 4:4 KJV) In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. Once darkness has gone from partial to complete, as we saw in the progression of the judgments in the three visions, then there is no possibility of sight. In fact in one of the last verses of the book of Revelation we read:

(Rev 22:11 KJV) He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

Those who are members of the kingdom of the beast have identified with him and in God's sight that will never change. Those who are dead in their sins will remain dead in their sins and those who are saved will remain saved. This is the same principle in this judgment. These people will not repent of their sins so they continue to go deeper and deeper into spiritual darkness, and there they will remain for eternity.

**(Rev 16:12 KJV)**

And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

Now we come to the sixth angel who pours his vial upon the great river Euphrates. In Revelation 7:2, we saw an angel coming from the east with the seal of God which meant God was sealing His Elect. We had also understood that the term "east" is defined by its usage. What we have in 16:12 is not an invasion of modern Israel by China as the prophecy pundits try to teach. The East mentioned here is just a reference from where the

kings of the earth symbolically will be stationed before the battle of Armageddon. The river Euphrates was the western most border of the promised land of Israel and that means that these kings are ready to pounce on the body of believers as they ready themselves to battle the body of Christ. In the Bible we read in some places where God dried up the waters as a judgment.

(Isa 11:15 KJV) And the LORD shall utterly destroy the tongue of the Egyptian sea; and with his mighty wind shall he shake his hand over the river, and shall smite it in the seven streams, and make men go over dryshod.

(Exo 14:16 KJV) But lift thou up thy rod, and stretch out thine hand over the sea, and divide it: and the children of Israel shall go on dry ground through the midst of the sea. (Exo 14:27-29 KJV) And Moses stretched forth his hand over the sea, and the sea returned to his strength when the morning appeared; and the Egyptians fled against it; and the LORD overthrew the Egyptians in the midst of the sea. {28} And the waters returned, and covered the chariots, and the horsemen, and all the host of Pharaoh that came into the sea after them; there remained not so much as one of them. {29} But the children of Israel walked upon dry land in the midst of the sea; and the waters were a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left.

Probably the most famous drying up of the waters is when Pharaoh chose to pursue Israel and to try and kill all of them. God dried up the sea so Israel could go on dry land but the Egyptians also thought they could pursue the Israelites on the dry land but for them it was death but for Israel it was salvation.

Now in 16:12, God is giving us a figure of the drying up of the waters of the earth so the kings of the east can be prepared. Prepared for what? Prepared for the battle of Armageddon which will be the culmination of the battle of good and evil on this earth. Now this verse does not tell us that they have already begun their assault upon the Kingdom of God but it states that they were just being prepared for the final battle. The word "prepared" in the Greek carries with it the idea of "put or keep in readiness." Then when the final battle commences, then God will order them into the battle where they will be defeated forever. This entire scenario is under the authority of God and He will commence the battle at His appointed time.

### **(Rev 16:13 KJV)**

And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

(Exo 8:6-7 KJV) And Aaron stretched out his hand over the waters of Egypt; and the frogs came up, and covered the land of Egypt. {7} And the magicians did so with their enchantments, and brought up frogs upon the land of Egypt.

In this verse we are reading that three unclean spirits emanate from the mouth of the dragon, who is Satan, the first beast, and the false prophet, which is the second beast. John sees them as frogs and it is quite interesting that these unclean spirits are likened to frogs. First, in Exodus 8:6, we read that the frogs covered the land of Egypt. These unclean spirits will cover the entire world as they are being brought up on the heels of the symbolic Euphrates river being dried up to make way for preparation of war. It is also interesting to note that the plague of frogs was one that the Egyptian magicians were able to imitate as we see in Exodus 8:7. The frog likening in 16:13 is conveying to us that the unclean spirits will be imitating the true Gospel and will be deceiving people with false religions and teachings. It will also be deceiving people further in the other disciplines of life also which would include science, which more and more sets itself up as a god among civilization. Many people look to science and technology as the only answers for mankind

but soon will be looking at reality in the face on Judgment Day.

**(Rev 16:14 KJV)**

For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

The first part of this verse explains exactly what the unclean spirits are. These are the spirits of devils and by means of miracles, they go out and deceive not only the populations of the world, but also incites the leaders of the nations around the entire world. It is through the political governments that Christianity has either been curtailed or endorsed. In this verse we are seeing that because of the nature of these miracles as being unclean, this will be a worldwide crusade against true Christianity. There will be no nation that will not attempt some type of persecution for the purpose of silencing the Gospel. God will be using this time of persecution as the precursor for the great battle of God Almighty which will be Armageddon, the final battle between God and Satan. While the war will be waged in the spiritual realm, it will also be waged here on earth by the followers of the beast. The kings of the earth here are linked also to the kings of the east in verse 12. (Luke 21:20-22 KJV) And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. {21} Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. {22} For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. Luke 21:20-22 calls these the days of vengeance when Satan will try to enact vengeance upon the body of Christ but instead God will bring vengeance upon the kingdom of Satan for its persecution of the true believers. Jerusalem, representing the body of believers will definitely suffer a final persecution just before the return of Christ.

Revelation 16:15-21

**(Rev 16:15 KJV)**

Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

Right on the heels of the gathering of the armies in verse 14, we read this interjection which the Lord Jesus Christ makes. Here He is warning the world and assuring the believers that He will return to earth and those who are truly saved will be watching for Him but to the rest of the world, He will come as a thief in the night which means His return to them will be unexpected. In the Bible, walking naked means that a person has no savior to cover their sins.

(Heb 4:13 KJV) Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

Every unsaved human being will stand before the Lord Jesus Christ on judgment Day and if they be found naked, that is unsaved, then they will be cast into eternal hell.

(2 Cor 5:1-4 KJV) For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. {2} For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven: {3} If so be that being

clothed we shall not be found naked. {4} For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

In these verses Paul is speaking of the believer being clothed but he is not speaking of physical clothes. In verse 4, we read that the clothing which the believer has is that of eternal life because this mortality is swallowed up in eternity.

The interjection of the return of the Lord Jesus Christ is keeping in harmony with the other two judgment visions of John. (Chapters 4-7 & 8-11) In each case the return of the Lord Jesus Christ is mentioned. Here there is no difference because the battle of Armageddon is not a physical battle but the final spiritual battle between God and Satan where the forces of Satan are destroyed along with the earth which is to be made a new.

#### **(Rev 16:16 KJV)**

And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

Now we resume the scenario of the final scenes of earth's history. We saw previously that the kings of the earth and the kings of the east, which were in position symbolically on the Euphrates. Now the call goes out for the forces of God and the forces of Satan to meet for the final time. The name of the place is "Armageddon." The name actually means "hill of Megiddo." In Joshua 12, we are told that Joshua had defeated the king of Megiddo along with many other kings. However, we are to understand that this being apocalyptic language does not mean a specific geographical location. Wherever this final battle takes place, there is no great physical battle on earth accompanying it. What the nations will do is try to outlaw and quench Christianity as best as they can and when it seems like they are winning or have won, then the Lord will return upon them as a thief in the night.

#### **(Rev 16:17 KJV)**

And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

Now we read that the final vial is poured out into the air which may also be understood as the atmosphere. This is a significant location because Satan is called the prince of the power of the air. (Eph 2:2 KJV) Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: The spiritual realm is where the real battle of Armageddon will take place because the real forces of evil are in the air. Once Satan is defeated, then his earthly followers are removed from the earth for final judgment.

(Rev 18:9-10 KJV) And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, {10} Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come.

Here we jump ahead for a moment that the kings of the earth are standing afar off because they are watching the destruction of the kingdom which they placed their faith in all their lives. They will apparently see the destruction of earth before they stand for final judgment.

Then we are told in 16:17 that a great (loud) voice from the throne, probably God the Father declaring that it is done. The word in the Greek for "it is done" is in the perfect tense which is the tense of completed action. That means the end of Satan's kingdom is finalized.



**(Rev 16:18 KJV)**

And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

In verse 17, we are told that the announcement of the end of Satan's kingdom came with a loud voice. In this verse we are once again given the loudness of that announcement. There was voices, lightnings, and thunder but this time it is accompanied by a great earthquake.

(Isa 13:13 KJV) Therefore I will shake the heavens, and the earth shall remove out of her place, in the wrath of the LORD of hosts, and in the day of his fierce anger.

(Hag 2:6 KJV) For thus saith the LORD of hosts; Yet once, it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land;

(Heb 12:26 KJV) Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.

Here we read three verses which harmonize with the great earthquake. God had prophesied through Isaiah and Haggai that He was going to shake the earth and the heavens. The great voice which came out of heaven shook the earth as well as heaven. We are told that this earthquake was so immense that the earth never before saw one of such magnitude. This is because it is the final earthquake and the day of Judgment is now at hand so the earthquake has been greatly magnified.

**(Rev 16:19 KJV)**

And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

The result of the great earthquake was that the great city was divided into three parts. The three parts would tell us that the break up is complete and great Babylon, the kingdom of Satan, was now coming apart in judgment. As God begins the final judgment of the kingdom of Satan, His wrath is so great that it breaks the kingdom apart. It is now time for the final judgment of those who followed Satan. The three parts may refer to the two beast systems and the dragon's reign. This would teach us that the kingdom of Satan which was once a unified force against the body of Christ, is now coming apart for the last time and for the final judgment.

**(Rev 16:20 KJV)**

And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

The result of the mighty earthquake tells us that the islands fled and the mountains had disappeared. This is teaching that as God is judging the kingdom of Satan, we are also seeing the destruction of the present earth. Mountains in Scripture may also refer to kingdoms and because the kingdom of Satan is being judged, all the kingdoms which aligned themselves with him are no longer found on the earth because of their removal to judgment.

**(Rev 16:21 KJV)**

And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

Here we are seeing a judgment which has been used by God on the enemies of God. We saw hailstones come down as a judgment against the Egyptians and in Joshua 10:11, God also sent hailstones down upon the five opposing kings. In 16:21, we are seeing that these hailstones weigh about 100 pounds each which means that this judgment is a great one because of the size of the hailstones. The hailstones, are symbolic, and we are told of their great weight to emphasize the immensity of the judgment which is in view. As usual, those whom the judgment fell upon did not repent of their sins, rather they blasphemed God, which is the typical response of the unbeliever. We are told that this judgment was exceeding great. The word for "exceeding" in the Greek may also be understood as "violent or excessive." Whatever this final plague is, it will be a very violent judgment.

[Back](#)

#### Revelation 17:1-6

##### **(Rev 17:1 KJV)**

And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:

John is now summoned by one of the seven angels who had the vials to see and witness the judgment of the great whore, which is Babylon. A whore is one that leads men away from their wives and destroys families. Single men commit fornication with whores thus polluting them. (1 Cor 6:16 KJV) What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh.

As a person sinfully joins themselves to a harlot in physical terms, by committing fornication, they are also joining in spirit. Rev. 17:1 begins the final judgment of the kingdom of Satan. Many have taken this chapter to mean that it is speaking of the Roman Catholic Church and that is not true. What is true, the Roman Catholic Church as a false church is definitely part of the kingdom of Satan because she has the blood of many true believers on her hands as well but this chapter is dealing with the world wide kingdom of Satan and not just a limited portion of it. We can know this by the phrase "that sitteth upon many waters:" which means all the nations of the world.

##### **(Rev 17:2 KJV)**

With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

These two chapters on Babylon teach us how intricate the workings are between the kingdom of Satan and the religious, commercial, and political world through which Satan works his attacks on the body of Christ. In this verse we are told that the kings of the earth, those in political power, and also those citizens of the kingdoms of the world have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. When a person becomes drunk, they are saturated with alcohol. When the kings and citizens of the world are made drunk with the kingdom of Satan, this means they are fully given over to it. A drunk person normally does not have control over themselves as the alcohol completely saturates them, so likewise, the kingdom of Satan has total control over the unsaved populations of the world as if they were all helpless drunks. Sin is a very intoxicating thing because it can hold

sway over any unsaved human being. (Jer 51:7 KJV) Babylon hath been a golden cup in the LORD'S hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. As ancient Babylon was a major influence over the nation of Israel, the worldwide Babylon will have similar effect on the entire world.

### **(Rev 17:3 KJV)**

So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

Back in Revelation 12, we saw that the church went into the wilderness, which is a synonym for the world, where God had protected the church spiritually. Now John is being carried away in the spirit into that wilderness. However, this time the wilderness is not a place of nourishment and divine protection, instead, this time it is a place of judgment. In verse one, we saw the woman sitting on many waters but now as the apocalyptic imagery shifts rapidly, she is seen sitting on a scarlet beast. The beast in this verse is reminiscent of that of Rev. 13:1 which had the seven heads and ten horns with the name of blasphemy on it. The fact that the woman is riding the beast is showing her bond with the state, such as the social, religious, and educational aspects of the world, which can also, and, must include the economic systems of the world. This is where the whoredoms come from as the beast system prostitutes any and all truth and the world system, being in league with it, disseminates those falsities.

### **(Rev 17:4 KJV)**

And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication:

Here we are given a description of this woman. She is arrayed in purple and scarlet. Purple is the color of royalty and scarlet is the color of valiance or gallantry as we see in the following two verses.

(Judg 8:26 KJV) And the weight of the golden earrings that he requested was a thousand and seven hundred shekels of gold; beside ornaments, and collars, and purple raiment that was on the kings of Midian, and beside the chains that were about their camels' necks.

(Nahum 2:3 KJV) The shield of his mighty men is made red, the valiant men are in scarlet: the chariots shall be with flaming torches in the day of his preparation, and the fir trees shall be terribly shaken.

Not only was this woman dressed in royal apparel, she was also decked out with gold, precious stones, and pearls. These three items show the highest desire of mankind. Gold and precious stones show the high valued items which can draw a person to give their life in pursuit of. Not only is there the gold and precious stones, we also have the pearls which are found in the ocean. So this woman is alluring the world population to throw in with the beast and all the riches of the earth and the oceans will be theirs.

(Luke 4:5-6 KJV) And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, showed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. {6} And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.

Satan had offered the Lord Jesus Christ all the kingdoms of the world and the wealth which comes with it if He would just worship him. Gold, precious stones, and pearls also represent power. Those who have great wealth in this world also wield great power. This is why the pursuit of wealth is so foremost in the minds of many people because it

represents power too. Those who have given their lives in pursuit of wealth, do it unapologetically because they believe that if they attain it, then they will be set but those riches will come apart from them either by death or by the end of the world which is quickly approaching.

#### **(Rev 17:5 KJV)**

And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

Here we have the true character of the woman being given. When we read about something being placed on the head in apocalyptic writing, it normally means the true nature of the person or thing in view. First of all she is called a mystery. A mystery is something which has been hidden but is now revealed. The kingdom of Satan is represented as a mystery which is now revealed to the world. His kingdom is openly known as Babylon the Great. It is described as the mother of harlots, with whom the kings and the people of the world have fornicated with. Then it is known as the mother of abominations, which is the mother of detestable, hateful, or loathsome things. Notice this kingdom is not limited in scope but engulfs the entire earth. The fact that this kingdom is called a mother means that it has given birth to all the evil which has permeated this world since the beginning of time. Just as the heavenly Jerusalem is called the mother of all believers, the kingdom of Satan is called the mother of harlots and abominations. (Gal 4:26 KJV) But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. The kingdom of Satan imitates the methods of the kingdom of God so it can deceive and destroy.

#### **(Rev 17:6 KJV)**

And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

Here John sees the woman as drunken with the blood of the saints and the martyrs of Jesus. The word “drunken” is in the present tense which means that this kingdom continues to this day to come against the Saints of the Lord Jesus Christ and martyrs them. When someone is drunk with alcohol, they are totally void of reality because the alcohol has rule over them. The same with this woman. She is drunken with the blood of the Saints and does not see reality because she believes she has total victory over the body of Christ.

The kingdom of Satan has always been the arch enemy of the body of Christ. His kingdom has been responsible for the killing of Abel, the killing of Naboth, the murder of the Old Testament prophets, the murders of the early Christians, the murders of the Christians in the Middle Ages, and the murder of Christians in our age by hostile religions in league with their governments. When John saw this he was marveling or in amazement at this sight. When John had gone to the desert, he was probably thinking that he would see the judgment of this kingdom but here it seems that she has become victorious.

[Back](#)

### Revelation 17:7-12

#### **(Rev 17:7 KJV)**

And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

The angel now says to John asking him why he is in such amazement of this beast. He is now going to learn the mystery of this woman and of the beast that she is riding. The angel knows that this mystery is not a mystery to him. This is a single mystery because the beast and the woman are intimately associated.

**(Rev 17:8 KJV)**

The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

In keeping with deception as the main tool of the kingdom of Satan. The description given here as the beast was, is not (meaning he is defeated), and ascending out of the bottomless pit is an imitation of the description given to the Lord Jesus Christ. (Rev 1:8 KJV) I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty. The beast was stricken in one of his heads, yet continued to flourish and bounce back with a furious onslaught against the body of Christ. So the beast imitates Christ in that he seems to be invincible. However, the verse goes on to say that the beast will go into perdition, that is, he will be sent to eternal hell.

This verse is similar to that of Rev. 13:8 where it speaks about those on earth will wonder who is written in the Lamb's Book of Life which was written before the foundation of the world. The true believers are written in the Lamb's Book of Life. The beast will come with such religious deceptions and those deceptions are aimed right at Christianity and those deceptions will be so close to the truth, that many in the churches will wonder who the true believers are. The greatest blow that the kingdom of Satan took was at the cross of Christ when it seemed like his kingdom was defeated yet he bounced back and that kingdom will now come wrathfully against the kingdom of God, especially in the last days when the forces of evil and good will face off for a final battle.

**(Rev 17:9 KJV)**

And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

The mind which has wisdom are those who are truly saved and these will not be deceived by the beast but will deceive the unbelievers who marvel at the great world system the beast rules. Now we are told of the mystery. The seven heads on which the woman sits are seven mountains. These mountains refer to kingdoms which are found in the world but are all part of the beast's kingdom. When John received this vision, Rome was the ruling authority and it was built on seven hills. However, there are other cities built on seven hills too such as Athens, Greece. So even though the kingdoms of the world are in view in these passages, they make up the entire world system under the authority of the beast.

**(Rev 17:10 KJV)**

And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

Now in this verse many have been trying to attach ancient world leaders to these seven kings. Some have even tried to attach the series of kingdoms mentioned in Scripture such as Babylon, Assyria, Rome, Egypt and others. Some prophetic preachers try to make this out to be a prophecy of a physical Anti-Christ who will rule the world in the future. However, what we have in this verse is a general description of leaders through which the beast has worked his evil. We do not know who they are but the numbers line up with the

method of description we had in verse 8.

The beast that thou sawest was - Five fallen kings  
and is not - One is  
and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit - the other is not yet and will continue for a short time

These seven kings represent a continuing rulership by the beast of governments and religions which persecute the Christians and this rulership will continue until the last day when the kingdom of Satan will be judged in its totality. Hence the number seven as being the perfect number which represents the kingdom of Satan in its entirety, and length of time of existence.

**(Rev 17:11 KJV)**

And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

Here once again we are given the false title by which he tries to imitate the Lord Jesus Christ. The beast is the eighth king and is of the seven. The beast does not rule over a specific kingdom. He is listed as the eighth simply because he is of the same kingdom that the seven kings are of. The rule of the beast is over the kings of the earth, this is why he is of the seven because they are one in spirit and in goal. The beast is not a human ruler through which he works his war against the body of Christ. In fact, as we have previously seen, the beast is part of that unholy triumvirate which makes him the evil by which the seven kings draw their evil deeds and desires from. This verse also tells us that the beast will go to perdition, which means he has already been judged and the day of his doom has been set.

**(Rev 17:12 KJV)**

And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.

These ten horns which represent ten kings are not literal kings but they represent the completeness of the evil power upon the earth which is sourced in the beast. As we saw in Revelation 5:6, that one of the descriptions of the Lord Jesus Christ is that He had seven horns. Now we know He doesn't have horns but those seven horns represent His divinely, perfect power. Now the ten kings in this verse are ten horns which means that the beast kingdom is shown in its completeness as it comes against the kingdom of God in power in the final days. These ten kings may be the kings of the east poised on the river Euphrates which God had summoned to the final battle. The ten kings combined with the seven kings could represent the totality of the kingdom of Satan. Seven being the perfect number and ten being the number of completeness. This may be why they have no kingdom as of yet because they are representative of the entire kingdom of Satan. They are also ruling with the beast for one hour.

(1 John 2:18 KJV) Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.

In 1 John 2:18, the word in the Greek for "time" is "hora" which translates as hour in Revelation 17:12. John describes the period of time from the cross to the last day as the last time or hour. Therefore, in Revelation 17:12, the ten kings could not be literal kings because they rule for the entire New Testament period which is the time frame of the book of Revelation.

## Revelation 17:13-18

### (Rev 17:13 KJV)

These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

These ten kings are shown to be of one mind with the beast and that they are servants of the beast in that they give their power and authority to the beast. They are all willing enemies of the body of Christ and have been those who worked out the evil plans to come against the Kingdom of God. This shows a united front at this point in the kingdom of Satan as it wars against God.

### (Rev 17:14 KJV)

These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.

This verse jumps ahead to chapter 19 when the Lamb of God comes back in final triumph over the beast system. The ten kings of the beast system will make war against the Lamb but that war will be futile and it will end up with the beast being sent into perdition as had been prophesied in verse 11. The Lord Jesus Christ returns with His army and that army is the army of true believers. They are known as the called, chosen, and faithful.

(Rom 8:30 KJV) Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he **called**, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath **chosen** us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

(Eph 1:1 KJV) Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the **faithful** in Christ Jesus:

### (Rev 17:15 KJV)

And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

John is now told that the whore is not just a small local area but instead that it is world wide in scope. (Jer 51:13 KJV) O thou that dwellest upon many waters, abundant in treasures, thine end is come, and the measure of thy covetousness. Jeremiah saw the vastness of the great city of Babylon as one that sits on many waters which is a synonym for the entire world. Jeremiah is also prophesying in this verse that the end of Babylon has come. He prophesied the end of the earthly kingdom of Babylon but God widened that interpretation by attaching its meaning to the entire world. Throughout all of recorded time, the nations of the world with its citizens have all been influenced by the beast system especially in the area of false religions and there will be no end until the last day.

### (Rev 17:16 KJV)

And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

As before we saw a unified mindset in the kingdom of Satan, here we are seeing internal strife which will lead to the destruction of the whore. The ten kings will hate the whore and will attempt to destroy her. Verse 17, tells us that this is God's program for there to be a

civil war within the kingdom of Satan. God has used this tactic with the nation of Israel.

(2 Chr 20:22-23 KJV) And when they began to sing and to praise, the LORD set ambushments against the children of Ammon, Moab, and mount Seir, which were come against Judah; and they were smitten. {23} For the children of Ammon and Moab stood up against the inhabitants of mount Seir, utterly to slay and destroy them: and when they had made an end of the inhabitants of Seir, every one helped to destroy another.

Jehoshaphat had prayed to the Lord for deliverance from the kings which had arrayed themselves in a military alliance for the purpose of destroying Judah. God had answered Jehoshaphat's prayer by telling him to send a choir instead of an army. When the choir began to sing the praises unto the Lord, the Lord sent confusion into the camp of the enemy and they began to slay one another which resulted in a victory for Judah without any casualties.

The scene in Revelation 17:16 has its roots in Ezekiel 23 when God was pronouncing a judgment upon Aholibah which was a symbolic name for Judah. (Ezek 23:22 KJV) Therefore, O Aholibah, thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will raise up thy lovers against thee, from whom thy mind is alienated, and I will bring them against thee on every side; Since Judah did not learn from Israel going into captivity, God Himself was going to raise up the enemies which were once their lovers. Judah had played the harlot with the surrounding nations but now instead of them being her lovers, they are going to be her destroyers. This is the same situation that is happening to the whore who rode the beast. The ten kings will destroy her by the command of God just as Judah went into captivity for seventy years by the command of God. What was once the lovers of Judah had now become the enemy. The whore and the ten kings had one mind to serve the beast but now there is dissension and the whore will be destroyed by the ten kings.

#### Make her desolate

(Ezek 23:32 KJV) Thus saith the Lord GOD; Thou shalt drink of thy sister's cup deep and large: thou shalt be laughed to scorn and had in derision; it containeth much.

#### And naked

(Ezek 23:29 KJV) And they shall deal with thee hatefully, and shall take away all thy labour, and shall leave thee naked and bare: and the nakedness of thy whoredoms shall be discovered, both thy lewdness and thy whoredoms.

#### Eat her flesh

(Ezek 23:10 KJV) These discovered her nakedness: they took her sons and her daughters, and slew her with the sword: and she became famous among women; for they had executed judgment upon her.

#### Burn her with fire

(Ezek 23:25 KJV) And I will set my jealousy against thee, and they shall deal furiously with thee: they shall take away thy nose and thine ears; and thy remnant shall fall by the sword: they shall take thy sons and thy daughters; and thy residue shall be devoured by the fire.

#### (Rev 17:17 KJV)

For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

This verse takes us back to 17:1 where we are told that we will see the judgment of the great whore. It is God who is setting the stage for the final judgment and this Scripture is showing us that God has the authority to position the enemy and will continue to direct all



of the activities until the end finally comes. We also saw that God was directing the final forces in the battle of Armageddon as He gathered the kings of the east to the great final conflict. This verse is very important since it shows us that the kingdom of Satan serves the purpose of God and has no authority over the Kingdom of God. Throughout the ages, God had allowed the kingdom of Satan to harass the Kingdom of God but Satan never had any true victory over God's people.

**(Rev 17:18 KJV)**

And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

The woman is specifically identified with the great city which is Mystery Babylon, which is the kingdom of Satan that has rule over all the unbelievers in the world. There is no middle ground, either a person belongs to God's Kingdom or they belong to Satan's kingdom.

[Back](#)

Revelation 18:1-6

**(Rev 18:1 KJV)**

And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.

The word "lightened" carries with it the meaning of "bring to light, reveal, or enlighten." This angel is another one of the messengers which God had dispatched concerning the fall of Babylon. This angel also had great power (authority) and his power was given to him directly from God because his glory had enlightened the earth. The enlightening he brings will enlighten the believers throughout all the earth because now is the judgment of Babylon, the kingdom of Satan, the archenemy of Christians will be falling for the last time. It is the revelation that the body of Christ has been waiting for since this kingdom was formed.

**(Rev 18:2 KJV)**

And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

(Isa 13:19-22 KJV) And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. {20} It shall never be inhabited, neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation: neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there; neither shall the shepherds make their fold there. {21} But wild beasts of the desert shall lie there; and their houses shall be full of doleful creatures; and owls shall dwell there, and satyrs shall dance there. {22} And the wild beasts of the islands shall cry in their desolate houses, and dragons in their pleasant palaces: and her time is near to come, and her days shall not be prolonged.

As God gave Isaiah the prophecy that physical Babylon would become a waste and that it would be filled with all kinds of animals rather than being a world power, God is going to do the same thing to the kingdom of Satan. Verse 2 is a prophecy of what is going to happen to spiritual Babylon as it progresses toward the last day. The word "fallen" in the

Greek is in the Aorist tense which tells us that sometime in the future the prophecy of the end of Babylon will be a definite fulfillment. It has become the habitation (the dwelling place or abode) for demons. It is also the hold of every unclean spirit. The word "hold" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "prison."

(Isa 14:17 KJV) That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners?

Isaiah 14:12-18 teaches us that Satan has held unbelievers as prisoners in his kingdom. It is the same way that those who rebelled against God with Satan are prisoners whose final destination is hell. They are literally on eternal death row. Then we are told that Babylon was also the habitation of unclean and hateful birds. Normally birds in the Bible can have the meaning of birds of prey such as the eagle. These birds would look for easy prey as demons would look for easy prey, those who are easily deceived into false gospels and religions. These birds would represent the evil which permeates Babylon. Now that judgment has come to her, the stripping away of all her fine outerwear and facades will only reveal the true nature of what this kingdom is really like.

### **(Rev 18:3 KJV)**

For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

This verse shows us the scope of Babylon and that it is a worldwide kingdom and not a localized location. For the verse tells us that all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. All the nations that have fornication with this kingdom will also come under judgment because you cannot judge the source of something without judging the outlet. Then the verse states that the kings of the earth have fornication with her. This means that the leaders of nations have committed fornication with Babylon. Then we are introduced to a new class of people who have committed fornication with Babylon and that is the merchants of the world. We must realize that the world's economic systems are an integral part of the way the world operates and that economic system has brought about the bankruptcy of many nations and people. The word in the Greek for "delicacies" may also be translated as "sensuality, wantonness, pride." The word "delicacies" was probably used to translate this word because of people becoming addicted to pleasure or sensual delights. Many have become rich through the evil systems of this world. The merchants and the kings have all profited well from being intimately involved with the world system. Babylon will now be judged for her entrapment of the kings and merchants with her idolatry. Those in the world who did not do business with the beast system would not enjoy the great earthly rewards that it would give them and therefore the temptation to avoid the beast system was too much.

### **(Rev 18:4 KJV)**

And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

This verse gives us the reason why God commands His people to come out of that system. First, so we should not be partakers of her sins. (1 John 2:15 KJV) Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. God is reminding the believers that live on earth that we are not to partake of the evil beast system. We are to love God more than we love the world. Secondly, God tells us that we should not partake of her sins so we will not receive of the plagues that will be inflicted upon Babylon. The word "plagues" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "calamity, stroke, or blow" which carries the meaning of judgments that will come upon it.

This verse is also a two-fold calling of the believers. The first calling would be the calling unto salvation of the Elect of God and then the second calling would be out of the world on the last day when the final judgment comes on Babylon. That is also when all the unbelievers will be removed from the earth for judgment.

**(Rev 18:5 KJV)**

For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

The sins of Babylon have now reached their limit and the cup is full which means that the judgment of God is imminent. (Jer 51:7 KJV) Babylon hath been a golden cup in the LORD'S hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. That golden cup in the Lord's hands is the sins of Babylon reaching its fullness and now it is time for her to be requited for her evil which she has brought upon the whole world. It is not that God had forgotten about the iniquities of Babylon, but this is language to state that God is now dealing with Babylon in the area of the final judgment and that system will soon be coming to an end, then the prayers of the martyrs that we saw in Chapter 6 will be complete.

**(Rev 18:6 KJV)**

Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double.

Just as Babylon rewarded the true believer with persecution and death, Babylon will now receive the reward of death. This verse is telling us that Babylon is going to be paid back and that payment is going to be doubled. Babylon is going to receive a full requital for the evil it performed on the body of Christ. (Jer 50:29 KJV) Call together the archers against Babylon: all ye that bend the bow, camp against it round about; let none thereof escape: recompense her according to her work; according to all that she hath done, do unto her: for she hath been proud against the LORD, against the Holy One of Israel. Just as earthly Babylon was to be judged according to all her evil actions, the spiritual Babylon is also going to be judged in the same manner it doled out its evilness but it will receive double for her actions. Babylon is going to receive a severe form of punishment and as we go on we will see that this form of punishment is going to be the complete judgment and destruction of it. As it tried to destroy the body of Christ and had created many martyrs, yet the body of Christ continued to flourish, yet Babylon will be destroyed in a final blow because of its attempt to destroy the body of Christ. What it tried to do will be requited to it two-fold resulting in total destruction.

[Back](#)

Revelation 18:7-14

**(Rev 18:7 KJV)**

How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

This verse is a basic list of indictments against the kingdom of Satan. First, this kingdom

has glorified itself. In the temptation of Christ, Satan had offered Him the kingdoms of the world if He would worship him. The glory of the earth is the riches that it holds and Satan had thought that it was his to dole out as he pleased to his followers. Satan has held up his kingdom as if it were the glory of all the universe. If you notice that this verse is telling us that Babylon had glorified itself and another did not glorify it. In fact, the word "hath glorified" means "ascribe glory to, honor, or praise." The world system praises itself because it believes it stands in rulership over the kingdom of God. In Isaiah 14, Satan believed that he would ascend to the heights of the clouds. In other words, that he would be supreme ruler over the world and all the inhabitants.

Satan's kingdom also had great luxuries of this world and this kingdom offers the best of the earth to those who will follow the beast system. Some of the wealthiest people on earth have gained their wealth through nefarious business dealings and have succeeded to corner much of the world's wealth. For this kingdom to live as luxuriously as it has, God has decreed that the torment and sorrow that she will suffer will be equal to the lavish lifestyle she has enjoyed.

The arrogance of this kingdom is equal to the arrogance of its founder. The kingdom states in its heart that she is a queen and is no widow. In Isaiah 14:13, the Bible tells us that Satan had also said in his heart that he would rule this world as it lists the five "I wills" which makes what he is saying from a heart of pride and arrogance. Babylon also states that she is not a widow.

(Isa 47:7-9 KJV) And thou saidst, I shall be a lady for ever: so that thou didst not lay these things to thy heart, neither didst remember the latter end of it. {8} Therefore hear now this, thou that art given to pleasures, that dwellest carelessly, that sayest in thine heart, I am, and none else beside me; I shall not sit as a widow, neither shall I know the loss of children: {9} But these two things shall come to thee in a moment in one day, the loss of children, and widowhood: they shall come upon thee in their perfection for the multitude of thy sorceries, and for the great abundance of thine enchantments.

In Isaiah 47:7-9, we see the same arrogance of this kingdom. It believes it will go on forever and that it will never lose any of its lovers, which are those who dwell upon the earth. Every time a person becomes truly saved the kingdom of Satan is plundered and it loses one of its children. This kingdom also claims it will see no sorrow. This kingdom's sorrows will come in a very short period of time and the sorrows will be in the form of complete destruction. The kingdom of Satan may sit as a queen thinking that she is a sovereign ruler, but shortly she will know that it is not her that is the true ruler but the Lamb of God.

#### **(Rev 18:8 KJV)**

Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

God states that Babylon will be destroyed in one day and that destruction will be death which will create much mourning and famine. The one day does not necessarily mean a 24 hour period but it can mean signify an instant destruction or a little longer time period, either way the destruction of Babylon will be swift. The mourning and famine will be seen in later verses where the merchants of the earth who placed their faith in this system, will now watch it as it is destroyed by fire. Those who once lived greatly within the kingdom of Satan will now be stripped of all those goods which made them think that they would go on forever. (Psa 49:11 KJV) Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, and their dwelling places to all generations; they call their lands after their own names. The unbeliever may hope that their houses will continue forever but there is going to come a day when

the last one will become saved and then the end shall come and that includes the end of the houses of the unbelievers. We also read in this verse that Babylon will be utterly burned. This carries with it the meaning of “to be consumed completely.” Then we read that strong is the Lord God who judgeth her. The word “strong” carries with it the meaning of “powerful, mighty, and able.” This tells us that Babylon will not go down by attrition but God Himself is judging it and will result in total destruction.

**(Rev 18:9 KJV)**

And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning,

Here is the first of the earth's inhabitants making a lamentation over the destruction of Babylon. First, there are the kings of the earth, those who had run the nations of the world will now see that what they placed their faith in was now being destroyed by God whom they spurned and rejected. Now this verse does not state that only those kings of the earth who are living in the last days will see the destruction of the kingdom of Satan but at this point, we are seeing the world under final judgment which means that all the unbelievers who have been in their graves since the beginning of time have now been raised from their graves and are now standing for judgment. Before they are judged for their sins, they are now seeing the destruction of the kingdom they placed their trust in. Since that kingdom could not save them, they are bewailing (weeping) and lamenting (mourning) her because they know that if this kingdom cannot stand and is able to be judged, then they know what lies ahead for them. Especially since they can see the smoke from the great burning which is taking place, they now are fully realizing the end is at hand.

**(Rev 18:10 KJV)**

Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come.

As they are ready for judgment, they stand afar off before the judgment seat of Christ, for the fear of her torment as they see Babylon being tormented in the same manner she tormented the people of God. The day of her final judgment has come. In verse 8, we read that her judgment had come in one day but here we are reading in one hour. This means that her judgment will be swift and complete. As the kings of the earth cry out in torment themselves, all their hopes are now up in smoke as the end is here.

**(Rev 18:11 KJV)**

And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more:

The second lamentation over Babylon is by those who were the merchants of the world. They made their luxurious living out of the kingdom of Satan and just as the kings of the earth, they too placed their trust in this system. Normally when a person is making a lot of money there is no place for God in their lives. This is why these people are lamenting over Babylon, because what they placed their trust in has now been judged and has come to its final end. No longer do they cry out, “who can make war with the beast?” They now weep and mourn because as the great city of Babylon is doomed, so are they. No more merchandise can be sold because there is no more market. The end has come for the merchants too.

**(Rev 18:12-14 KJV)**

**{12}** The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and

marble, {13} And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. {14} And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

Here is the reason that the merchants have wailed because the earth which the Lord created had produced so much bounty. These three verses have basically named some of the biggest industries of the ancient world and also of the modern world. The only difference between the ancient world and modern world is that in the modern world we have different methods of production. Let us look at a few of these industries which today are multi-billion dollar industries and some are multi-trillion dollar industries.

- Gold, silver, precious stones, pearls - Financial markets worldwide
- Fine linen, purple, silk, and scarlet - Clothing industry worldwide
- Thyine wood - A wood from Africa known for its citrus aroma and its beauty - The furniture and building industry
- Vessels of Ivory - Costly plates and statues
- Precious wood - Furniture and Building industry
- Brass and Iron - The metallurgical industry and building industry
- Marble - Expensive embellishments for the building trades
- Cinnamon, oil, wheat, and fine flour - The Foods industry
- Odours, ointments, frankincense - The cosmetics industry
- Wine - The Alcohol industry
- Beasts and sheep and horses - The livestock industry for food
- Chariots - The military establishment and in modern times the automobile industry
- Fruits - The fruit industry which supplies to stores, ice cream plants, candy makers, etc.
- Slaves - In the Roman empire there were approximately 60 million slaves. Today we would call them employees or the labor market and  
with their wages, they refurbish the economy by buying.
- Souls of men - The religion industry is a multi-billion dollar industry. We are not speaking of only the churches but also the many false  
religions in this world which are of the beast system. The souls of men are being bought and sold with the false religious  
systems of this world and their ultimate price will be paid by those who are part of the beast system.

Now we gain a better picture why the merchants of the earth are wailing because they saw all the riches of their desires now being destroyed and what they craved is no longer in existence because the earth has been judged and Babylon has come to an eternal end. These merchants lived luxuriously while engaging in worldwide trade. We see this today as exporting and importing are at an all time high in this world and the merchants of many nations are prospering very well until the day the Lord will judge the entire world.

#### Revelation 18:15-20

##### **(Rev 18:15 KJV)**

The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

The merchants who lived and received their luxuries from Babylon are now standing afar off because of the torment that Babylon is now receiving. They, like the kings of the earth, are weeping and wailing because of the destruction which has come upon the object of their life's desires. Now as they watch the destruction of Babylon, they know that because of their agreement with the beast system and their rejection of God that judgment is coming upon them also.

**(Rev 18:16 KJV)**

And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!

The merchants who thought that their wealth would continue unabated had neglected to take into consideration the fact that it is God who owns this world and not the corporate executive or the banker. (Psa 24:1 KJV) The earth is the LORD'S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein. Now the time has come to purify the earth with fire and remake it new in righteousness. The great abundance of riches and wealth which the Lord placed on this earth became a snare to the unbeliever who worked their whole life to gain as much as they can. What was once a great and wealthy world was now going to be consumed in the flames and that is why those who trust in riches are wailing. (1 Tim 6:17 KJV) Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy; Paul had urged Timothy to warn those that have much earthly goods that there is no way they are going to keep them one minute past their death. This is why the Bible calls riches uncertain because one day you may have them and the next day you will not.

**(Rev 18:17 KJV)**

For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

Here is the third group which is making lamentation over Babylon. It is those who are the ship masters plus all the sailors. The sailors would represent all the unbelievers of the world who do not hold any exalted positions as kings, merchants, or shipmasters. Now all the unbelievers in the world are weeping and wailing as they too watch the destruction of Babylon from the judgment throne of Christ. Every unbeliever had placed their trust in the world system and now they too are seeing that they have been deluded and the day of their judgment has come also. The sea represents the world as we have previously seen. (Isa 17:12-13 KJV) Woe to the multitude of many people, which make a noise like the noise of the seas; and to the rushing of nations, that make a rushing like the rushing of mighty waters! {13} The nations shall rush like the rushing of many waters: but God shall rebuke them, and they shall flee far off, and shall be chased as the chaff of the mountains before the wind, and like a rolling thing before the whirlwind. Any unbeliever, regardless of social rank who has placed their trust in the world system or followed its pernicious ways will suffer the eternal consequences which the beast will also suffer.

**(Rev 18:18 KJV)**

And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city!

As Ezekiel reports, the city of Tyre is going to face a similar judgment when it finally falls at the hand of God's judgment.

(Ezek 27:27 KJV) Thy riches, and thy fairs, thy merchandise, thy mariners, and thy pilots, thy calkers, and the occupiers of thy merchandise, and all thy men of war, that are in thee, and in all thy company which is in the midst of thee, shall fall into the midst of the seas in the day of thy ruin.

Then the people are going to take up a lament concerning the city of Tyre.

(Ezek 27:32 KJV) And in their wailing they shall take up a lamentation for thee, and lament over thee, saying, What city is like Tyrus, like the destroyed in the midst of the sea?

Those who took up a lamentation for the city of Tyre had asked, “what city is like Tyre?” Well those who will be weeping over Babylon will say the same thing because they thought that Babylon was invincible the same way those who lived in Tyre thought their city was invincible and impervious to judgment. Babylon was a great city and held her people in awe with her strength but now the day of reckoning has come and those who trusted in Babylon for their security now wail and lament as they see their earthly god burning in judgment.

#### **(Rev 18:19 KJV)**

And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

These people are not casting dust on their heads in repentance because the day of salvation is now over. They are casting dust on their heads in response to the judgment which has come upon Babylon and which is now coming upon them. Here we are told in one hour she is made desolate which means that God is repeating here that the judgment of Babylon is going to be swift and complete. Even in their lamenting, the thing that is on their mind is the riches they knew when they were living in accord with Babylon. The absence of repentance and the absence of calling upon God is very noticeable here. The unbeliever still lusts after the riches of the earth even while they are facing eternal judgment. (Rev 22:11 KJV) He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. Revelation 22:11 teaches us that the unbeliever will still remain in unbelief and the believer will remain in belief. This is why the merchants last thought is of riches. When Israel came out of Egypt, their thoughts went to the good food they had to eat but they quickly forgot that they were fed well because they were slaves and had to work many hours each day. Unbelievers are tied only to the sensual delights of this world.

#### **(Rev 18:20 KJV)**

Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her.

(Rom 12:19 KJV) Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.

(2 Th 1:8 KJV) In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

Injected into the final judgment upon Babylon is this command to rejoice over its destruction. The word “rejoice” is in the imperative mood which makes it a command. God is commanding all His children to rejoice that the kingdom of evil has now been judged and has been destroyed. This may sound a bit harsh but think of all the evil which Babylon had brought upon the true believer throughout history. (Jer 11:14 KJV) Therefore pray not thou for this people, neither lift up a cry or prayer for them: for I will not hear them in the time that they cry unto me for their trouble. In the Jeremiah verse God is telling Jeremiah not to pray for the people of Judah because they have sinned so greatly that God will not hear their voice. The same principle is found in 18:20 where the people of God are not to be



remorseful over the doom of the kingdom of evil which was the archenemy of the kingdom of God.

#### Revelation 18:21-24

##### **(Rev 18:21 KJV)**

And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

Here we have a mighty angel throwing it into the sea. The millstone was a very heavy stone and it was used for pulverizing grain into flour. Here God is telling us that Babylon is going to be pulverized into nothing, just as a heavy millstone pulverizes grain. Just as the grain goes under the millstone as grain and after the stone rolls over it, it becomes like powder or meal, so will Babylon be under the judging hand of God. It will no longer be a great city with much power but it will become as nothing as it will be ground to powder. (Mat 21:44 KJV) And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. The principle the Lord gives us in Matthew 21 is that when someone falls on the kingdom of God they will be broken, which basically means that they will be broken of sin and become saved. When the stone of the kingdom of God falls on someone, it will grind him to powder which means total destruction and that is the image we have here in 18:21. The words "with violence" are used only one time in the New Testament and in the Greek it carries with it the meaning of "sudden rush or violent impulse," which conveys the meaning that the destruction of Babylon is going to be swift and furious. The millstone is cast into the sea which is the many nations of the earth where the kingdom of Satan dwells.

##### **(Rev 18:22 KJV)**

And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee;

Here is the reality that at one time Babylon was alive with the music of the world, and it was alive with all kinds of craftsmen being busy at their trades, and even those who used a millstone for baking food, will no longer be heard in her because the day of her judgment has come. (Eccl 7:4 KJV) The heart of the wise is in the house of mourning; but the heart of fools is in the house of mirth. The wise in heart, that is those who are saved will mourn, for they have knowledge of the impending judgment of the world. The heart of the fool is in the house of mirth because it is these people who fritter the days away in seeking only enjoyment and wealth but care not for the things of God until it is too late when judgment comes upon them. This is the case of Babylon, she sought only the good times of life and cared nothing to mourn for her sins but now the end has come and the time of eternal mourning is upon her.

##### **(Rev 18:23 KJV)**

And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

Throughout history God has always had a witness in the world. That witness had always been at war with the kingdom of Satan. Here God is telling us that the light of a candle will

no longer shine. (Luke 8:16 KJV) No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. This means no longer will there even be a flicker of the gospel to be taught anymore because the day of salvation is over. Then the bride and bridegroom will no longer be heard which means that the joys of marriage will be absent. This may also refer to the bridegroom who is the Lord Jesus and the bride who is the body of Christ who have now been removed from Babylon as it undergoes total judgment. The body of Christ has ministered and witnessed within the Babylon for thousands of years but now that ministry is done and the time of eternal rest of the Saints has come. Instead of the world embracing the true gospel, it looked to the merchants as their authority but their authority was buying and selling in the beast system which had completely deceived every nation. (Rev 13:17 KJV) And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Only those who were of the beast were able to buy and sell and therefore the people of the earth were part of the beast system because they had the mark of the beast to do business with the beast and therein lies the deception. These evil men had caused people to look elsewhere than to the God of the universe and therefore had deceived the nations of the world.

**(Rev 18:24 KJV)**

And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

Here once again is the indictment of the evil, murderous nature of the kingdom of Satan. It was responsible for the murdering of true believers right from the time of Abel to the last one it will kill before the Lord returns. It was also responsible for not only slaying the Christians but also slaying many who got in its way. Evil will attack evil to gain what it wants. For example, one evil nation will rise up against another evil nation and many will die in the war, especially those who are the poor of the land who normally fight the rich man's wars. The poor soldiers in the armies gain nothing if they win the war and lose everything if they lose the war. As with all wars, only the rich really profit and thereby lies another great deception of the merchants of the earth which we saw in the last verse. God closes this vision with the indictment that the kingdom of Satan is a murderous kingdom and that is why it will be ground to powder because of all its sins against God. (John 8:44 KJV) Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. As the leader, so goes the kingdom!

Revelation 19:1-7

**(Rev 19:1 KJV)**

And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God:

Now begins another vision of John. This verse begins with the many voices in heaven giving glory to God and praising Him because now the final judgment of the great whore has been consummated and vengeance has been meted out because of the cry of all the

martyrs. This rejoicing in heaven can be called a real Hallelujah Chorus. Hallelujah means "Praise the Lord." These voices in heaven are praising the Lord for His redemption and the manner in which He kept all the Saints throughout all the ages. The final act of salvation was ridding the universe of the kingdom of Satan because no more for eternity will the believer ever have to concern themselves with being persecuted as that time has come to an eternal end.

**(Rev 19:2 KJV)**

For true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

The judgments which the Lord pronounced on the great whore was commensurate with the corruptions in which she corrupted the whole earth. When God first created the earth, it was a pristine environment without any sin but after wickedness entered the scene the world became the battlefield between the body of Christ and the kingdom of Satan. The kingdom of Satan had battled the body of believers from the beginning but now she has received the judgments which were so rightly deserved because of her corruptions in which she fornicated with the population of the earth and those fornications contained the blood of many martyrs of the Lord Jesus Christ. Now she has received the blood of the vengeful judgment of God.

**(Rev 19:3 KJV)**

And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

Then once again the praises sing out in heaven as they praise the Lord because the smoke of the judgment on Babylon will now go up forever. This verse is another nail in the teaching that all things will be annihilated after the judgment. If all things are annihilated, then what is burning forever and ever? That smoke represents the eternal torment of those who were part of the kingdom of Satan and who were in accord with the beast who deceived the entire world. This is a warning to Bible teachers that you better know what you are teaching because if you are teaching false doctrine, then you will be aligning yourself with the beast and then if you remain unsaved, your smoke will rise forever and ever also.

**(Rev 19:4 KJV)**

And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia.

Once again we are brought into the throne room where the twenty four elders and the four living creatures prostrate themselves and worship God the Father who sits upon His magnificent throne. Once again the joyous cry of "alleluia" is heard which means "Praise the Lord."

**(Rev 19:5 KJV)**

And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

The voice from the throne is not identified as it could be one of the elders or one of the living creatures. The word "praise" is in the Imperative Mood which means that this is a command coming from the throne. This command to praise the Lord is given to everyone in heaven, both great and small. The "great and small" represents every believer from every social status on earth. No one in heaven is left out because of the positions they held on earth, whether high or low. God views all His children as equal because no matter

what their status was, it took the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ to save every believer. No one became saved outside of the cross.

**(Rev 19:6 KJV)**

And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunders, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

Then we have the fourth hallelujah from the throne and it is the voice as of many waters. Isaiah 17:12-13 speaks of the entire world as the voice of many waters. The scene is in Heaven which means that all of Heaven is rejoicing in praise and that eruption of praise is so mighty it sounds like the voice of many thunders. We have all heard how the sound of thunder fills the heavens during a thunderstorm but that is only a small type of the thunderous praise heard in heaven. This portion of the vision ends just as it started with massive praise to the Lord God.

**(Rev 19:7 KJV)**

Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

Now a different part of the vision is in view, one which focuses on the body of Christ. Here the believers are giving honor to the Lord Jesus Christ because now the consummation of the ages has occurred and the body of believers is now with the bridegroom. The body of Christ is now all gathered together as they are no more separated with some in Heaven and some on earth. All are gathered together in heaven at the marriage of the Lamb. The wife has been made ready by means of Christ's sacrifice on Calvary. In ancient times a marriage consisted of two phases. One was the betrothal and the other the actual wedding. In the period between the betrothal and the wedding, there is a time of separation and that is a time when both parties must be faithful. We saw this when Joseph wanted to privily put Mary away when she was with child. Of course, we know that Mary was faithful and was eventually married to Joseph. It is the same with the body of Christ. The true believers, while on earth, were faithful to the Lord Jesus Christ as we have seen through the ages that they would rather give their life than deny the Lord. Of course, it goes without saying that the Lord Jesus was also faithful in going to the cross to die for His people (Matthew 1:21).

[Back](#)

Revelation 19:8-14

**(Rev 19:8 KJV)**

And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

Just as the bride at a wedding is dressed in white and that dress is made of the finest cloth possible, the body of Christ is symbolically dressed in the finest of linen, which is clean and white. The second half of the verse tells us that the fine linen is the righteousness of the believer and that righteousness is the imputed righteousness of the Lord Jesus Christ for not even the true believer has any righteousness until they become saved and indwelt by the Holy Spirit. (Isa 61:3 KJV) To appoint unto them that mourn in

Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

**(Rev 19:9 KJV)**

And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

John is now being commanded to write this great commendation that those who are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb are blessed. It must be noted that a person is called to the marriage supper and cannot will themselves in as those who believe in free will. (Mat 22:12-13 KJV) And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. {13} Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Only the truly called are the true guests of the Lamb. All are gathered together in heaven at the marriage supper of the Lamb. This is not a big physical feast as some commentators try to sell us but it is symbolic for the body of Christ as the wife and the bridegroom who is the Lord Jesus Christ are married by reason of His sacrifice on Calvary. This marriage supper is symbolic as the body of Christ is now in full righteous regalia in Heaven and now enjoys the most intimate fellowship with the Lord Jesus Christ. Then the messenger tells John that these sayings are the true sayings of God and are not the sayings of anyone else.

**(Rev 19:10 KJV)**

And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

Now here John is prostrating himself before the messenger that is giving him the information. Now I am not so sure that this is an angel for several reasons. The first is that he calls himself "thy fellowservant." This would indicate that this person is of like status with John. The word in the Greek is "sundoulos" which means that he is a fellow servant as the text states. The prefix "sun" in the Greek adds the idea of "being a servant together with others." Now an angel does not have the same status as a believer. Then he says he is "of thy brethren." Angels are not of the brethren, only believers are. Then he states that he has the "testimony of Jesus." That phrase is used five times in Revelation. Rev. 1: 2 & 9 refers to John. Revelation 12:17 refers to believers in general. In Rev. 19:10 it is used twice. Therefore it is highly probable that another brother is giving John this present information. Angels do not carry anything to do with salvation because they were never redeemed as the Elect of God were. Then in the last phrase we read "for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy." The reason for the spirit of prophecy is to bear witness throughout the world for the Lord Jesus Christ. Angels were never witnesses for Christ only the redeemed of God are the true witnesses. Every true believer has the spirit of prophecy as all true believers witness for the Lord Jesus Christ. John is being told by this person not to worship him. In fact, John is being commanded not to worship. Maybe the information that John received was so overwhelming to him that he prostrated himself in front of this person. This is also a very important verse and teaches us that we are never to worship a bible teacher or any human being on earth as so many Christians today have relegated their minds to teachers and preachers.

**(Rev 19:11 KJV)**

And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

Here John begins another vision. If there is one thing we can definitely know about apocalyptic imagery is that it changes very rapidly. Now we go from the marriage supper of the Lamb to the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. John sees the heaven opened and the Lord Jesus Christ is descending to earth pictured riding on a white horse. The white horse represents power and the color represents purity. We are also given the names of the Lord Jesus Christ as Faithful and True, and here we are told that He judges righteously and makes war. In this verse we are looking at another picture of Armageddon which we previously saw in Revelation 16:16. The reason we can associate this verse with Armageddon is because the Lord Jesus is coming on a white horse to judge and "make war." Armageddon is the final battle between the Kingdom of God and the kingdom of Satan. The second coming of Christ was also predicted by the Apostle Paul. (1 Th 4:16-17 KJV) For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: {17} Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. **Matthew also spoke of the second coming of Christ.** (Mat 24:29-30 KJV) Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: {30} And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. Notice in verse 30 we see the tribes of the earth mourn. We saw the people of the earth mourning in Revelation 17 & 18 when the great whore was judged and those who placed their faith in her system were also being judged.

#### **(Rev 19:12 KJV)**

His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

Here John gives another apocalyptic image of Christ. His eyes were as a flame of fire which means that His eyes will see everything and those eyes will see everything pertaining to the final judgment. On His head were many crowns which means that we are being told that He is King of Kings with total and absolute sovereignty. Then we are told that He had a name which only He knew and was kept secret. (Deu 29:29 KJV) The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law. God has revealed many things to His children but this name has been held in secret for some reason known only to God.

#### **(Rev 19:13 KJV)**

And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.

The clothing which He is wearing has been dipped or immersed in blood. It may be referencing two things. The first, is that Christ shed His blood for His people and He is coming back for them in one final gathering. The second implication may mean that He is coming in judgment and the vesture dipped in blood shows that He has been judging the great whore and all her people. The blood represents the judgment of death which is pointing to the second death into the lake of fire. Christ is further identified as the living Word of God. (John 1:1 KJV) In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. (John 1:14 KJV) And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth. It is important that these names be revealed so as not to confuse the Lord Jesus Christ with the imitation rider on the white horse in Revelation 6.

#### **(Rev 19:14 KJV)**

And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine

linen, white and clean.

With the heavens opened the Lord Jesus Christ is leading a great army and this is the army of the believers. We can know this because they are upon white horses and clothed with fine linen, which is white and clean. This description is one of those who have been saved. In Revelation 6:11, the martyrs were given white robes.

#### Revelation 19:15-21

##### **(Rev 19:15 KJV)**

And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

The first point of judgment in this verse is the Lord Jesus Christ is going to smite the nations with the sharp sword. Isaiah had recorded this very prophecy in his book. (Isa 11:4 KJV) But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked. The words of Christ are going to be the criteria in which an unsaved person will be judged. (John 12:48 KJV) He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. John also records this principle in his gospel that the words of the Lord Jesus are going to judge the unbelievers at the last day. Matthew 25:31-46 tells us that all the nations will be gathered before Him and it will be at that time that He shall smite the nations as He judges the unbelievers.

Then we are told that He will rule with a rod of iron. One of the things that a shepherd does is to destroy the enemies of the sheep which he is guarding. In Revelation 17 & 18 we saw the judgment of the kingdom of Satan. Christ has now come to destroy the enemies of the sheep of His pasture. The words "shall rule" in the Greek means "shall shepherd." Not only will He rule with that rod of iron, but He will also execute the winepress of the fierceness of the wrath of God. The word "fierceness" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "fury, great anger, or rage." The second coming of Christ will be anything but joyful to the unbelieving world, it will be devastating.

##### **(Rev 19:16 KJV)**

And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Now a name written on His vesture for all mankind to see proclaims that the Lord Jesus Christ is King of Kings and Lord of Lords. If you notice the verse states "a name" not the name because we already read that there was a name written on His crown which only He knew the meaning of. Now the Lord Jesus does not come as a baby in a manger nor is He the lowly preacher who walks the dusty roads of Palestine. Now He comes back to the world in the most glorious manner as the right sovereign Lord of the universe.

##### **(Rev 19:17 KJV)**

And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the

fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

Here John sees another vision and this vision is one of judgment. Now that the Lord Jesus has come back to the earth, He has raised and raptured all of His Saints and also with that resurrection came the resurrection of the wicked. (John 5:28-29 KJV) Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, {29} And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. An angel standing in the sun is summoning all the fowls that fly in heaven to gather themselves to the great supper of God. First, when we see the sun it sometimes has to do with judgment. (Rev 16:8-9 KJV) And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. {9} And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory. This angel is gathering the fowls of the air which represent judgment as many birds are hunters of prey. We read a similar statement back in Matthew 24. (Mat 24:27-28 KJV) For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. {28} For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together. First, the coming back to the earth of the Lord Jesus and then secondly the eagles will be gathered where the carcase is. The word "carcase" in the Greek is the word "ptoma" which means "dead body." When we read about the supper of the great God we are talking about Judgment Day which is definitely in view and occurs when the Lord Jesus returns the second time.

#### **(Rev 19:18 KJV)**

That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

The birds of prey which is really the judging hand of God is revealing that just as birds of prey eat the flesh of dead animals without regard to what the animal is or how ferocious it was when it was living, the judging hand of God is going to judge all the unbelievers without any discriminating factors. Those who held royal positions on earth and those who did not will be judged at the judgment seat of Christ on an equal basis. No one is going to receive preferential treatment because of the social position they held on earth. The description given of the great supper of God shows what a great contrast to the marriage supper of the Lamb. While on earth the unbelievers had comfort in their beast system and now will be judged and in torment. The believers were persecuted on earth and now are comforted at the marriage supper for eternity with the Lord Jesus Christ. The great supper of God shows that there is no distinction among any unbelievers and all of them will come into final judgment.

#### **(Rev 19:19 KJV)**

And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

Here is a picture of the final battle. The beast in all its arrogance along with all those who were in accord with its kingdom attempt to fight the Lord Jesus and the believers in a final battle which takes us back to Armageddon. The first coming of the Lord Jesus Christ had spelled a future doom for the kingdom of Satan but the second coming of Christ spelled the eternal end of that kingdom forever and this is why the beast is coming with all its fury to attempt to overthrow the King of Kings but it will not happen. What we see in this verse is not a slow but sure defiance of the Kingdom of God but it is a final all encompassing battle between the Kingdom of God and the kingdom of Satan. Here the beast attempts a once for all victory over the Lord but fails, never to rise again.



**(Rev 19:20 KJV)**

And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

The first two members of the unholy triumvirate, the beast and false prophet were now cast alive into the lake of fire which means they are there forever and will never again make war against the believers, also the fact they are cast alive into the lake of fire shows that annihilation is not in view. This taking of the beast and false prophet tells us that this battle was short one. At this time, Satan is not cast into the lake of fire. The beast was the greatest deceiver because he deceived all those who were members of the kingdom of Satan plus he had built the image of deception in the different phases of life. He exchanged evolution for creation. He exchanged the existence of God for atheism. He exchanged the laws of God for the laws of man. He exchanged biblical theology for humanistic philosophy.

**(Rev 19:21 KJV)**

And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

After the beast and false prophet are thrown alive into the lake of fire, those who followed them are now sentenced to the same place. The fact that they are killed with the sword means they are facing the second death. In Revelation 19:15 we are told that the nations were smitten with the sharp sword which comes out of the mouth of the Lord Jesus and here those who were members of the beast system are also smitten by the same word which had smitten the nations of the world. (John 12:48 KJV) He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. The Lord had given that principle to John back in his Gospel. Then we are told that the fowls were filled with their flesh which teaches us that the judgment of these beast and false prophet followers is completed since their flesh is inside of the fowls. Of course, the fowls are symbolic for the final judgment of the unbelievers but the fact that the fowls are filled with their flesh teaches us that it is total judgment.

Revelation 20:1-5

**(Rev 20:1 KJV)**

And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

Now John is seeing an angel descend from heaven having a chain in his hand along with the key of the bottomless pit. In this verse we will focus on the word "key." It is the Greek word "kleis" and is used only six times in the New Testament. All six times it is figuratively used in binding.

Matthew 16:19 - Keys of the kingdom of Heaven

Luke 11:52 - Keys of knowledge

Revelation 1:18 - The Keys of Hell and Death

Revelation 3:7 - Key of David (open and shut)  
Revelation 9:1 - Key of the bottomless pit  
Revelation 20:1 - Key of bottomless pit

In these six uses, there is a reference to opening and shutting in a figurative sense. Since these are not a literal set of keys, we must be careful to interpret the passage in the light of its symbolic usage. Now if the key is symbolic, we may safely conclude the chain is also symbolic. The word for "chain" is used eleven times in the New Testament and always with a sense of binding action. For example, in Acts 12:6, Peter was literally bound with chains between two soldiers. The chain we read about in Revelation 20:1 is symbolic for the gospel itself as we will see why in the following verses.

#### **(Rev 20:2 KJV)**

And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

We have already seen that the beast and false prophet are in the lake of fire and now the focus turns to Satan himself. Satan has not been bound in a literal sense but that he can no longer prevent someone from becoming saved. Satan was bound at the cross and is helpless to prevent God's chosen elect from becoming saved. Before the cross very few were saved but since the cross Satan could no longer blind the minds of God's elect, therefore, thousands were saved. This is why the Gospel is both a binding chain and freedom from prison. It is a binding chain in the sense that Satan is powerless to prevent God's Elect from being saved, thus it is like he is bound with a chain. Those who have become saved have been freed from Satan's prison (Isaiah 14:12-17).

We see this principle in Matthew 12:29 where we see Satan represented as a strong man. (Mat 12:29 KJV) Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house. Whenever a person becomes saved, they are in essence plundering the house of Satan. That person goes from becoming a child of Satan to a child of God. It is also important to note that the word "bound" is in the Aorist Active Indicative which means it is a past one time action with a future completion date and not a sole future event. Many espouse the belief that Satan will be bound with a big chain at a future date, but the Bible has revealed that the binding is a past action which continues on until he is loosed at the end of the New Testament period for a little season. According to the Bible, if the binding was a past action, then one of the two following scenarios must apply: First, if it is a literal thousand years, then Satan must have been loosed already since it is about two thousand years since Christ; secondly, if the Aorist tense of the word "bound" is true, and it is if it is in the Bible, then the act of binding was a past event. This can only mean that the thousand years represents the whole New Testament period minus a small space of time right before the Lord's return therefore it is not a literal time period.

#### **(Rev 20:3 KJV)**

And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

Here we have the word "cast" in the Aorist Active Indicative (aai) form. The next word is "shut" which is a cognate of the word "key" in verse one. (Cognates are words that stem from a common root word.) This word is also in the (aai) form, which means the shutting up or binding was a past action. Remember, we previously saw that Satan cannot hinder those who will become saved because he is restrained by God. The figure of casting, shutting, and sealing are symbolic of this action. The word "seal" is also in the Aorist tense

and carries with it the meaning of "seal up, stop, keep secret." All of this confirms what we previously stated, that Satan was bound at the cross.

This verse continues to say that this binding will remain till the thousand years are fulfilled. The word "deceive" is in the Aorist subjunctive active form, which indicates a past action which is conditional upon a situation. God is restraining the activity of Satan during the entire New Testament period until he is freed to make a final war right before the return of Christ. We seem to be very close to the loosing of Satan, if he has not been loosed already, because at present we are witnessing a dramatic increase of satanic activity both inside and outside of the church.

#### **(Rev 20:4 KJV)**

And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

Now the vision of John switches from the devil to the Christians in Heaven. We know this because they did not worship the beast, neither his image, nor did they have his mark upon them. Only the true Christians would have nothing to do with the beast system since it was in opposition to the Kingdom of God.

The first part of this verse deals with the fact that Christians will be partaking in some type of judgment, especially at the last day. (1 Cor. 6:2-3) The verse states that the believer "sat" upon thrones. "Sat" is also in the (aai). Throughout the ages as people became saved, they began to reign with Christ at the very moment. Is that biblical? According to Ephesians 2:6 it is:

(Eph 2:6 KJV) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

They immediately began to reign in their soul essence, as verse 4 states, John saw the souls of these believers, not their bodies, and these souls were upon thrones. John saw the believers in their glorified state. In Revelation 6, we had seen the martyrs who were given white robes and told to rest until the rest of those who were to be killed, were killed.

The first part of verse 4 seems to pointing to the believers who were not martyred since John mentions the martyrs in a separate instance. The first part of this verse may also include those believers who are still on earth but hold the position of royalty in Heaven at the same time. We are children of God, Kings and Priests, so that would mean we would have thrones from which to rule. As for the extent of that rule, that remains a mystery.

Now a serious question must be posed. If everything we have studied so far in these four verses points to a past action which is still in effect, then at what point does the thousand year reign begin if it is literal, since believers have been dying everyday since the time of the cross?

The Bible will not allow a future literal millennium because all of its language points to a time past. Now if the believer is raised at the time of salvation, then this would mean that the thousand year reign for each believer begins at the time of their salvation and not a future golden reign. We may also safely conclude that the spiritual reign of the totality of believers will end on the last day, in reference to the thousand year reign not eternity, because the believer will continue to reign with Christ throughout eternity. If a Christian is

saved the day before Christ returns, that believer is reigning with Christ in the thousand years just the same as the believer who became saved in 113 A.D.

**(Rev 20:5 KJV)**

But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

In this verse we read when the resurrection of all people will occur. The Bible is very clear that the resurrection of both the believers and unbelievers will be on the last day. (John 5:28-29 KJV) Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, {29} And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. (John 12:48 KJV) He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

So we see that the thousand year reign and the New Testament period are the same, since the resurrection is stated as being at the end of both. This verse also points out the unbelievers, "the rest of the dead," will not be raised till the thousand years are completed. So till that time, where do they go? Psalm 115:17 tells us:

(Psa 115:17 KJV) The dead praise not the LORD, neither any that go down into silence.

This verse shows us that the unsaved dead go to a place of silence until the resurrection. I do not know where this place is but God declares it is a place of silence. The word "silence" in the Hebrew means "to be dumb." It is figuratively used as "death." So the unbeliever is in a place of silence which is comparable to the silence of death until the last day. The balance of this verse continues to speak of the first resurrection but I will include this study in verse 6.

Revelation 20:6-10

**(Rev 20:6 KJV)**

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

In this verse we will discover what the first resurrection is. The Bible clearly teaches a single, general resurrection and we must seek to understand if the first resurrection is something different from a resurrection of believers. Let us explore some unique characteristics of the first resurrection. The key to understanding the first resurrection is in the part of this verse which states, "on such the second death has no power."

Who is unaffected by the second death, which is a synonym for judgment and hell? Only the born again Christian is unaffected by judgment because Christ has already paid for our sins. Therefore, our abode will be heaven not hell. Every born again Christian on earth has experienced the first resurrection. I saw a famous Pre-trib theologian on a talk show mockingly put down this biblical view by saying something has to be dead before it can be resurrected. He offered no alternative teaching but just a pseudo-intellectual put down.

I am glad he said it because it is based on truth, whether he knows or not. Let us look at Ephesians 2:1-3:

(Eph 2:1-3 KJV) And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins: {2} Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: {3} Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

We read in verse 1 that we were dead in our sins. It seems that something was dead, and it was us. Now were we physically dead or spiritually dead? The answer is simple, we were spiritually dead. Paul tells us that we walked in the deadness of our sins, until something happened. We read in Ephesians 2:5:

(Eph 2:5 KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

God made us alive or resurrected our dead souls. The phrase "quickened us together" may also be translated "to make alive together." That theologian who mockingly discounted this truth should have done his homework and would have discovered that something was dead, and was made alive. When you received Christ, did your physical body change? Of course not, but you did receive your resurrected soul, and before you did, you were dead to the things of God, whereas now you are alive to the things of God. Let us look again at Ephesians 2:6:

(Eph 2:6 KJV) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

As a result of being made alive, we are raised up to sit together with Christ in heaven, as if we are already up there reigning with Him. The rest of Rev. 20:6 tells us that we are on the right track since when a person becomes saved, they become: priests of God and Christ (1 Peter 2:5); blessed (Eph. 1:3); and holy (Eph. 1:4). So as we see the believer is already reigning with Christ as a result of their position, and since this reigning is in effect at present, it also tells us that the thousand year reign is also in effect at present. The two cannot be separated.

### **(Rev 20:7 KJV)**

And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

In this verse of our study, it reveals that right at the end of time Satan will be allowed to continue his deceptions. He may blind the minds of the people of the world on a grander scale. This is how God will wind down His salvation program by saving less and less toward the last day. When God saves the last one, then this will usher in the last day, and then the prophetic events will unfold rapidly and it will be the end of recorded history. We are very close to the end as we see the increase in false gospels and New Age philosophies creeping into the church and are being embraced by both clergy and congregations.

When it says that Satan will be loosed out of his prison, it is telling us that the great chain which kept him tied has now been taken out of the way which is the Holy Spirit who applies salvation to the Elect. (2 Th 2:7 KJV) For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. Satan will no longer be hindered as he makes the final attempt to make war against the Lord Jesus Christ and the body of believers. The Holy Spirit has been taken out of the way as the great restrainer of evil because now comes the final battle with Satan and he must be allowed to muster whatever forces he can for this battle.

**(Rev 20:8 KJV)**

And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

After Satan is loosed out of his prison, he is allowed once again to deceive the nations. In Ezekiel 38 and 39, Gog and Magog were nations who were going to come against Israel. Magog was a nation from the north. Here though, Gog and Magog are representing the entire world. This verse tells us that Satan is going to attempt to muster every evil spirit he can to come to the great and final battle. We saw this battle previously as Armageddon. Satan will apparently be able to muster a countless number of demons who will attempt one final battle against the Kingdom of God. This deception right before the return of Christ will see many false religions and false gospels come into existence. If you notice that Satan's last weapon in his repository is deception, so the extreme final days of earth will produce pandemic deception in the area of the gospel as he will try and make one major attempt to attack the body of believers by trying to deceive them.

**(Rev 20:9 KJV)**

And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

This verse teaches us that Satan will make one last great sweep of the earth in an attempt to deceive all the nations with his false religions and false gospels. His main point of attack will be the body of Christ where he will attempt to separate the believer from the Lord Jesus Christ through false teachings. The camp of the Saints and the beloved city are one and the same as both describe the body of believers. The camp is where the body of believers dwell on earth but they are part of the beloved city, the New Jerusalem which is the body of believers. Then comes the end for Satan. God then sends fire down from heaven and devours Satan and all his cohorts. The word for "devoured" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "destroy or consume." It is the end for Satan and all of his evil.

**(Rev 20:10 KJV)**

And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

The end for Satan has come as it previously had for the beast and the false prophet. Satan is not even going to have a trial because he is guilty beyond doubt for all the evil and hatred and murder and every other kind of sin brought on the human race from Eden to the end. Satan is cast into the lake of fire and there he will suffer torment forever and ever. The term "day and night" signifies that the torment will be constant without even a slight chance of relief.

Revelation 20:11-15

**(Rev 20:11 KJV)**

And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

Now comes the judgment of the unbelievers. John sees a great white throne and because

the earth and universe are still under sin curse, they are seen as fleeing from the Lord Jesus Christ. There will be no future place for a sin cursed world and universe. If you recall in Revelation 18 we saw many people standing afar off watching the great whore be destroyed. Here we are seeing a parallel picture of it. The unbelievers are standing before the judgment throne of Christ and are seeing their beloved kingdom fade as it is judged. They may be seeing the complete dissolution of the earth and entire universe as it will be remade in righteousness once the final judgment of the unbelievers has been completed.

**(Rev 20:12 KJV)**

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

Now John sees the final judgment of all the unbelievers in the world. There will be no favoritism based upon anyone's status they held in the world. Both the small and the great will be standing for judgment as all will be equal at this judgment. The books which were opened are the ones which recorded the lives of each individual. Of course, God knows perfectly the lives of every human being but these books are symbolically being used to inform everyone that everything that they do in this life will have an accountability factor. Not only were the books opened which contained the works of each person but also the book of life was opened. This book of life is the lamb's Book of Life which contains the names of every one of the redeemed of God. (Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. (Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

**(Rev 20:13 KJV)**

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

The reward of a works gospel is judgment! Since we already saw that the earth had been destroyed because it "fled away" from the Lamb on His throne, the language in this verse is teaching us that the resurrection is going to be total. No matter where a person died or what shape their body was in at death, they would be resurrected. Some people choose to be cremated and have their ashes poured over some symbolic site but it will not matter because they will be resurrected to stand at the judgment in the last day. The sea would have delivered up all its dead at the final resurrection and it does not matter if a fish ate the body, they will be resurrected. Death will give up all the people because not even death has a stronger hold than the Lord Jesus Christ and the dead will become the living again. Hell, which in this instance represents the grave, will forfeit its hold on everyone and all those who were buried will be brought back to life to face the judgment. Those who commit suicide in belief that all their problems will end will soon find out that all their problems have just begun.

**(Rev 20:14 KJV)**

And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

Here we read that both death and hell will be cast into the lake of fire. No longer will there be any sin, so the consequences of sin which is hell and death will also be cast into the lake of fire. This is called the second death or eternal damnation. (1 Cor 15:26 KJV) The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. The Apostle Paul had given us prior knowledge that death would be the last enemy and in 20:14 we see that death will be destroyed. No

longer will anyone die in the New Heaven and New Earth because only the redeemed of God will be there and they have been granted eternal life through the shed blood of the Lord Jesus Christ.

**(Rev 20:15 KJV)**

And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

Death and Hell have now been cast into the lake of fire and now anyone who is not written in the Lamb's Book of Life will also be cast into the lake of fire. It must be noted here that this verse does not say, "And whosoever did not accept Jesus was cast into the lake of fire." The ones who will become truly saved are only those who were written in the Lamb's book of life from before the foundation of the world. No one will be able to will themselves into Heaven because free will does not exist. The lake of fire is the final abode of the wicked of this world. No one who opposed Christianity on this earth will ever get away with it, all unbelievers will be accountable to God for their actions. Part of the great deception of Satan is that he gets people to believe there is no God and therefore no accountability for their actions. These few verses at the end of Revelation 20 should serve to neutralize that lie.

Revelation 21:1-7

**(Rev 21:1 KJV)**

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

Here John begins a new vision and it is now that of the New Heaven and the New Earth which will be the eternal abode of the true believers. The verse tells us that the first earth and heaven has passed away because they were sin cursed and they were the home of Satan, the beast, and the false prophet. The New earth has no sea. The seas were a definite remnant of the flood of Noah and here we see there is no sea which means that there is no more reminders of judgment in the new earth since it is going to be a place of total righteousness because all the evil has been burned up. (2 Pet 3:10 KJV) But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. All evil and its remnants has gone the way of the flame as the universe is purged of evil.

**(Rev 21:2 KJV)**

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

Here John sees the new Jerusalem descending out of heaven. This new Jerusalem is the body of believers in their entirety. They are spoken of as a city and we can be sure of this because it is called a bride adorned for her husband and the body of Christ is the bride of Christ.

(Heb 11:10 KJV) For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

(Heb 12:22 KJV) But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,



(Heb 13:14 KJV) For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.

These three verses all show us that when we become saved, we are part of that city of the living God and it is a continuing city, plus it is the city which God built. That means salvation was all of Him and we had nothing to do with it. Back In Galatians 4:26, the heavenly Jerusalem was already mentioned as the mother of us all. It is the new Jerusalem which gives spiritual birth to the believer. (Gal 4:26 KJV) But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. The name "Jerusalem" means "possession of peace." Whenever God speaks of the body of believers, He speaks of them in the context of peace. That is, we have peace with God for eternity because when we became saved the war between us and God was over. (Rom 5:1 KJV) Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

#### **(Rev 21:3 KJV)**

And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

Here we read in this verse that God is now dwelling among His people for eternity. No longer is there any type of separation between God and His people. This dwelling among them is now a permanent thing. John heard a great voice out of heaven which is building upon verse 2 which calls the body of believers a holy city and here we have a further explanation of who that city is, it is the people of God. This verse is rooted in a verse back in Leviticus. (Lev 26:11-12 KJV) And I will set my tabernacle among you: and my soul shall not abhor you. {12} And I will walk among you, and will be your God, and ye shall be my people. In Leviticus, God had already written that He would tabernacle among the people of Israel but in Rev. 21:3, we have the ultimate fulfillment of that promise which is for eternity.

#### **(Rev 21:4 KJV)**

And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

One of the great characteristics of the new heaven and earth, is that there will be nothing which will cause any sorrow anymore. (Psa 16:11 KJV) Thou wilt show me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore. All of the suffering and the trials which the believers had suffered in the old order has now been eternally abolished. Things like sorrow, tears, pain, and death are all part of the former life and are passed away forever. (1 Cor 15:54 KJV) So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. What a glorious future for the believer!

#### **(Rev 21:5 KJV)**

And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.

Here is God declaring that He is going to make all things new. The very Creator of the first earth and universe is now going to recreate it in total righteousness and purity. He commands John to write these words because they are true and faithful, which means that it will come to pass. In fact, if God spoke it, it is as good as if it had been completed already. (Titus 1:2 KJV) In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;

**(Rev 21:6 KJV)**

And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

When the Lord Jesus Christ was on the cross, He said "It is finished." The final sacrifice for sin had now taken place and the only thing left was for the church to go out and evangelize the world and bring in all God's Elect. Here God states concerning the New Heaven and New Earth, that "It is done." Just as the Son completed God's salvation plan, God Himself has completed the recreating of the New Heaven and New Earth. God is called, the Alpha and Omega, which are the beginning and ending letters of the Greek Alphabet. By using these terms, God is telling us that all things begin with Him and all things have their completion (end) in Him. Then a great promise is made that those who thirst will be given the water of life freely. (Mat 5:6 KJV) Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. The only ones who will thirst after righteousness are those whom the Lord named from the foundation of the world as they will be the only ones who will be spiritually qualified to hear and understand the true Gospel and with that understanding will come salvation. This is not an academic understanding but a spiritual understanding.

**(Rev 21:7 KJV)**

He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

The one who overcomes is the true believer. We have seen this word used in all of the letters to the seven churches that those who overcome will have promises of eternal life. We overcome through the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. God promises that those who become saved will be children of God, as He will be their God and they shall be His son. (Rom 8:37 KJV) Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. The words "more than conquerors" is the same word used for "overcometh." Through the blood of Christ, we are not only called conquerors but called more than conquerors.

Revelation 21:8-14

**(Rev 21:8 KJV)**

But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

This verse starts out with the word "but" which means there is a contrast between the previous verse which speaks of the true believer and this verse which speaks of the unbeliever. First of all, we must disregard the idea that this verse is speaking of Christians. There is nothing written in Scripture that teaches that a Christian could possibly lose their salvation. The Bible is very clear that when a person becomes saved, they are saved for all eternity. This verse is speaking of the unbelievers because it speaks of them having their part in the lake of fire which is the second death. The second death has no effect upon the true believers as we saw in Revelation 20:5-6. Those who believe that a person can lose their salvation do not have an understanding of the sacrifice of Christ and what it accomplished in the life of the true believer.

**(Rev 21:9 KJV)**

And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the bride, the Lamb's wife.

Now one of the seven angels which had the vials of the last seven plagues now comes to John with a more pleasant task. He now tells John to come to where he is and he is going to show him the bride of Christ which is the Lamb's wife. This would be the entire body of believers.

**(Rev 21:10 KJV)**

And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

The angel takes John away in the spirit to a great and high mountain. This mountain is not a literal mountain but it just shows that John will have an lofty view of the descent of the great city as it descended out of heaven. It was necessary for John to have the best view possible because he must write what he is seeing in this vision. In Scripture, especially in the Old Testament we are introduced to many cities and the inhabitants of those cities are normally identified with those cities and the traits. For example, Ephesus was identified with Diana worship. Rome was identified with Emperor worship. Corinth was identified with disreputable lifestyles. Anyone coming from these three cities would automatically be labeled as being identified with what made the city famous, whether it would be idolatry or a sin-filled lifestyle. Here in Revelation we are going to receive a city type view of the body of believers as we received a temple view of the body of believers in Ezekiel 40-48 which was representative of Christ building the temple of the body of believers. The true believers are identified with the New Jerusalem.

**(Rev 21:11 KJV)**

Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;

The glory of God in this verse represents his presence as we have seen that He is now among the believers. (Ezek 43:5 KJV) So the spirit took me up, and brought me into the inner court; and, behold, the glory of the LORD filled the house. Ezekiel had the same type of vision that John did when he was seeing the temple of God which was the future body of believers in their perfection. In Revelation 4:3, we saw that the Jasper stone was as clear as crystal even though the normal characteristic of a Jasper stone is that it is opaque. Here we are told that the light was like the Jasper stone which represents the absolute purity of God because it is clear as crystal. No longer will there be anything hidden because there are no more mysteries and that is why the Jasper stone is seen as being clear as crystal instead of opaque.

**(Rev 21:12 KJV)**

And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel:

(Ezek 48:30-35 KJV) And these are the goings out of the city on the north side, four thousand and five hundred measures. {31} And the gates of the city shall be after the names of the tribes of Israel: three gates northward; one gate of Reuben, one gate of Judah, one gate of Levi. {32} And at the east side four thousand and five hundred: and three gates; and one gate of Joseph, one gate of Benjamin, one gate of Dan. {33} And at the south side four thousand and five hundred measures: and three gates; one gate of Simeon, one gate of Issachar, one gate of Zebulun. {34} At the west side four thousand and five hundred, with their three gates; one gate of Gad, one gate of Asher, one gate of Naphtali. {35} It was round about eighteen thousand measures: and the name of the city

from that day shall be, The LORD is there.

There is great similarity between the city which Ezekiel saw in his vision and the city which John saw. Each one of the twelve gates has the name of a tribe of Israel. In Revelation 7, where God stated that there were 12,000 from every tribe in Israel, we noticed that Dan was missing but in Ezekiel, the tribe of Dan is included. Once again we must remember that there were more than 12 tribes so what we have in view here represented by the number 12, is the fullness of what is in view. God is using the number 12 to teach us that the New Jerusalem will have the fullness of the number of Elect Jews which God had promised which he would save out of Israel. (Isa 10:22 KJV) For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness. (Isa 37:32 KJV) For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of mount Zion: the zeal of the LORD of hosts shall do this.

**(Rev 21:13 KJV)**

On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates.

Each side had three gates which means we are looking at a perfectly constructed wall about the city. This is the same construction that Ezekiel saw because he also saw three gates on each side. (Ezek. 48:30-35)

**(Rev 21:14 KJV)**

And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

Now we are seeing that the wall had twelve foundations and in them the name of all the Apostles. Ancient cities had walls surrounding them which gave a sense of security to the citizens by helping keep out invaders. The wall here is built for the purpose of showing the universality of the body of Christ because it has twelve foundations and twelve gates into the city, three on each side with four sides. Four is the number of universality showing that God saved people out of every nation in the world. These twelve names represent the fullness of all the Gentiles which will be brought in to the Kingdom of God until the last day.

(Eph 2:19-22 KJV) Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; {20} And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; {21} In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: {22} In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

In the Ephesians passage we see that true Christians are called fellow citizens who are built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets with Jesus Christ being the chief corner stone. Then we read that these building blocks, which are the true believers, are fit together. The words "fitly framed" means "being fitted together." In verse 22, the words "builded together" carries with it the meaning of "are being built together." So all the believers in the world, whether Jew or Gentile, are being both fitted and built together until we attain the fullness of the body of Believers. We see this fullness in Rev. 21:14 with the twelve foundations which represent the fullness. Ephesians tells us that the body is being built and fit, and Revelation tells us that the body is completed.

[Back](#)

## Revelation 21:15-21

### **(Rev 21:15 KJV)**

And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

In Revelation 11:1-2, John was given a reed to measure the temple of God but here the angel had a golden reed and he is to use it to measure the city, the gates, and the wall. Again we see this as a symbolic measurement. In Revelation 11:2, John was told to leave out the court outside the temple but here the measurement is going to be done and nothing will be left out. This city would be too magnificent for any human builder to build and that is why we can know from this description that this city was made by God without any human hands plus it is an apocalyptic description of the body of believers.

### **(Rev 21:16 KJV)**

And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal.

In many commentaries we are told that the New Jerusalem is going to be a perfect cube which will be suspended between Heaven and Earth. This is erroneous because we are looking at apocalyptic language and to make it literal, where it is not supposed to be literal, will only yield a false interpretation. What we have in view here is a perfect cube and the measurements would be 1500 miles on each side. Now the size is not important here but what is being taught here is that the New Jerusalem is a perfect city without so much as one inch being incorrect. All the measurements are totally equal which means that all who are part of this city are equal in the eyes of God because every redeemed believer had to come through the cross and therefore no one holds a more exalted position. The perfection and equality of this cube is what is in view not living quarters.

### **(Rev 21:17 KJV)**

And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

In the previous verse we are told that the measurements are all equal being 12,000 furlongs which would translate into 1,500 miles. In this verse we are being told that the wall is 144 cubits which would equal 216 feet if we use the cubit as 18 inches. Would that be 144 cubits in height? Length? Breadth? It does not say because we are seeing a figure and not a literal wall with a literal measurement. Remember in Revelation 7 and 14, we were introduced to the 144,000 which represented the fullness of all the believers who were saved from the first to the last. Here we are seeing that the wall is 144 cubits which is 12 X 12. 12 is the number of fullness which is in view. The 144 is given to us here as a reminder that the wall is really the completed body of believers. In Ephesians 2:19-22, we read that the believers are being fit and built together which would be symbolized by the construction of some type of edifice, and in this case it would be the wall because it is being spoken of as 144 cubits which represents the fullness of what is in view.

### **(Rev 21:18 KJV)**

And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

In Revelation 4:3 we saw that John had used Jasper to describe God. Jasper, as you recall, is an opaque stone but was described as a clear stone. In Revelation 21:11, the jasper stone is equated with the glory of God. Now here the building of the wall is of jasper and that would indicate that the glory of God is present in this city and that the jasper stone would be describing the believers as being pure as the clearness of the stone and reflecting the glory of God within themselves. Then the city is described as being pure gold like unto clear glass. Gold is a very heavy opaque precious metal but here it is being described as clear as glass. Gold is always identified with salvation. (1 Cor 3:12 KJV) Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Gold, silver, and precious stones are identified with the Gospel. The imagery in Rev. 21:18, is once again teaching us of the purity of the redeemed believers. The blood of Christ has so cleansed the believer that they are described as gold but as clear glass.

#### **(Rev 21:19-20 KJV)**

{19} And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; {20} The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolyte; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst.

Now we are introduced to the foundations of the wall which are made of twelve different precious stones. Once again the number twelve plays a prominent part because we had seen that there were four sides to the city and four walls but here we are being told that there are twelve adornments of the foundations which means the fullness of whatever is in view. The jasper was a deep green stone. The sapphire is probably the ancient lapis lazuli which had a sprinkling of iron pyrite in it. Chalcedony was a generic name for stones such as agate, carnelian, or sardius. The emerald was bright green and we saw that the emerald rainbow surrounded the throne. Sardonyx was a variety of agates. Sardius was a blood-red precious stone. Chrysolyte was like yellow topaz. Beryl was sea-green precious stone. Topaz was a golden topaz sometimes with a greenish tint. Chrysoprasus was a variety of quartz but with a green tint. Jacinth was probably a type of zircon with a bluish tint. Amethyst is a purple or blue-violet type of glassy quartz. What God is stating here with all these precious stones is that they are a foundation on which the Gospel is built. (1 Cor 3:12 KJV) Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; (1 Cor 3:11 KJV) For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. The Gospel is built upon the Lord Jesus Christ who is the foundation of Salvation for all the redeemed of God.

#### **(Rev 21:21 KJV)**

And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

(Mat 13:45-46 KJV) Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: {46} Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it. Once again we are given an association with the Gospel. The one who sought the pearl of great price was the Lord Jesus Christ who gave His all to redeem the one pearl which is the entire body of believers. The twelve gates were twelve pearls. Each individual gate was of one pearl. Now that is a clue that we are not looking at anything literal. Pearls do not grow to the size of 216 feet. What we have here is that the believers are the pearls which the Lord Jesus Christ gave all for and because we see the number twelve again, it is the fulness of all the believers in glory. Then we are shown that the street of the city was pure gold as transparent glass. This would be representative of the entire city because here we are being told that only one street looks like this. The purity of that gold is a representative of true salvation. So we are seeing that salvation permeates

the entire city of the New Jerusalem which means that no unsaved person can ever come in.

#### Revelation 21:22-27

##### **(Rev 21:22 KJV)**

And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it.

There is no temple in heaven because the symbolic, as we saw in Ezekiel's vision, is now reality. This is why there will be no temple with restored animal sacrifices anymore. Those Christians who look forward to some type of temple, with animal sacrifices, being built in modern Israel have no clue as to what happened in 70 A.D. No longer was the physical temple needed since the final sacrifice for sins had taken place on Calvary. God would start evangelizing the world instead of remaining in one small place. In Rev. 21:22 we are told that there is no physical temple in heaven because the Lord God and the Lamb are the temple of it. This means that both the Lamb and the Father are with the redeemed and no longer would there be any type of sacrifice needed, because those who are in heaven came through the final sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ. God and the Lamb dwell directly with the redeemed and no longer are any intermediaries needed. The Lord God and the Lamb are the center of heaven and the attention of the redeemed.

##### **(Rev 21:23 KJV)**

And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

(Isa 60:19 KJV) The sun shall be no more thy light by day; neither for brightness shall the moon give light unto thee: but the LORD shall be unto thee an everlasting light, and thy God thy glory.

The reflective glory of God is all the believers in the New Jerusalem will need. Isaiah saw this very thing when he prophesied that the true believers will never need the sun nor the moon to lighten them because God Himself along with the Lord Jesus Christ will be the light forever more. Here we also can extract that the true believers will be spiritually enlightened all through eternity as God Himself and the Lord Jesus Christ will be present with them. This will be the full revelation of the glory of God will displace any need for any created light because God and the Lord Jesus Christ will be the light source.

##### **(Rev 21:24 KJV)**

And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

Here is a statement concerning the occupants of the New Jerusalem. The word "nations" is the word "ethnos" in the Greek where we derive our English word "ethnic" from. This means that believers are from every nation on earth, which include both ancient nations and modern nations. It is also very important to point out the phrase "of them which are saved" is teaching that only the saved through the Lord Jesus Christ will walk in the light of the new city. It is a shame that modern versions leave out the part concerning that a person must be saved to enter into this city. Notice the same verse from the NIV and the English Standard Version:

(Rev. 21:24 NIV) The nations will walk by its light, and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it.

(Rev. 21:24 ESV) By its light will the nations walk, and the kings of the earth will bring their glory into it,

Then we are told that the kings of the earth will bring their glory into it. This is another reference to the body of believers as they are referred to as both Kings and Priests. No unsaved king will be in the New Jerusalem only those redeemed by the blood of the Lamb.

(Rev 1:6 KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

(Rev 5:10 KJV) And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

**(Rev 21:25 KJV)**

And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

Since all fears are part of the old order, the gates of this city are shown to always be open. (Isa 60:11 KJV) Therefore thy gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day nor night; that men may bring unto thee the forces of the Gentiles, and that their kings may be brought. In ancient times, cities would close their gates at night to prevent anyone from entering in and possibly attacking and conquering the city. Here in the New Heaven and New Earth, with the Lamb and God the Father as light, there will never be a speck of darkness. Darkness is really a curse, both physical darkness and spiritual darkness. During physical darkness we sleep and even though we enjoy sleeping, it is actually a curse. Why? Let us say a person gets eight hours of sleep per night and that person lives to be 90 years old. 8 is one third of 24, which means one third of the day is lost to unconscious sleep. Therefore, it follows that a 90 year old person is conscious only 60 years out of a 90 year life. So one third of a person's life is spent unconscious. Think about it! Of course, spiritual darkness is when there is the absence of the true Gospel and false religions rule a person's life. When that person becomes truly saved, they are then in the light and not in darkness. (1 John 1:6-7 KJV) If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: {7} But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

**(Rev 21:26 KJV)**

And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

All the glory and honor of the saved which are in the city will be brought unto the Lord. For no true believer has obtained glory and honor outside it being given to them through the salvation they received. The glory and honor will reflect the glory and honor which God had bestowed upon them as He made them Kings and Priests. The glory of those offices will be used in some fashion in the New Heaven and New Earth.

**(Rev 21:27 KJV)**

And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

This is probably one of the most open declarations that we have of who is going to be in the New Jerusalem. Only those who were written in the Lamb's Book of Life from the foundation of the world will be included in this city. Those who still perform sin and have a



sinful nature will never be allowed in because the New Jerusalem is only for those who have been cleansed by the blood of the Lamb and fully redeemed. It goes back to verse 24 that the nations of them which are saved are the ones who will be in that city. Those without a savior will stand for their own sins and will be removed to eternal damnation.

#### Revelation 22:1-7

##### **(Rev 22:1 KJV)**

And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.

Here John is seeing a pure river of the water of life from the throne of God and the Lamb. This water of life is representative of the Gospel in its purest form and John is seeing that the source of salvation is both God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. (John 6:37 KJV) All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. The Father gives the Elect to the Son. What we see here is also the fact that the believers are living in the direct presence of the Lord. When the believers were on earth, they received the water of life to become saved but here they are seeing the source of eternal life. The fact that this water is clear as crystal means there are absolutely no mixtures of any kind, only the purest Gospel flows from the throne of God and the Lamb.

##### **(Rev 22:2 KJV)**

In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

Now here we have another beautiful picture. The street which was made of pure gold had the river of pure water flowing either down the middle of it or side by side with the street. Then we are told that the tree of life was on both sides of the river. In Genesis, Eve was warned not to eat of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. Well, both Adam and Eve did eat and to prevent them from living in an eternal state of sin, God expelled them from the Garden so they would not eat of the tree of life. Here we have the tree of life in Heaven which bears twelve manners of fruit and yields them every month. Now a normal fruit tree does not yield fruit every month. It yields its fruits once a year. What we have in view here is the tree of life which stands for eternal life given to all the true believers and the healing leaves are given to show that there will never be anything in heaven which will ever cause any believer to have any physical or spiritual needs and the leaves are showing us that everything the believers needs throughout eternity will already have been supplied. Once again the number twelve plays a prominent part in this verse. Twelve types of fruit and twelve months. Here again we are in touch with number 144. The twelve fruits are yielded each month and there are twelve months in a year. The fullness of everything being supplied to the believer as well as that supply being unending as the fullness of eternity is in view.

##### **(Rev 22:3 KJV)**

And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it;

and his servants shall serve him:

Right now the ground of the earth is under a curse. (Gen 3:17 KJV) And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; God cursed the ground and has never rescinded that curse. That is why when people use terms like “promised land” or “holy land” they are calling cursed ground holy and promised. The promised land is Heaven and the only holy land is Heaven. There is nothing holy or promised about this present sin-cursed earth. In the New Heaven and New Earth there will be no more cursed ground because it has all been remade new in righteousness. The thrones of the Lamb and God the Father would never exist in any type of sin-cursed universe. There will also never be anyone who is under God’s curse entering into the New Heaven and New Earth either, that is, only the saved of God will be there. This verse also indicates that the believer will have some type of service to perform but what that service is remains to be seen.

**(Rev 22:4 KJV)**

And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads.

(Exo 33:20 KJV) And he said, Thou canst not see my face: for there shall no man see me, and live. Moses wanted to see the face of God but God prevented him from seeing it because Moses would have been instantly consumed because of the glory. Here in this verse we are seeing that all the true believers will see the face of God and because we will be in our glorified spiritual bodies, we will not be consumed when we see it. God has qualified all His children to see His face. We are then told that the believers will have His name in their foreheads. This means that all the true believers are sons and daughters of the living God. This is not a physical mark but denotes that the believer belongs to God and that we will be in the image of God as originally intended.

**(Rev 22:5 KJV)**

And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

In Revelation 21:25, we were told that there would be no night and here we are being told that the glory of the Lord is the light of all Heaven. The light we needed while on earth came from secondary sources such as candles and the sun but here we have the primary source of all light and that is the Lord God Himself who gives light. Then as Kings and Priests, we are being told here that the true believers will reign forever. Again, as to what the true believer will rule over has not been revealed because we do not need to know at this point. Suffice it to say that this life is readying the true believer for their eternal responsibility, whatever that may be.

**(Rev 22:6 KJV)**

And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to show unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

The messenger now assures John that all the messages which are contained in all the visions are faithful and true. There will be no part which will not come to pass in the Lord’s timing. Here we are also told that the Lord God is the God of the prophets which means that everything they prophesied came directly from the mouth of God and will come to pass or has come to pass, depending upon the prophecy and the subject of it, plus the timing. All the things which John witnessed will shortly come to pass which is part of the faithful and true statements. The Lord’s timing and our timing are different. He sees things as already completed and we see things being completed in time. The word “shortly” in

the Greek carries with it the meaning of “with speed and quickness.” It may seem like it is taking a long time but God’s timing is precise and in proper order.

**(Rev 22:7 KJV)**

Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book.

The Lord Jesus now interjects that He will be coming quickly. The word “quickly” in the Greek carries with it the meaning of “swiftly, without delay, and soon.” Once again we must keep in mind that the Lord’s timing and ours are different and that is why He tells us to be patient. (Luke 21:19 KJV) In your patience possess ye your souls. (James 5:7 KJV) Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. Now the book which is in view here is not only the Book of Revelation but the entire Bible. We must remember that Revelation is the last book of the Canon and part of the Bible. The Lord Jesus is telling us that we will be blessed if we keep the sayings (words) of the entire word of God.

Revelation 22:8-14

**(Rev 22:8 KJV)**

And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which showed me these things.

John was once again overwhelmed with what he was shown and with what he heard, he had bowed down in front of the messenger to worship at his feet. This messenger was no doubt so filled with the glory of God, that it caused John to bow down to worship him.

**(Rev 22:9 KJV)**

Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God.

John is once again prevented from worshipping this messenger because he is not the Lord God. We are to worship only the Lord God and never to worship anything nor anyone, even of the heavenly host. This was forbidden and this type of worship had caused Israel to go astray with the surrounding pagan nations who worshipped false gods and worshipped the heavenly hosts. It is not likely that John was attempting to commit idolatry but the glorious situation he was in may have caused him to inadvertently attempt to worship the messenger.

**(Rev 22:10 KJV)**

And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.

(Dan 12:4 KJV) But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased. Daniel was told to seal up the book till the time of the end. According to the book of Revelation, the end times started at the cross and would come to an end on the last day. In 22:10, the messenger is telling John that he should not seal up the book because the time is at hand, in other words, the

end has begun and Revelation will not be a closed book. As with all the Scriptures, it remains a closed book to those who are unsaved but to the true believer who is indwelt with the Holy Spirit, the Bible will be an unsealed book. It will still not be the most easy book to understand but with the guidance of the Holy Spirit, we will be able to come to an understanding of it. This is why God gave us the Holy Spirit so He can illuminate the Scriptures for us.

**(Rev 22:11 KJV)**

He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

Here is the separation of the holy and unholy. Those who are saved will be righteous and holy but those who are unsaved will remain filthy and unjust. When God chose Him a people from before the foundation of the world, those who would become saved would become righteous and holy, and because they can never lose their salvation, they will remain in that saved state of righteousness and holiness. The unbeliever who is not written in the Lamb's Book of Life will remain in an unsaved state throughout their life on earth and into eternity.

**(Rev 22:12 KJV)**

And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

Once again the Lord Jesus reminds us that He is going to come quickly (speedily) and His reward is with Him to give to every person who has ever lived on earth. The reward of the saved will be eternal life. (Luke 18:29-30 KJV) And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake, {30} Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting. Those who did not become saved will also receive their reward which will be according to their works. The unbeliever will have the works of unrighteousness and those works will cause them to be cast into eternal hell. (2 Tim 4:14 KJV) Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his works:

**(Rev 22:13 KJV)**

I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

Here we are once again presented with the truth that the Lord Jesus Christ is the Alpha and Omega, which is the first and last letters of the Greek alphabet. It tells us that all things in this present world and universe began with Him and will end with Him. He is the first and the last which teaches us that He is the eternal one. He was before all things were created and He will bring all things to their appointed end. When we look at the point of view of the Lord Jesus Christ, the end was already at hand in John's day, how much closer today?

**(Rev 22:14 KJV)**

Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.

Those that do His commandments are only those who have kept them perfectly. No human on their own could ever keep the law of God perfectly. The only way a person can keep the law is through the obedience of the Lord Jesus Christ who became the sacrifice for the sins of God's Elect. Those who are truly saved have the imputed righteousness of Christ upon them. Since Christ kept the holy demands of God's righteous law perfectly, that perfection was imputed to the believer upon the moment of their salvation. The tree of

life is a synonym for the Lord Jesus Christ Himself and true salvation is the gate whereby the true believer enters the city, which is the body of believers.

#### Revelation 22:15-21

##### **(Rev 22:15 KJV)**

For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

Outside of the New Jerusalem are all those who are unbelievers. The unregenerate will have no place in the New Heaven and the New Earth because sin will no longer have a place. These are the ones who will be judged according to the law of God. The believer was judged at Calvary and found not guilty. The unbeliever will be guilty according to the law of God. This verse shows that there will be no annihilation of these unbelievers as they are in the lake of fire paying for their sins for eternity.

##### **(Rev 22:16 KJV)**

I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.

Jesus is now confirming to John that the angel which testified to these things in the churches was indeed sent by Him. This declaration is stating that this book of Revelation is intended for all the churches, not just the seven which we saw in chapters 2 & 3, but it is for all churches right down to the last day. Then Jesus identifies Himself as the root and offspring of David. This teaches us that He was in the messianic line which culminated in His earthly birth. Then He refers to Himself as the "bright and morning star." After a long period of darkness which the church has faced from the cross to the last day, Jesus now gives them hope by stating that when they look for light they will find the Lord Jesus Christ as the bright and morning star because now the long night of persecution is over. The day begins with Him and that day of salvation never ends. When the churches look to Jesus as their light, they too will experience that peace which passes all understanding.

##### **(Rev 22:17 KJV)**

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

Many like to use this verse as an invitation to "accept Jesus." This is not what it is teaching. This verse is teaching that all those Elect whom God named before the foundation of the world will thirst after the Gospel and they will be given the water of life freely, which means they will be saved by free grace. No one can will or work themselves into Heaven, it comes by the effectual grace of God. The key phrase in this verse is "let him that heareth say." Only those who God qualifies to hear the Gospel will become saved. The word "heareth" in this verse in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "hearing with understanding." Those who are saved will be the only who will hear the Gospel with spiritual understanding. It is not an academic understanding otherwise then it would be by "free will." Those who hear the Gospel are those who have already become saved and are able to understand by means of the Holy Spirit indwelling them.

##### **(Rev 22:18 KJV)**

For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book:

Here is one of the sternest warnings in Scripture that man is not to fool around with the word of God. For example, the Mormons claim their book of Mormon is another testament of Jesus Christ which means they are adding to the word. The Charismatic movement which is replete with prophecies, tongues, and visions are claiming that God is still speaking today in these forms. This means they are adding to the word of God which means they will receive of the plagues written in this book, which simply means they are under the judgment of God. This verse does not only deal with the Book of Revelation, but it deals with the entire Bible. The Canon is completely closed and those who attempt to add to it are under God's judgment. Then there are the modern versions which are paraphrases and they add thoughts and concepts which are not in the original languages.

**(Rev 22:19 KJV)**

And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

Then God warns man in the other direction, that anyone who removes anything from His word will be subject to eternal damnation. Those who are unbelievers were never in the holy city nor in the Lamb's Book of Life. God is telling us that those who adulterate His Word are not worthy to be in the book of Life or the holy city. One of the most major attacks on the word of God today is the modern versions which actually remove verses and the portions of many other verses. This is one way they are taking away from the word of God. Then another way that teachings are removed from the word of God is by preachers and teachers who cast doubt on parts of the word of God. Many preachers do not believe in hell nor do they believe in the first three chapters of Genesis being literal. Those who take away from the word of God in any fashion are revealing that they are under the judgment of God and unless they become saved, will suffer the same penalty as all the rest of the unbelievers.

**(Rev 22:20 KJV)**

He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.

The Lord Jesus is witness to all the saying which are written in this book which means all will come to pass. Then He once again states for the encouragement of the believers that His coming will be quick and will not be delayed. It seems that John is in agreement by praying "Even so, come, Lord Jesus." This should be the desire of all true Christians.

**(Rev 22:21 KJV)**

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

The final verse in Revelation is that the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all and the Amen means "it is so." The grace that sustained us on earth will lead us home to glory and there we will be forever with the Lord. (1 Th 4:17-18 KJV) Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. {18} Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

